

Eliza Giffard - Nerquis Flintshire
THERON and ASPASIO: 1807

OR, A
S E R I E S
O F
DIALOGUES
A N D
L E T T E R S,
U P O N T H E

Most Important and Interesting Subjects:

IN TWO VOLUMES.

By JAMES HERVEY, A. M.
Rector of *Weston-Favell*, in *Northamptonshire*.

*The Memorial of thine abundant Kindness shall be shewed,
and Men shall sing of thy Righteousness. Psal. cxlv. 7.
My Mouth shall daily speak of thy Righteousness and Sal-
vation; for I know no End thereof. Psal. lxxi. 13.*

V O L. I.

D U B L I N:

Printed and Sold by S. POWELL in *Crane-
lane*, near *Essex-street*.

M D C C L V I.



DIALOGUES

AND

LETTERS

UPON THE

TEACHING OF THE HISTORY OF THE

IN TWO VOLUMES

BY JAMES HERVEY, A.M.

Rector of Wotton, in Warwickshire

Printed by J. Smith, at the University Press, Oxford.
1765.

VOL. I.

DUBLIN.

Printed and Sold by J. Smith, in Great Britain.

MILNER

Eliza: Fife



T O

The Right Honourable

Lady FRANCES SHIRLEY.

M A D A M,



F Christianity was inconsistent with true *Politeness*, or prejudicial to real *Happiness*, I should be extremely injudicious, and inexcusably ungrateful, in presenting these *Essays* to your *LADYSHIP*. But as the Religion of *JESUS* is the grand Ornament of our Nature, and a Source of the sublimest Joy, the Purport of the following Pages, cannot be unworthy the Countenance and Protection of the *most accomplished* Person. Neither can there be a Wish, more suitable to the Obligations or the Dictates of a *grateful* Heart, than that You may experience what You read, and *be* what You patronize.

iv DEDICATION.

DID Religion consist in a *formal* Round of external Observances, or a *forced* Submission to some rigorous Austerities, I should not scruple to join with the Infidel and the Sensualist, to dread it in one View, and despise it in another. You need not be informed, MADAM, that it is as much superior to all such *low* and *forbidding* Singularities, as the Heavens are higher than the Earth. It is described by an Author, who learnt its Theory in the Regions of Paradise, and who displayed its Efficacy in his own most exemplary Conversation.—It is thus described by that incomparable Author; *The Kingdom of GOD, is not Meat and Drink, but Righteousness, and Peace, and Joy in the HOLY GHOST.*

To be reconciled to the Omnipotent GOD—To be interested in the unsearchable Riches of *CHRIST*—To be renewed in our Hearts, and influenced in our Lives, by the sanctifying Operations of the Divine SPIRIT—This is *evangelical* Righteousness. This is *genuine* Religion. This, MADAM, is the Kingdom of GOD established in the Soul.—How benign and inviting is such an Institution! How honourable and advantageous such a State! And from such Privileges, what other Effects

D E D I C A T I O N. ▽

Effects can flow, but that *Peace*, which *passeth all Understanding*? That *Joy*, which is *unpeakable and glorious*?

Is there any Thing in the Amusements of the Gay and Pursuits of the Ambitious, of greater, of equal, of comparable Value? Is not all that *Wealth* can purchase, all that *Grandeur* can bestow, somewhat like those glittering Bubbles, which when viewed are *Emptiness*, when grasped are *Nothing*? Whereas, the Comforts, the Benefits, the Hopes of Christianity, are at once supremely excellent, and infinitely durable. A Portion suited to the Dignity of a rational Soul; large as its Faculties, and immortal as its Being.

ALL these Blessings are centered in *CHRIST*; were purchased by *CHRIST*; are communicated from *CHRIST*.—It is for want of knowing those boundless and everlasting Treasures of *pardon*ing, *justifying*, *saving* Merit, which the *LORD JESUS CHRIST* possesses, and which He freely dispenses even to Sinners, that so many *unthinking* Persons are attached to ignoble Objects, and beguiled by delusory Pleasures. *Unhappy* Creatures! What can they do, but catch at Shadows, and stoop to Trifles, while they are ignorant of the

vi DEDICATION.

grand, the substantial, the exalted Good? —It is for want of duly attending to that Fulness of Grace, and that Plenteousness of Redemption, which dwell in our most adorable SAVIOUR, that so many *serious* Persons are Strangers to the Tranquillity and Sweetness of Religion: are subject to all its Restraints, but enjoy few, if any, of its Delights. *Mistaken* Zealots! How can they avoid the gloomy Situation and the uncomfortable Circumstance, so long as they withdraw themselves from the SUN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS and his all-cheering Beams?

MAY your LADYSHIP live continually under his heavenly Light and healing Wings! Be more fully assured of his dying Love, and have brighter, still brighter Manifestations of his immense Perfections! By these delightful Views, and by that precious Faith, may your Heart be transformed into his *holy*, his *amiable*, his *divine* Image! Your Happiness will then be just such as is wished, but far greater than can be expressed by,

MADAM,

Your most obliged, and

Most obedient humble Servant,

Weston-Favell,
Jan. 6. 1755.

JAMES HERVEY.



P R E F A C E.



THE Reader will probably expect some Account of the ensuing Work; and to gratify Him in this Particular, will be a real Pleasure to the Author.

*The Beauty and Excellency of the Scriptures
—The Ruin and Depravity of human Nature
—Its happy Recovery, founded on the Atone-
ment, and effected by the SPIRIT of CHRIST
—These are some of the chief Points, vindicated, illustrated, and applied in the following Sheets.—But the grand Article, that which makes the principal Figure, is the IMPUTED RIGHTEOUSNESS of our divine LORD; from whence arises our Justification before GOD, and our renewed Title to every heavenly Blessing. An Article, which, though eminent for its Importance, seems to be little understood, and less regarded; if not much mistaken, and almost forgotten.*

viii P R E F A C E.

*The Dignity and Importance of this great evangelical Doctrine—how worthy it is of the most attentive Consideration, and of universal Acceptance—is hinted in the second Dialogue. So that I need, in this Place, do nothing more, than give the Sense of a Passage from Witſius, which is there introduced in the Notes.—“ The “ Doctrine of Justification, says that excellent “ Author, spreads itself through the whole “ System of Divinity. As this is either solidly “ establiſhed, or superficially touched; fully “ ſtated, or ſlightly diſmiſſed; accordingly, the “ whole Structure of Religion, either riſes “ graceful and magnificent, ſuperior to Aſſault, “ and beyond the Power of Decay; or else it “ appears diſproportionate and defective, totters “ on its Foundation, and threatens an opprobrious Fall *”.*

The Deſign is executed in the Form of Dialogue. Thoſe Parts only excepted, in which it was not eaſy to carry on a Converſation, and aſſign to each Perſon a proper Degree of Significance. Here, to avoid the common Imputation, of bringing upon the Stage a Mute or a Shadow—one who fights without Weapons, and ſubmits without a Conteſt—the Scene ſhifts. Our Gentlemen ſeparate; and, inſtead of converſing, enter upon an epiſtolary Correſpondence.

The Dialogue Form ſeems, on many Conſiderations, a very eligible Way of Writing.—Hereby, the Author gives an Air both of Dignity and

* See p. 46.

and of Modesty to his Sentiments. Of Dignity; by delivering them from the Mouths of Persons, in every respect superior to Himself. Of Modesty; because We no longer consider Him in the raised, but invidious Capacity of a Teacher. Instead of calling Us to his Feet, and dictating his Precepts, He gratifies our Curiosity. He turns back a Curtain, and admits Us to some remarkable Interviews, or interesting Conferences. We over-hear, by a kind of innocent or imaginary Stealth, the Debates which pass in the Recesses of Privacy; which are carried on, with the most unreserved Freedom of Speech, and Openness of Heart.—A Circumstance, which will apologize for some Peculiarities, that might otherwise be inconsistent with Humility, or offensive to Delicacy. Particularly, it may obviate the Disgust, which generally, and indeed deservedly, attends the frequent Intrusion of that ambitious and usurping little Monosyllable, I.

The Names of the Persons are prefixed, each to his respective Share of the Discourse; in Imitation of Cicero, and for the Reasons which he assigns. Quasi enim ipsos induxi loquentes: ne Inquam & Inquit sæpius interponerentur. Atque id eo feci, ut tanquam præsentibus coram haberi Sermo videretur. This Method, He very justly intimates, is removed farthest from the Narrative, and makes the nearest Approaches to Life and Reality. It quite secretes the Author; and, by introduc-*

* P R E F A C E.

ing the Persons themselves, renders all that passes intirely their own.—It prevents likewise the Repetition of those interlocutory Words, He said, He replied. Which, unless the Speeches are very long, must frequently recur, and have no pleasing Effect upon the Ear. And if the Speeches are long, the Spirit of Conversation is lost. The Associates are no longer talking; but one of them, or the Author, is lecturing.

Though I have so much to say in Behalf of the Model, I have very little to say with regard to the Execution—unless it be to confess the Deficiency. There is not, I am sensible, that peculiar Air and distinguishing Turn, which should mark and characterize each Speaker. This is what the Nature of finished Dialogue requires, and what the Author applauds in some very superior Writers. But, not having the Ability to copy it, He has not the Vanity to affect it.—Nevertheless, the attentive Reader will, all along, perceive a Difference in the Sentiment, if not in the Language. The Materials vary, even when they run into the same Mould, and take the same Form.—In the Diction also there must be some Diversity. Because several of the Objections are proposed in the very Words of one or two eminent Writers, who have appeared on the other Side of the Question. These are not particularized by the Mark of Quotation; because, the Man of Reading will have no Occasion for the Assistance of such an Index, and the Man of Taste will pro-

probably discern them by the Singularity of the Style.

Some of the following Pieces, it must be acknowledged, are of the controversial Kind. *A Species of Writing*, least susceptible of the Graces, which embellish Composition; or rather most destitute of the Attractives, which engage Attention, and create Delight.—Yet I have sometimes thought, that it is not absolutely impossible, to make even the stern Face of Controversy wear a Smile; and to reap some valuable Fruit, from the rugged Furrows of Disputation. Whether this is effected in the present Work, the Public must judge; that it has been attempted, the Author may be permitted to declare.

To soften the Asperities of Argument, Views of Nature are interspersed. That, if the former should carry the Appearance of a rude intangled Forest, or of a frowning gloomy Recess, there may be some agreeable Openings, and lightsome Avenues, to admit a Prospect of the Country: which is always arrayed in Charms, and never fails to please.

The Author confesses a very peculiar Fondness for the amiable Scenes of Creation. It is therefore not at all improbable, but his Excursions on this Topic may be of the diffusive Kind, and his Descriptions somewhat luxuriant. It is hoped, however, that the benevolent Reader will indulge Him in this favourite Foible.—If any should feel the same prevailing Passion for the Beauties of Nature, 'tis possible these
Per-

Persons may be inclined, not only to excuse, but approve the Fault; and take Part with the Lover, even in Opposition to the Critic.

Farther to diversify the Piece, Sketches of Philosophy are introduced. Easy to be understood, and calculated to entertain the Imagination, as well as to improve the Heart. More particularly, to display the wise and beneficent Design of Providence, in the various Appearances and numberless Productions of the material World. Neither are these Remarks altogether foreign to the main Point. But, as far as the Wonders of Creation may comport with the Riches of Grace, subserve the general End.

As to the Choice of my Subjects—Some People have desired to see an Invective, against the fashionable and predominant Vices of the Age. This I apprehend, would be like picking off the Leaves, or clipping away the Twigs, of some over-grown and noxious Tree. Waving this tedious and ineffectual Toil, I would rather lay my Axe to the Root. Let the Knowledge and Love of CHRIST take place in the Heart, and not only a few of the Branches, but the whole Body of Sin will fall at once.

*Some wou'd have the Author insist upon the conscientious Observation of the Sabbath, inculcate the daily Worship of GOD in the Family, and urge a devout Attendance on the public Ordinances of Religion —But when a Person is convinced of Sin, and made sensible of Misery; when he has tasted the good Word of GOD **

and

* Heb. vi 5.

and seen by Faith the LORD's CHRIST†; *He will want no Sollicitation or Incitement, to these Means of Grace, and Exercises of Godliness. He will have just the same Disposition to them all, as the hungry Appetite has to wholesome Food, or the new-born Babe* to the Milk of the Breast.*

Others may imagine, that I have neglected the Interests of Morality; because, here is no professed Attempt to delineate its Duties, or enforce its Practice. — Let these Persons remember, that Morality never makes such vigorous Shoots, never produces such generous Fruit, as when ingrafted on evangelical Principles. — And if I do not crop the Pink, the Rose, and the Carnation; if I do not gather the Peach, the Nectarine, and the Pine-Apple; and put them into my Reader's Hand, for his immediate Enjoyment: I am endeavouring to sow the Seeds, and plant the Roots in his Garden; which,

† Luke ii. 26.

* 1 Pet. ii. 2. This Comparison is, perhaps, the most *exact* and *expressive*, that Words can form, or Fancy conceive. Babes covet nothing but the Milk of the Breast. They are indifferent about all other Things. Give them Riches, give them Honours, give them whatever you please, without this rich, delicious, balmy Nutriment, they will not, they cannot be satisfied. — How finely does this illustrate, and how forcibly inculcate, what our LORD styles, *The single Eye*, and *The One Thing needful*! Or, the salutary Doctrines, and delightful Privileges of the Gospel; together with that supreme Value for them, and undivided Complacency in them, which are the distinguishing Character of *the Christian*!

which, if cherished by the favourable Influence of Heaven, will yield Him, not an occasional, but a constant Supply of all.

*As several Texts of Scripture come under Consideration, Criticisms upon the Original are frequently subjoined. In order to clear up some Difficulties, to rectify some Mistranslations, or point out the many delicate and masterly Strokes, which occur in the BIBLE.—And glad should I be, extremely glad, if I might recommend and endear that invaluable Book. If, as the divine REDEEMER rideth on in the Word of Truth, of Meekness, and Righteousness *, this Hand might scatter a Palm Branch, or this Performance might lie as a Flowret, to strew his Way†, and solemnize his Triumph.*

In the Course of the Disputation, I dare not suppose, that I have discussed all the Arguments, which Sagacity may devise, or Sophistry urge. Perhaps, I have not removed all the Scruples, which may awaken Prejudice, or embarrass Integrity. This, however, I may venture to affirm, that I myself have met with no considerable Objection, which is not either expressly answered, or virtually refuted, in these Conferences.—And, tho' I should neither satisfy nor silence the Gainsayer, I shall think my Endeavours happily employed, if they may throw Light upon the dim Apprehension; establish the wavering Faith; or comfort the afflicted Conscience.

If

‡ Psal. xlv. 4,

† Alluding to Matt. xxi. 8.

P R E F A C E. xv

*If any should burlesque or ridicule these venerable Truths, and exalted Privileges, I shall only say with my Divine MASTER; O! that Thou hadst known, in this thy Day, the Things that belong to thy Peace! But now they are hid, it is evident from such a Procedure, they are hid from thine Eyes *. — Should any, in the Spirit of Decency and Candor, either start new, or revive old Objections, I doubt not, but they will receive both a due Examination and a proper Reply. As these Doctrines enter into the very Essence of the Gospel, and constitute the Glory of our Religion, they can never want a Succession of Advocates, so long as the Sun and Moon endure.—For my own Part, I must beg Leave to retire from the Lists, and lay down the Weapons of Controversy. Virgil's Language is my Resolution;*

*Discedam, explebo Numerum, reddarque
Tenebris.*

This Declaration is made, not from any the least Suspicion, that my Tenets are indefensible. But because I would apprize my Friends, and the Friends of our common Christianity, that the Field is clear and open for them to advance; that I resign to others the glorious Combat; and shall content myself with wishing them Success in the Name of the LORD.— Because, it becomes a Person in my declining State, to be more peculiarly intent upon encountering

* Luke xix. 42.

tering a different Adversary; who is sure to overcome, and never allows Quarter. Yet, by this Word of my Testimony, and by the Blood of the LAMB†, I hope to triumph even when I fall; and to be more than Conqueror, through J E H O V A H my Righteousness.

Should any Thing be urged, forcible enough to overthrow my Arguments, or detect a Mistake in my Sentiments, the World may depend upon seeing a free and undissembled Retraction. I shall look upon it as a Duty which I owe to my Conscience, to my Readers, and to my GOD, publicly to acknowledge the Error.—It is one Thing to be silent; another to be obstinate. As I shall inflexibly adhere to the first; I would, with equal Steadiness, renounce the last. Tho' I withdraw from the Strife of Pens and of Tongues, I shall take care to preserve a Mind, ever accessible to Truth, ever open to Conviction. A Mind, infinitely more concerned for the Purity and Prosperity of the ever-lasting Gospel, than for the Prevalence of my own Opinion, or the Credit of my own Performance.

As I have the Happiness of being a Member, and the Honour of being a Minister, of the reformed established Church; I cannot but reflect, with a peculiar Pleasure, that every Doctrine of Note, maintained in these Dialogues and Letters, is either implied in our Liturgy; asserted in our Articles, or taught in our Homilies.—It affords me likewise some Degree of Satisfaction to observe, that the most material

of

of the Sentiments have been adopted by Milton ; are incorporated into his Paradise Lost ; and add Dignity to the sublimest Poem in the World. —To have the highest Authority, and the first Genius in the Nation on a Writer's Side, is no contemptible Support. This must surely give a Sanction, where-ever our religious Establishment is revered, or polite Literature is held in Repute. Yet even this Sanction, compared with the Oracle of Revelation, is only like a Range of Cyphers, connected with the initial Figure. Which, were they detached, would be insignificant ; but, in such a Subordination, are considerable.

Perhaps, it should be farther acknowledged, that I have not always confined myself to the Method of our Systematic Writers, nor followed their Train of Thoughts with a scrupulous Regularity. I would conduct my Fellow-creature to the supreme and eternal Good, CHRIST JESUS. I have chosen the Path, which seemed most agreeable and inviting, rather than most beaten and frequented. If this leads, with equal certainty, to the great and desirable End, I dare promise myself an easy Excuse.—However, that Method and Order, in the doctrinal Parts of the Plan, are not wholly neglected, the following Summary of Contents may shew.

THE

THE
OFFICE OF THE
ATTORNEY GENERAL
OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK
IN SENATE
JANUARY 18, 1901
REPORT
ON THE
ADMINISTRATION OF THE
OFFICE DURING THE
YEAR 1900

ALBANY:
J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.
1901

a
a
I
S
a
A

THE
CONTENTS.

VOL. I.

DIALOGUE I.

CHARACTER of the Speakers—On improving Conversation—Elegance and Dignity of the Scriptures.

DIALOGUE II.

Walk through the Gardens—The beautiful Frame and beneficial Ordination of Things—Preparatory Discourse on the Imputation of CHRIST's Righteousness—Meaning of the Terms settled.

DIALOGUE III.

Walk through a Meadow—Doctrine of CHRIST's Satisfaction stated—Considered as a Redemption-Price, and as a Sacrifice for Sin—Variously typified under the Mosaic Dispensation.

DIA-

xx The C O N T E N T S.

D I A L O G U E I V.

Park and romantic Mount—CHRIST's Death farther considered, as the very Punishment, which our Sins deserved—Objections, antient and modern, answered—The Whole summed up and improved.

D I A L O G U E V.

Elegant Arbour in the Flower-Garden.—Imputation of CHRIST's Obedience—Objections from Reason canvassed.

D I A L O G U E V I.

Gallery of Pictures—Library and its Furniture—A sordid Taste in Painting censured; a more graceful Manner displayed—Imputation of CHRIST's Righteousness resumed—Objections from Scripture urged and refuted.

D I A L O G U E V I I.

Hay-making—Pleasures of Nature freely enjoyed—Blessings of Grace bestowed with equal Freeness—The-ron's Plan of Acceptance with GOD; consists of Sincerity, Repentance, and good Works, recommended by the Merits of CHRIST—This shewn to be a false Foundation.—No such Thing as a good Work, till we are accepted through the REDEEMER.

D I A L O G U E V I I I.

Duelling—Animadversions on the Practice—Spirituality and Extent of the Divine Law—Infinite Purity of GOD.

D I A L O G U E I X.

Curious Summer-house—No Relaxation of the Divine Law, as to the Precept or the Penalty—Its inflexible Strictness, and principal Ends.

D I A-

The CONTENTS. xxi

DIALOGUE X.

Theron's last Effort to demolish the evangelical Scheme of Justification—Among other Objections, more plausible and refined than the preceding, He strenuously insists, that Faith is our Righteousness.—Review of the Whole.

DIALOGUE XI.

Ruins of Babylon—Fine Passage from Mr. Howe—Depravity and Ruin of human Nature, as they are represented in Scripture—Applied, with a View to determine the yet dubious Inquiry.

DIALOGUE XII.

Extremely hot Day—A solemn shady Bower—True Method of deriving Benefit from the Classics—The wonderful Structure and Oeconomy of the human Body.

V O L. II.

DIALOGUE XIII.

Walk upon the Terrace—Depravity of human Nature, laid open and proved from Experience—Uses of the Doctrine, and its Subserviency to the grand Point.

DIALOGUE XIV.

*Theron alone in the Fields—His Soliloquy on the Charms of rural Nature—His Reflections on the past Conferences—Aspasio reinforces his Arguments for the Imputation of CHRIST's Righteousness—Recommends Self-Examination, the Keeping of a Diary, and Prayer for
the*

xxii The CONTENTS.

the enlightening SPIRIT—Departs, under an Engagement to correspond by Letter.

L E T T E R I.

Aspasio opens the Correspondence with some important Articles of Duty; designed to facilitate Self-examination, and promote Conviction of Sin.

L E T T E R II.

Theron convinced of the Iniquity of his Life, and the Evil of his Heart, sees the Necessity of a better Righteousness than his own—Desires a farther Explanation, and a fuller Proof, of the Doctrine under Debate.

L E T T E R III.

Aspasio proves the Point—from the Liturgy.—the Articles—the Homilies of the Church of England—and the Writings of the Fathers.

L E T T E R IV.

Aspasio re-establishes the Tenet, from the Scriptures of the Old Testament.

L E T T E R V.

Aspasio relates a remarkable Pannic—Terrors of the Day of Judgment—CHRIST's Righteousness and its Imputation, largely demonstrated from the New Testament.

L E T T E R VI.

Theron takes a cursory View of the habitable Creation—Traces the Perfections of Nature, through the Earth, Air, and Fire—Admirable Construction, and advantageous Effects, of these Elements.

L E T-

The CONTENTS. xxiii

L E T T E R VII.

Aspasio takes Occasion to display the no less admirable Perfection of CHRIST's Righteousness—Its Principle—Extent—Perseverance.

L E T T E R VIII.

Aspasio describes a Drought—Majesty and Beauty of the Sun, after a Night of Rain—The meritorious Excellency of CHRIST's Righteousness illustrated, from the Magnificence of his Works, and the Divinity of his Person.

L E T T E R IX.

Theron's Account of the Western Cliffs—the Wonders of the Ocean—and the Benefits of Navigation.

L E T T E R X.

Aspasio enumerates the much richer Benefits, resulting from the Imputation of CHRIST's Righteousness—Shews their happy Influence, on Holiness of Heart, and Obedience of Life.

L E T T E R XI.

Aspasio exemplifies the last Particular, in two very memorable Instances—Especially, in the Conduct of Abraham, offering up his Son Isaac.

L E T T E R XII.

Aspasio touches upon—Union with CHRIST—How described in Scripture—Its blessed and glorious Effects.

D I A-

xxiv The C O N T E N T S.

D I A L O G U E X V.

Aspasio revisits Theron—Theron under Anxiety of Spirit—Partly to entertain, partly to comfort his Friend, Aspasio enlarges upon the Bounty of the CREATOR, visible both in the animal and vegetable World—The new Convert is slow of Heart to believe—Evangelical Motives to Faith.

D I A L O G U E X V I.

Harvest Scene — Philenor's Gardens—Statues—Grove of Ever-Greens—Nature of true Faith—Its sure Foundation, and sovereign Supports.

D I A L O G U E X V I I.

A River Voyage—The diversified Prospect—Comparative Happiness—Advantages of Peace—A Celebration of the Gospel and its Blessings, in a Kind of Rhapsody—CHRIST's Righteousness applied, to every Case of Distress, and every Time of Need.



A
S E R I E S
O F
D I A L O G U E S.

D I A L O G U E I.



HERON, was a Gentleman of fine Taste ; of accurate, rather than extensive Reading ; and particularly charmed with the Study of Nature. He traced the Planets in their Courses, and examined the Formation of the meanest Vegetable ; not merely to gratify a *refined* Curiosity, but chiefly to cultivate the *nobler* Principles of Religion and Morality. Several Discoveries He made, and every Discovery He improved, to this important End—to raise in his Mind, more *exalted* Apprehensions of the Supreme Being—and to enlarge his Affections, with a *disinterested* Benevolence ; conformable, in some Degree, to that boundless Liberality, which pervades and animates the whole Creation.

ASPASIO, was not without his Share of polite Literature, and philosophical Knowledge. He had taken

xxiv The CONTENTS.

DIALOGUE XV.

Aspasio revisits Theron—Theron under Anxiety of Spirit—Partly to entertain, partly to comfort his Friend, Aspasio enlarges upon the Bounty of the CREATOR, visible both in the animal and vegetable World—The new Convert is slow of Heart to believe—Evangelical Motives to Faith.

DIALOGUE XVI.

Harvest Scene — Philenor's Gardens—Statues—Grove of Ever-Greens—Nature of true Faith—Its sure Foundation, and sovereign Supports.

DIALOGUE XVII.

A River Voyage—The diversified Prospect—Comparative Happiness—Advantages of Peace—A Celebration of the Gospel and its Blessings, in a Kind of Rhapsody—CHRIST's Righteousness applied, to every Case of Distress, and every Time of Need.



A
S E R I E S
O F
D I A L O G U E S.

D I A L O G U E I.



HERON, was a Gentleman of fine Taste ; of accurate, rather than extensive Reading ; and particularly charmed with the Study of Nature. He traced the Planets in their Courses, and examined the Formation of the meanest Vegetable ; not merely to gratify a *refined* Curiosity, but chiefly to cultivate the *nobler* Principles of Religion and Morality. Several Discoveries He made, and every Discovery He improved, to this important End—to raise in his Mind, more *exalted* Apprehensions of the Supreme Being—and to enlarge his Affections, with a *disinterested* Benevolence ; conformable, in some Degree, to that boundless Liberality, which pervades and animates the whole Creation.

ASPASIO, was not without his Share of polite Literature, and philosophical Knowledge. He had taken

VOL. I.

B

a Four

a Tour through the Circle of the Sciences ; and, having tranſiently ſurveyed the Productions of *human Learning*, devoted his final Attention to the *inspired Writings*. Theſe he ſtudied, with the unbiassed Impartiality of a Critic ; yet with the reverential Simplicity of a Chriſtian. Theſe He regarded, as the *unerring Standard of Duty*—the *authentic Charter of Salvation*—and the *brighteſt Mirror of the Deity* ; affording the moſt ſatisfactory and ſublime Diſplay of all the divine Attributes.

Theron, was ſomewhat *warm* in his Temper ; and would, upon Occaſion, make Uſe of a little innocent Raillery ; not to expoſe his Friend, but to enliven the Converſation. Sometimes *diſguiſing* his real Sentiments ; in order to ſift the Subject, or diſcover the Opinion of others.—*Aspaſio* ſeldom indulges the humorous or ſatyrical Vein, but argues with *Meekneſs of Wiſdom* *. Never puts on the Appearance of Guile, but always ſpeaks the Dictates of his Heart.

Aspaſio was on a Viſit at *Theron's* Seat.—One Evening, when ſome neighbouring Gentlemen were juſt gone, and had left them alone, the Converſation took the following Turn.

Aſp.—I would always be ready, both to acknowledge and applaud, whatever is amiable in the Conduct of Others. The Gentlemen, who gave Us their Company at Dinner, ſeem to be all of a *different Character*. Yet each, in his own Way, is extremely agreeable.

Lyſander has lively Parts, and is quick at Repartee. But he never abuſes his Wit, to create Uneaſineſs in the honeſt Heart, or ſluſh the modeſt Cheek with Confuſion.—What Solidity of Judgment, and Depth of Penetration, appear in *Crito* ! Yet, how free are his Diſcourſes, from the magiſterial Tone, or the dictatorial

* ——— *Mitis Sapientia Læli.*

Hor.

Is a moſt amiable Character, and delicately drawn. But is, I think, expreſſed with greater Strength, and ſuperior Beauty, by the ſacred Penman ; *Let him ſhow out of a good Converſation his Works with Meekneſs of Wiſdom.* *Jam. iii. 13.*

rial Solemnity! — *Philenor's* Taste in the polite Arts, is remarkably correct: yet, without the least Tincture of Vanity, or any weak Fondness for Applause. He never interrupts the Progress, or wrests the Topic of Conversation; in order to shine in his particular Province. — *Trebonius*, I find, has signalized his Valour in several Campaigns. Though a Warrior and a Traveler, He gives Himself no overbearing or ostentatious Airs. In *Trebonious*, You see the brave Officer, regulated by all the Decency of the Academic, and sweetened with all the Affability of the Courtier.

No one affects a *morose* Silence, or assumes an *immoderate* Loquacity *. To engross the Talk, is tyrannical: to seal up the Lips, is monkish. Every one, therefore, from a Fund of good Sense, contributes his Quota: and each speaks, not with an Ambition to *set off* Himself, but from a Desire to *please* the Company.

Ther. Indeed, *Aspasio*, I think myself happy, in this accomplished Set of Acquaintance. Who add all the Complaisance and Politeness of the Gentleman, to the Benevolence and Fidelity of the Friend.

Their Conversation is as innocent, as their Taste is refined. — They have a noble Abhorrence of *Slander*, and detest the low ungenerous Artifices of *Detraction*. — No loose *Jest*, has either the Service of their Tongue, or the Sanction of their Smile. Was you to be with them, even in their freest Moments; You would hear Nothing, that borders upon *Profaneness*, or is in the least injurious to *Purity* of Morals.

Asp. There is but *one* Qualification wanting, to render your Friends completely valuable; and their social Interviews a continual Blessing.

Ther. Pray, what is that?

Asp. A Turn for *more serious* Conferences. — Their literary Debates are beautiful Sketches, of whatever is

B 2

most

* *Zeno* being present, where a person of this loquacious Disposition played Himself off, said, with an Air of Concern in his Countenance; *That poor Gentleman is ill, He has a violent Flux upon Him.* The Company was alarmed, and the Rhetorician stopped in his Career. *Yes*, added the Philosopher. *The Flux is so violent, that it has carried his Ears into his Tongue.*

most curious in the Sciences, or most delicate in the Arts. From their Remarks on our national Affairs, and on foreign Occurrences, a Person may almost form a System of Politics.—But, they never touch upon any Topic of *Morality*; never celebrate the *sublime Perfections* of the Deity; never illustrate the Beauties, nor enforce the Truths—

Ther. Fie upon You, *Aspasio*, for your unpolite Hint! Who can forbear interrupting an Harangue, that pleads for such an outrageous Violation of the *Mode*? Would introduce *edifying* Talk into our *fashionable* Assemblies!—How is it that You, who, in other Instances, are a Gentleman of Refinement, can be so strangely inelegant in this Particular?

Asp. For such a Practice, *Theron*, We have no inconsiderable Precedents. — Thus *Socrates* *, the wisest of the *Athenian* Sages, thus *Scipio* †, the most accomplished of the *Roman* Generals, conversed.—Thus *Cicero* ‡, the Prince of Orators, improved his elegant Retirement at the *Tusculan Villa*.—And *Horace* ||, the brightest Genius in the Court of *Augustus*, formed the most agreeable Hours of his Conversation, upon this very Plan.

Was I to enumerate all the Patrons of this, forgive me if I say, *more honourable* Mode; the most illustrious Names of Antiquity, would appear on the List.

Ther. This Practice, however extolled by the philosophic Gentry of antient Times; would make a very *singular* Figure, in the present Age.

Asp. And should not the *Copy*, after which the Generality of Mankind write, be *singularly correct*? Persons of exalted Fortune, are the Pattern for general Imitation: are the Copy, in Conformity to which, the inferior

* Vid. *Socratis Memorabilia*, per Xenoph.

† See *Cicero's* Dialogue *De Amicitia*. In which we are informed, That it was a customary Practice with *Scipio*, with his polite Friend *Laelius*, and some of the most distinguished Nobility of *Rome*, to discourse upon the Interests of the Republic, and Immortality of the Soul.

‡ Vid. *Tuscul. Quæst.*

|| Such were the Interviews, of which he speaks with a Kind of Rapture,

O Noctes Cœnæque Deum!

rior World adjust their Manners, and regulate their Behaviour. *They*, therefore, are under the strongest Obligations, not to give a *contemptible* Stamp to the Fashion.—Benevolence to their Fellow-creatures calls loudly upon them, a Concern for the public Good challenges it at their Hands, that *they* signalize themselves by a Pre-eminence in all that is excellent.

Ther. Away, away with these *austere* Notions! Such a Strain of Conversation, would *damp* the Gaiety of our Spirits, and *flatten* the Relish of Society. It would turn the Assembly into a Conventicle, and make it Lent all the Year round.

Asp. Can it then be an austere Practice, to cultivate the Understanding, and improve the Heart?—Can it damp the Gaiety of our Spirits, to refine them upon the Plan of the highest Perfection?—Or, will it flatten the Relish of Society, to secure and anticipate everlasting Delights?

Ther. *Everlasting Delights, Aspasio!*—To talk of such a Subject, would be termed, in every Circle of Wit and Gallantry, an Usurpation of the Parson's Office. A *low* Method, of retailing by Scraps, in the Parlour; what the Man in Black, vends by wholesale from the Pulpit.—It would infallibly mark us out for *Pedants*. And, for aught I know, might expose us to the Suspicion of *Enthusiasm*.

Asp. Your Men of Wit must excuse me, if I cannot persuade myself to admire, either the *Delicacy* of their Language, or the *Justness* of their Opinion.

The first, be it ever so *humane* and *graceful*, I resign to themselves.—As to the other, I would beg Leave to inquire; “Are the Clergy, then, the *only* Persons, who “should act the *becoming* Part, and converse like *rational* “Beings? Is solid Wisdom, and sacred Truth the Privilege of their Order? While nothing is left for you and “me, but the Play of Fancy, or the Luxuries of Sense.”

I would farther ask the Circles of Gallantry; “Where “is the Impropriety, of interweaving the *noble* Doctrines, displayed by the Preacher, with our common “Discourse? Or, what the Inconvenience, of introducing the *amiable* Graces, recommended by his “Lectures, into ordinary Practice?”

Will *such* an Exercise of our Speech, rank Us among Pedants? Is *this* the Badge of Enthusiasm? A splendid and honourable Badge truly! Such as must add Weight to any Cause, and Worth to any Character.

Ther. This would curb the sprightly Sallies of *Wit*; and extinguish that engaging Glow of *Good-humour*, which enlivens our genteel Intercourses. Accordingly, You may observe, that if any *formal Creature*, takes upon Him to mention, in polite Company, a religious Truth, or a Text of Scripture; the pretty Chat, though ever so profusely flowing, stagnates in an Instant. Each voluble and facetious Tongue seems to be struck with a sudden Palsy. Every one wonders at the strange Man's Face; and they all conclude Him, either *mad*, or a *Methodist*.

Asp. Agreeable Strokes of Wit, are by no Means incompatible with useful Conversation. Unless we mistake an *insipid Vivacity*, or *fantastic Levity*, for Wit and Facetiousness.—Neither have I heard, that, among all our Acts of Parliament, any one has passed to *divorce* Good Sense and Good-humour. Why may they not both reside on the same Lips, and both circulate through the same Assembly?—For my own Part, I would neither have our Discourse *soured* with Austerity, nor *evaporate* into Impertinence: but unite (as a judicious Antient advises) the Benefits of Improvement, with the Blandishments of Pleasantry*.—And as to your polite People; if they can find more Music, in the *Magpie's* Voice, than in the *Nightingale's* Note; I must own myself as much surpris'd at *their* Ears, as they are at the strange Man's Face.

Ther. With all your grey-headed Authorities, I fancy, You will find very few Profelytes, among the Professors of modern Refinement. *Fashion* is, with the World, the Standard of Morals, as well as of Clothes. And He must be of a very *peculiar* Turn indeed, who would choose to be ridiculous in either.

Asp. Rather, *Theron*, He must be of a very *pliant* Turn, who tamely delivers up his Conduct, to be moulded by a Fashion; which has neither true Elegance to dignify it, nor the least Usefulness to recommend it.

And

* *Cum quadam Illecebrâ ac Voluptati utiles.* Aul. Gel.

And, which, I beseech You, is most ridiculous? — He, who servilely imitates every *idle* Fashion, and is the very *Ape* of corrupt Custom? — Or He, who asserts his native Liberty; and resolutely follows, where *Wisdom* and *Truth* lead the Way.

Ther. Would you then obtrude religious Discourse, upon every Company? Consider, *Aspasio*, what a motley Figure this would make. — A Wedding, and a Sermon! — Quadrille, and St. *Paul*! — The last new Play, and primitive Christianity!

Asp. You know the Rule, *Theron*, which is given by the great “Master of our Assemblies;” *Cast not your Pearls before Swine* †. Some there are, so immersed in Sensuality, that they can relish nothing, but the coarsest Husks of Conversation. To these, neither offer your Pearls, nor prostitute your Intimacy.

But, when Persons of a liberal Education, and elevated Sentiments — when these meet together; why should not their Discourse be suitable, to the Eminence of their Rank, and the Superiority of their Genius? Raised, far above the Level of that *trite* and *effeminate* Strain — “Upon my Honour, the Actress topt her Part. “Heavens! How charmingly she sung! How gracefully she trod the Stage!”

Ther. Indeed, my *Aspasio*, I am intirely in your Way of Thinking; however I have hitherto put on the Mask. — The Gift of Speech, is one great Prerogative of our rational Nature. And ’tis Pity, that such a superior Faculty should be debased to the meanest Purposes.

Suppose, all our stately Vessels, that pass and repass the Ocean, were to carry out nothing but Tinsel, and theatrical Decorations; were to import nothing but glittering Baubles, and nicely-fansied Toys. Would such a Method of Trading be well-judged in itself, or beneficial in its Consequences? — Articulate Speech is the Instrument of a much nobler Commerce; intended to transmit and diffuse the Treasures of the Mind. And will not the Practice be altogether *as injudicious*, must not the Issue be infinitely *more detrimental*, if this Vehi-

cle of intellectual Wealth, is freighted only with *pleasing Fopperies*?

Asp. Such Folly and Extravagance, would be hissed out of the *commercial* World. Why then are they admitted and cherished in the *social*?

Ther. Why indeed? He must be far more acute than your *Theron*, who can assign a single Reason to countenance them. To explode them, ten thousand Arguments occur.—A continual Round of gay and trifling Conversation*, of Visits quite modish, and Entertainments not moral, must give an indolent Turn to the Mind. Such as will *enervate* its Powers; *indispose* it for generous Action; and gradually *sap* the very Foundation of Virtue.—Whereas, a frequent Conference on the Glories of the Godhead, or the Wonders of Creation, would invigorate and ennoble the Soul. Would enlarge her Faculties, and elevate her Desires.

Asp. Did not our Hearts burn within us, said the Travelers at *Emmaus*, while HE talked with us by the Way†? Those Discourses, 'tis true, were conducted with a Spirit, and enforced with an Energy, absolutely unequalled. Yet, the same happy Effects would, in *some* inferior Degree, result from our friendly Conferences, if they turned upon the same important Points. We also should feel our Hearts *warmed* with holy Zeal, and *glowing* with heavenly Love.

Ther. Such Conferences would not only be productive of *present* Advantage; but yield a renewed Pleasure, in the Retrospect. We might *reflect*, with real Complacency, on Hours spent in so rational a Manner. And who would not prefer the silent Applause of the Heart, to all those tumultuous Joys; which wanton Jest create, or the circling Glass inspires?

Asp.

* The Significancy and Importance of such Conversation, was smartly represented by the Philosopher. Who, being asked, How he left the Company employed, made Answer; *Some in milking the Ram, Others in holding the Pail.*

† Luke xxiv. 32.

Asp. One †, who thoroughly knew Mankind, and had tried the Merits of the jovial Board, very pertinently compares such Flashes of Mirth, to the *Crackling of Thorns under a Pot* †. The transient Blaze of the One, and the senseless Noise of the Other, continue but for a Moment; and then expire, *that* in Smoke and Darkness, *this* in Spleen and Melancholy.

I said, *Spleen and Melancholy*. — For, however jauntie and alert the various Methods of modish Trifling may seem; whatever Ease and Grace they are supposed to give the Conversation; sure I am, it will be afflictive, to *look back* upon Interviews, squandered away in very Vanity; and shocking, to *look forward* upon the Account, which We must all shortly render.

— What Figure will *such* an Article make, in the final Reckoning, and at the decisive Bar? “Our social Hours, which might have promoted our mutual Edification, and been subservient to our Creator’s Glory, all *lost* in Merriment and Whim; or *worse than lost*, in Flattery and Detraction. A *Blank*, or a *Blot*.”

Ther. Venus, we find has her zealous Knight-Errants, and *Bacchus* his professed Votaries, in almost every Company. And is it not truly deplorable, that the God of Nature alone, has none to assert his Honour, none to celebrate his Perfections? Though He is the *Original* of all *Beauty*, and the *Parent* of all *Good*.

When I have taken my Morning Walk, amidst Dews and Flowers; with the Sun shedding Lustre round Him, and unveiling the happy Landscape; how has my Eyes been charmed, with the lovely Prospect! How has my Ear been ravished, with the Musick of the Grove! Methought, every Note was a *Tribute* of Harmony; and all Nature seemed one *grand Chorus*, swelling with the Creator’s Praise.—But how, has the Scene been reversed; when, leaving my rural Elysium, I entered the Haunts of Men! Where I saw Faculties divine, meanly engaged in Trifles. Where I heard the Tongue, prompt to utter, and fluent to express, every Thing but its Maker’s Glory.

B 5

I

† King Solomon.

† Eccles. vii. 6.

I assure you, I have often been chagrined on this Occasion: and sometimes said within myself—"What! Shall *Trifles* be regarded, and the *Majesty* of *Heaven* neglected? Shall every Friend, and every Visitant, receive his Share of Respect? And no Acknowledgments be paid to that exalted Being, who is worthy, more than worthy, of all our Veneration?"

Asp. This will be still more afflictive to an ingenuous Mind, if we consider, That the infinite and glorious God is *present* at all our Interviews: vouchsafes to express his Satisfaction, and acknowledge himself *magnified*; when, with Admiration and Love, We talk of his transcendent Excellencies.—Nay: We are assured, that the LORD of all Lords, not only hearkens, but keeps a *Book of Remembrance*; and will distinguish such Persons, at the Day of universal Retribution. When the loose Train of licentious Talkers, are driven away as the despicable *Chaff*; these shall be selected for his peculiar Treasure, and numbered among the *Jewels* of JEHOVAH*.

Ther. If the Gentlemen who make high Pretensions to Reason, think themselves discharged from these Doctrines of Revelation; they should not forget *their own* Scriptures.—A *Philosopher* will tell them the *Duty* of employing their Time, as in the awful Presence, and under the immediate Inspection, of the supreme Being †.—An *Orator* will shew them the egregious *Impropriety*, of wasting their friendly Interviews, in the Fumes of Drollery, or the Froth of Impertinence ‡.

Asp.

* *Malach. iii. 16. 17.* This is a Passage much to be observed. A most emphatical Recommendation of religious Discourse? Perhaps, the most *emphatical*, that ever was used; and the most *endeavouring*, that can possibly be conceived.

† *Sic certe vivendum est, tanquam in Conspectu vivamus: sic cogitandum, tanquam aliquis in Pectus intimum inspicere possit: & potest. Quid enim profit ab Homine aliquid esse secretum? Nihil Deo clausum est. Interest Animis nostris, & Cogitationibus mediis intervenit.* Senec. Epist. 83.

‡ Cicero says with an Air of graceful Indignation; *Quasi vero clarorum Virorum aut tacitos Congressus esse oporteat, aut iudicatos Sermones, aut Rerum Colloquia leviorum.* Academ. Quæst. Lib. IV.

Asp. Who then, that is wise, would not habituate Himself to a Practice ; which comes recommended by the Voice of Reason, and is enforced by the Authority of God ?—A Practice, which will administer *present Good*---will afford *pleasing Reviews*---and terminate in *everlasting Honour* ?

Ther. 'Tis strange, that Subjects, which deserve to be received, as the universal Topic, are almost universally banished from our Discourse.---Was this Cabinet enriched, with a Series of antique *Medals*, or a Collection of the finest *Gems* ; my Friends would naturally expect to be entertained, with a Sight of those Rarities, and an Explanation of their Meaning. Why should we not as naturally expect, and as constantly agree, to entertain each other with Remarks on those *admirable Curiosities*, which are deposited in the boundless *Musæum* * of the Universe ?

When a *General* has won some important Victory, or an *Admiral* has destroyed the Enemy's Fleet ; every Company resounds with their Atchievements ; every Tongue is the Trumpet of their Fame. And why should We not celebrate, with equal Delight and Ardour, that *almighty Hand* ; which formed the Structure, and furnished the Regions, of this stupendous System ?

Asp. Especially, if to his *immensely glorious*, We add his *supremely amiable* Perfections.---When the victorious Commander is our most cordial Friend : when He has professed the tenderest Love ; done Us the most signal Good ; and promised us a perpetual Enjoyment of his Favours ; it will be impossible to neglect such an *illustrious* and *generous* Person. His Name must be engraven upon our Hearts ; must slide insensibly into our Tongues ; and be as Music to our Ears.

Is not all this true, and in the most super-eminent Degree, with regard to the blessed God ?---Can greater *Kindness* be exercised, or greater *Love* be conceived ;

* *Musæum*.—Alluding to a remarkable Edifice in the City of *Oxford*, distinguished by this Name ; and appropriated to the Reception of *Curiosities*, both natural and artificial.

ceived ; than to deliver up his own Son to Torments and Death, for the Expiation of our Sins ?---Can *Benefits*, more desirable, be granted ; than to adopt Us for his Children, and sanctify us by his Spirit ?---Can *Promises*, more invaluable, be made ; than those, which insure to Us the Preferments of Heaven, and the Riches of Eternity ?

All this is attested, concerning the Almighty Majesty, in the Scriptures of Truth. What a rich Fund therefore, for refined Conversation, are *the Scriptures* ?

Ther. Here also I have the Pleasure, to concur with my *Aspasio*. Though I believe, He suspects me to be somewhat wavering or defective, in my Veneration for the Scriptures.

Asp. No, *Theron* : I have a better Opinion of your Taste and Discernment, than to harbour any such Suspicion.

Ther. The Scriptures are certainly an inexhaustible Fund of Materials, for the most delightful and ennobling Discourse. When We consider the Author of those sacred Books---that they came originally from *Heaven*---were dictated by *divine* Wisdom---have the same *consummate* Excellence, as the Works of Creation---It is really surprising, that We are not always searching, by Study, by Meditation, or Converse, into one or other of those grand Volumes.

Asp. When *Secker* preaches, or *Murray* pleads ; the Church is crowded, and the Bar thronged. When *Spence* produces the Refinements of Criticism, or *Young* displays the Graces of Poetry ; the Press toils, yet is scarce able to supply the Demands of the Public.---Are We *eager* to hear, and *impatient* to purchase, what proceeds from such eloquent Tongues, and masterly Pens ? And can We be *coldly indifferent*, when---not the most accomplished of Mankind---not the most exalted of Creatures---but the adorable Author of all Wisdom, speaks in his revealed Word ? Strange ! that our Attention does not hang * upon the venerable Accents,

* *St. Luke*, in his evangelical History, uses this beautiful Image, *ἐκρεματο*. The People *hung upon* the Lips of their all-wise Teacher.

DIALOGUE I. 13

Accents, and our Talk *dwell* upon the incomparable Truths!

Ther. I admire, I must confess, the very *Language* of the Bible. In this, methinks, I discern a Conformity, between the *Book of Nature*, and the *Book of Scripture*.

In the Book of Nature, the divine Teacher speaks, not barely to our Ears, but to all our Senses. And it is very remarkable, how He *varies* his Address! ---Observe his grand and august Works. In these, He uses the Style of Majesty. We may call it, the true *Sublime*. It strikes with Awe, and transports the Mind.---View his ordinary Operations. Here, He descends to a plainer Dialect. This may be termed, the *familiar* Style. We comprehend it with Ease, and attend to it with Pleasure.---In the more ornamented Parts of the Creation, He clothes his Meaning with Elegance. All is rich and brilliant. We are delighted; We are charmed. And what is this, but the *florid* Style?

A Variety, somewhat similar, runsthrough the Scriptures.---Would You see *History*, in all her *Simplicity*, and all her *Force*; most beautifully easy, yet irresistibly striking?---See Her, or rather *feel* her Energy, touching the nicest Movements of the Soul, and triumphing over our Passions, in the inimitable Narrative of *Joseph's* Life.---The Representation of *Esau's* bitter Distress*; the Conversation-Pieces of *Jonathan*, and his gallant Friend†; the memorable Journal of the Disciples going to *Emmaus*‡; are finished Models of the *Impassioned* and *Affecting*.---Here is nothing studied; no Flights of Fancy; no Embellishments of Oratory. Yet, how inferior is the Episode of *Nisus* and *Eurialus*, though worked up by the most masterly Hand in the World, to the undissembled artless Fervency of these scriptural Sketches||!

Are

Teacher. *Luke* xix. 48. Which implies two very strong Ideas---an *Attention*, that nothing could interrupt---and an *Eagerness*, scarce ever to be satisfied.

--- Pendetque loquentis ab Ore.

VIRG.

* *Gen.* xxvii. 30, &c. † *1 Sam.* xviii. xix. xx. ‡ *Luke* xxiv. 13. &c.

Let a Person of true Taste peruse, in a *critical* View, the

two

Are We pleased with the Elevation and Dignity of an *Heroic Poem* ; or the Tenderneſs and Perplexity of a *Dramatic Performance* ? In the Book of *Job*, they are both united, and both unequalled.---Conformably to the exacteſt Rules of Art, as the Action advances, the Incidents are more alarming, and the Images more magnificent. The Language glows, and the Pathos ſwells. Till, at laſt, the DEITY Himſelf makes his Entrance. He ſpeaks from the Whirlwind, and ſummons the Creation : ſummons Heaven, and all its ſhining Hoſt ; the Elements, and their moſt wonderful Productions ; to vouch for the Wiſdom of his providential Diſpenſations.---His Word ſtrikes Terror, and ſaſhes Conviction : decides the momentous Controverſy, and cloſes the auguſt Drama, with all poſſible Solemnity and Grandeur.

If We ſometimes chooſe a *plaintive Strain* ; ſuch as ſoftens the Mind, and ſooths an agreeable Melancholy : are any of the antient Tragedies ſuperior, in the Eloquence of Mourning, to *David's* pathetic Elegy on his beloved *Jonathan** ; to his moſt paſſionate and inſoluble Moan †, over the lovely but unhappy

py

two firſt Chapters of *St. Luke*. He will there find a Series of the moſt ſurpriſing Incidents, related with the greateſt *Simplicity*, yet with the utmoſt *Majeſty*.---All which, wonderfully affecting in themſelves, are *heightened and illuminated*, by a judicious Intermixture of the ſublimeſt Pieces of Poetry. For my own Part, I know not how to characterize them more properly, than by *Solomon's* elegant Compariſon.---*They are as gold Rings ſet with the Beryl, or as bright Ivory over-laid with Sapphires.* Cantic. v. 14.

* 2 Sam. i. 19, &c.

† 2 Sam. xviii. 33. *The King was vehemently affected (ענין) and went up to the Chamber, and wept : and as he went, He ſaid ; O my Son Abſalom ! my Son, my Son Abſalom ! Would to GOD I had died for Thee ! O Abſalom, my Son, my Son !*---Such a Picture, and ſo much Pathos ; to artleſs both, and both ſo exquisite ; I muſt acknowledge, I never met with, among all the Representations of Dignity in Diſtreſs.---The King's Troops had gained a ſignal Victory. His Crown and his Life were reſcued from the moſt imminent Danger. Yet all theſe joyful Tidings were obliterated by the over-whelming Impetuofity of his Griefs.---The News of *Abſalom's* Death, ſtruck Him like a Dagger. He

py *Abſalom* ; or to that melodious Woe, which warbles and bleeds, in every Line of *Jeremiah's* Lamentations ?

Would We be entertained with the daring Sublimity of *Homer*, or the correct Majesty of *Virgil* ? With the expreſſive Delicacy of *Horace*, or the rapid Excursions of *Pindar* ? Behold them joined, behold them excelled, in the Odes of *Mofes*, and the euchariftic Hymn of *Deborah* ; in the exalted Devotion of the *Pſalms*, and the glorious Enthuſiaſm of the Prophets.

Aſp. Only with this Difference, That the former are *tuneful Triflers* *, and amuſe the Fancy with empty Fiction: the latter are Teachers ſent from GOD, and make the Soul *wiſe unto Salvation*.---The Bible, is not only the brighteſt Ornament, but the moſt invaluable Depositem. On a right, a practical Knowledge of theſe *lively Oracles*, depends the preſent Comfort, and the endleſs Felicity of Mankind. Whatever, therefore, in Study or Converſation, has no Connexion with their divine Contents ; may be reckoned among the *Toys* of Literature, or the *Cyphers* of Diſcourſe.

Ther. Here again the Book of Scripture, is ſome-what like the Magazine of Nature. What can We deſire, for our *Accommodation* and *Delight*, which this Store-Houſe of Conveniences does not afford ? What can

He ſtarts from his Seat. He haſtens into Retirement, there to pour out his Soul in copious Lamentation. But his Anguiſh is too impetuous, to bear a Moment's Retraint. He burſts immediately into a Flood of Tears ; and cries, as He goes ; *O Abſalom, &c.*

What ſays *Mezentius*, when his Son is ſlain ? When, to ſharpen his Sorrow, the pale Corſe, the miſerable Spectacle, is before his Eyes, and within his Arms ? The moſt pathetic Word He utters, is

— Heu ! nunc miſero mihi demum
Exilium infœlix, nunc aliè Vulnus adaſtum.

How languid is *Virgil* ! How *inexpreſſive* the Prince of *Latin Poetry* ! compared with the royal Mourner in *Israel* ! Moſt evident, from this and many other Inſtances, is the Superiority of the Scriptures, in copying Nature, and painting the Paſſions.

* *Ludit amabiliſter,*

can We wish, for our *Edification* and *Improvement*, which that Fund of Knowledge does not supply ? Of these we may truly affirm, each in its respective Kind, *is profitable unto all Things.*

Are We Admirers of *Antiquity* ?---Here, We are led back, beyond the universal Deluge, and far beyond the Date of any other Annals.---We are introduced among the earliest Inhabitants of the Earth. We take a View of Mankind, in their undisguised primitive Plainness, and when the Days of their Life were but little short of a thousand Years.--- We are brought acquainted with the Original of Nations ; with the Creation of the World ; and with the Birth of Time itself.

Are we delighted with *vast* Atchievements ? --- Where is any Thing comparable to the Miracles in *Egypt*, and the Wonders in the Field of *Zoan* ? To the Memoirs of the *Israelites*, passing through the Depths of the Sea ; sojourning in the inhospitable Desarts ; and conquering the Kingdoms of *Canaan* ?---Where shall we meet with Instances of martial Bravery, equal to the prodigious Exploits of the *Judges* ; or the adventurous Deeds of *Jesse's* valiant Son, and his matchless Band of *Worthies* ?---Here, We behold the fundamental Laws of the Universe, sometimes suspended ; sometimes reversed : and not only the Current of *Jordan*, but the Course of Nature controuled. In short ; when We enter the Field of Scripture, We tread--- on *enchanted*, shall I say ? rather --- on *consecrated* Ground. Where Astonishment and Awe are awakened, at every Turn. Where is all, more than all, the *Marvellous* of Romance * ; connected with all the Precision and Sanctity of Truth.

If We want *Maxims* of *Wisdom*, or have a Taste for the *Laconic Style* ; how copiously may our Wants be supplied, and how delicately our Taste gratified ! Especially, in the Book of *Proverbs*, *Ecclesiastes*, and some of the *minor Prophets*.---Here, are the most sage Lessons of Instruction ; adapted to every Circum-
stance

* ----- *Heroum Fabula veris*
Vincitur Historiis.

stance of Life ; formed upon the Experience of all preceding Ages ; and perfected by the unerring SPIRIT of Inspiration. — These delivered with such remarkable Conciseness ; that one might venture to say, every Word is a Sentence *. At least, every Sentence may be called an *Apothegm* ; sparkling with Brightness of Thought, or weighty with Solidity of Sense. The whole, like a Profusion of Pearls——*each* containing, in a very small Compass, a Value almost immense——*all* heaped up (as an ingenious Critic speaks) with a confused Magnificence, above all Order.

If we look for the *Strength* of Reasoning, and the *Warmth* of Exhortation ; the *insinuating Arts* of genteel Address, or the *manly Boldness* of impartial Re-proof : all the Thunder of the Orator, without any of his Ostentation ; all the Politeness of the Courtier, without any of his Flattery :——let us have Recourse to the Acts of the Apostles, and to the Epistles of St. Paul †. These are a *Specimen*, or rather these are the *Standard*, of them all.

I do

* What Cicero said of *Thucydides*, is more eminently true, concerning our royal Moralist, and his rich Collection of Ethics ; concerning our evangelical Historians, and their copious Variety of Facts. *Eum adeo esse Rebus plenum refertumque, ut prope Verborum Numerum Numero Rerum æquet.*

† Another very remarkable Instance of Propriety in St. Paul's Writings, is, That though *diffuse* in the *doctrinal*, they are *concise* in the *preceptive* Parts. On the former, it was absolutely necessary to enlarge. On the latter, it is always judicious to be short. The celebrated Rule of *Horace*,

Quicquid præcipies, esto brevis,

was never more exactly observed, nor more finely exemplified, than by our Apostolic Author. See that noble String of Precepts, 1 *Thess.* v. 16, 17, &c.—See another choice Collection of the same Kind, *Rom.* xii. 9, 10, &c. in which the *Energy* of the Diction is no less admirable, than the *Conciseness* of the Sentence.

Αποσυγνεις—κολλωμενοι—φιλοσοφοι—ζεοντες—προσκαρτε-
ρνεις—διωκονεις—are some of the most *vigorous* Words that Language can furnish ; and form the most *animated* Meaning, that Imagination can conceive.

I do not wonder, therefore, that a Taste so refined, and a Judgment so correct as *Milton's*, should discern higher Attractives in the Volume of Inspiration, than in the most celebrated Authors of *Greece* and *Rome*.

————— Yet not the more
Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt
Clear Spring, or shady Grove, or sunny Hill,
Smit with the Love of sacred Song: but CHIEF
Thee Sion, and the flowery Banks beneath,
That wash thy hallowed Feet, and warbling flow,
Nightly I visit*.

Asp. Another Recommendation of the Scriptures, is, That they afford the most *awful* and most *amiable* Manifestations of the GODHEAD. His Glory shines, and his Goodness smiles, in those divine Pages, with unparalleled Lustre.—Here we have a satisfactory Explanation of *our own State*. The Origin of Evil is traced; the Cause of all our Misery discovered; and the Remedy, the infallible Remedy, both clearly shewn, and freely offered.—The Merits of the bleeding *JESUS*, lay a firm Foundation for all our Hopes: while Gratitude for his dying Love, suggests the most winning Incitement to every Duty.—Morality, *Theron*, your (and let me add, *my*) admired Morality, is delineated in all its Branches. Is placed upon its proper Basis, and raised to its highest Elevation.—The SPIRIT of GOD is promised, to enlighten the Darkness of our Understandings, and strengthen the Imbecility of our Wills. What an ample——Can you indulge me, on this favourite Topic?

Ther. It is, I assure you, equally pleasing to myself. Your Enlargements, therefore, need no Apology.

Asp. What ample Provision is made, by these blessed Books, for all our spiritual Wants! And, in this Respect,

* That is, “He still was pleased to study the Beauties of
“the antient Poets; but his highest Delight was in the Songs
“of *Sion*, in the holy Scriptures, and in these he meditated
“Day and Night.”

spect, how indisputable is their Superiority to all other Compositions!

Is any one convinced of *Guilt*, as provoking Heaven, and ruining the Soul?—Let him ask *Reason*, to point out a Means of Reconciliation, and a Refuge of Safety. Reason hesitates, as she replies; “The Deity *may*, perhaps, accept our Supplications, and “grant Forgiveness.”—But the Scriptures leave us not to the *sad Uncertainty* of Conjecture. They speak the Language of clear Assurance. GOD *has* set forth a Propitiation *: He *does* forgive our Iniquities †: He *will* remember our Sins no more ‡.

Are we *assaulted* by Temptation, or *averse* to Duty?—*Philosophy* may attempt to parry the Thrust, or to stir up the reluctant Mind; by disclosing the *Deformity* of Vice, and urging the *Fitness* of Things. Feeble Expedients! Just as well calculated, to accomplish the Ends proposed; as the flimsy Fortification of a Cobweb, to defend us from the Ball of a Cannon; or, as the gentle Vibrations of a Lady’s Fan, to make a Wind-bound Navy fail.—The Bible recommends no such incompetent Succours. *My Grace*, says its almighty Author, *is sufficient for thee* §.—*Sin shall not have Dominion over you* ¶.—The great JEHOVAH, in whom is everlasting Strength, *He worketh in us both to will, and to do, of his good Pleasure* ¶.

Should we be visited with *Sickness*, or overtaken by any *Calamity*, the Consolation which *Plato* offers, is, That such Dispensations co-incide with the universal Plan of divine Government. *Virgil* will tell us, for our Relief, That afflictive Visitations are, more or less, the unavoidable Lot of all Men. Another *Moralist* whispers in the dejected Sufferer’s Ear, “Impatience adds to the Load: whereas a calm Submission renders it more supportable.”—Does the Word of Revelation dispense such *spiritless* and *fugitive* Cordials? No: Those sacred Pages inform us, That Tribulations are fatherly Chastisements; Tokens of

our

* Rom. iii. 25. † Psa. ciii. 3. ‡ Heb. viii. 12. § 2 Cor. xii. 9. ¶ Rom. vi. 15. ¶ Phil. ii. 13.

our Maker's Love, and Fruits of his Care. That they are intended to work *in us*, the peaceable Fruits of Righteousness; and to work out *for us*, an eternal Weight of Glory ||.

Should we, under the Summons of *Death*, have Recourse to the most celebrated *Comforters* in the Heathen World; they would increase our Apprehensions, rather than mitigate our Dread. Death is represented, by the great Master of their Schools; as "The most formidable of all Evils." They were not able *positively* to determine, Whether the Soul survived; and never so much as *dreamt* of the Resurrection of the Body.—Whereas, the Book of GOD strips the Monster of his Horrors, or turns him into a Messenger of Peace: gives him an Angel's Face, and a Deliverer's Hand. Ascertainings to the *Soul's* of the Righteous, an immediate *Translation* into the Regions of Bliss; and ensuring to their *Bodies*, a most advantageous *Revival*, at the Restoration of all Things.

Inestimable Book! It heals the Maladies of Life, and subdues the Fear of Death. It strikes a lightsome Vista, through the Gloom of the Grave; and opens a charming, a glorious Prospect of Immortality in the Heavens.

These, with many other Excellencies peculiar to the Scriptures, one would imagine more than sufficient, to engage *every sensible* Heart in their Favour; and introduce them, with the *highest Esteem*, into every improved

|| 2 Cor. iv. 17. What are all the *consolatory* Expedients, prescribed in all the Volumes of Heathen Morality, compared with this *one* Recipe of Revelation? They are, in Point of cheering Efficacy, somewhat like the *Froth* on the Conflux of a thousand rapid Streams, compared with a single Draught of *Homer's Nectar*. Which, he tells us, was

*Temper'd with Drugs of sow'reign Use, it asswage
The boiling Bosom of tumultuous Rage;
To clear the cloudy Front of wrinkled Care,
And dry the tearful Sluices of Despair.
Charm'd with that virtuous Draught, th' exalted Mind
All Sense of Woe delivers to the Wind.*

Odyss. IV.

ved Conversation.—They had such an Effect upon the *finest* Genius, and *most accomplished* * Person, that former or latter Ages can boast. Infomuch, that He made, while living, this public Declaration; and left it, when He died, upon everlasting Record—*Thy Words are sweeter to my Mouth, than Honey †.*—*Thy Law is my Meditation all the Day ‡.*—*I will speak of thy Testimonies even before Kings ||.*—If David tasted so much Sweetness in a *small*, and that the *least valuable*, Part of the divine Word; how much richer is the Feast to Us! Since the Gospel is added to the Law, and the Canon of Scripture completed! Since (to borrow the Words of a Prophet) the LORD GOD *has sealed up the Sum*; has put the last Hand to his Work; and rendered it *full of Wisdom, and perfect in Beauty §.*

Ther. Another very distinguishing Peculiarity of the sacred Writings, just occurs to my Mind—The Method of communicating Advice, or administering Reproof,

* If we consider *David*, in the great Variety of his fine Qualifications—The Ornaments of his Person, and the far more illustrious Endowments of his Mind—The surprising Revolutions in his Fortune; sometimes, reduced to the lowest Ebb of Adversity; sometimes, riding upon the highest Tide of Prosperity—His singular Dexterity, in extricating himself from Difficulties; and peculiar Felicity, in accommodating himself to all Circumstances—The Prizes he won, as a youthful Champion; and the Victories he gained, as an experienced General—His masterly Hand upon the Harp, and his inimitable Talent for Poetry—The admirable Regulations of his Royal Government, and the incomparable Usefulness of his public Writings—The Depth of his Repentance, and the Height of his Devotion—The Vigour of his Faith in the divine Promises, and the Ardour of his Love to the divine Majesty—If we consider these, with several other Marks of Honour and Grace, which ennoble the History of his Life; we shall see such an *Assemblage* of shining Qualities, as perhaps were never united in any *other* merely human Character.

This Observation was expunged. But, upon maturer Thoughts, it is offered to the Public. In order to convince a *polite* Reader, That the Love of the Scriptures, and the Exercise of Devotion, are by no means the low Peculiarities of a *vulgar* Mind.

† Psal. cxix. 103.

‡ Ibid. cxix. 97.

|| Ibid. cxix. 46.

§ Ezek. xxviii. 12.

Reproof, by *Parables*. A Method, which levels itself to the *lowest* Apprehension, without giving Offence to the *most supercilious* Temper. Yet, is as much superior, to plain unornamented Precept; as the enlivened Scenes of a well-wrought Tragedy, are more impressivè and affecting, than a simple Narration of the Plot.

Our LORD was asked, by a Student of the *Jewish* Law, *Who is my Neighbour?* Which implied another Question, *How is he to be loved?*—The Inquirer was *conceited* of himself; yet, *ignorant* of the Truth, and *deficient* in his Duty. Had the wise Instructor of Mankind abruptly declared, *You neither know the former, nor fulfil the latter.* Probably, the Querist would have reddened with Indignation, and departed in a Rage.—Therefore, to teach, and not disgust; to *convince* the Man of his Error, and not *exasperate* his Mind; the blessed JESUS frames a Reply, as amiable in the Manner, as it was pertinent to the Purpose.

A certain Person, going down from *Jerusalem* to *Jericho*, fell among Thieves †. Not content to rob him of his Treasure, they strip him of his Garments; wound him with great Barbarity; and leave him half dead.—Soon after this calamitous Accident, a Traveler happens to come along that very Road. And, what renders him more likely to administer Relief, he is one of the *sacred Order*. One, who taught others the lovely Lessons of Humanity and Charity; and was, therefore, under the strongest Obligations, to exemplify them in his own Practice. He just glances an Eye upon the deplorable Object: sees him stretched on the cold Ground, and weltring in his Blood. But takes no farther Notice. Nay, to avoid the Trouble of an Inquiry, passes by on the other Side.—Scarce was he departed, when a *Levite* approaches. This Man *comes nearer, and looks on* the miserable Spectacle. Takes a leisurely

† Luke x. 30.

DIALOGUE I. 23

ly and attentive Survey || of the Case. And, though every Gash in the bleeding Flesh, cried and pleaded for Compassion; this Minister of the Sanctuary, neither speaks a Word to comfort, nor moves a Hand to help.—Last comes a *Samaritan* †; one of the abhorred

|| This seems to be the Import of ελθων καὶ ἰδων. Luke x. 32. This *diversifies* the Idea, and *beightens* the Description of *Jewish* Inhumanity.

† If this was a Parable, we cannot but admire the Accuracy of our LORD, both in *laying* the *Scene*, and *selecting* the *Circumstances*.—It is the Maxim of a great Critic,

Ficta Voluptatis causâ sint proxima veris.

And how very apparent is the Air of *Probability*, in this sacred Apologue!—The Way from *Jerusalem* to *Jericho*, lying through a Desert, was much infested by Thieves, and too commodious for their Purposes of Violence.—What could be more likely to happen, than the Passage of a *Priest* and *Levite* along that Road? Since *Jericho* was a City, appropriated to the *Levitical* Order; and contained no less than twelve thousand Attendants, on the Service of the Temple.

How judiciously is the *principal* Figure circumstanced!—Had the *Calamity* befallen a *Samaritan*, it would have made but *feeble* Impressions of Pity; and those, perhaps, immediately effaced by *stronger* Emotions of Hate. But, when it was a *Jew*, that lay bleeding to Death; the Representation was sure to *interest* the Hearer in the Distress, and awaken a tender Concern.—Had the *Relief* been administered by a *Jew*, the Benevolence would have shone, but in a much *fainter* Light. Whereas, when it came from the Hands of a *Samaritan*, whom all the *Jews* had agreed to abjure, to execrate, and rank with the very Fiends of Hell, how bright—how charmingly and irresistibly bright—was the Lustre of *such* Charity!

Let the Reader consider the Temper, expressed in that *rancorous* Reflection; *Thou art a Samaritan, and hast a Devil*, John viii. 48.—Let him compare that inveterate Malevolence, with the *benign* and *compassionate* Spirit of our amiable Traveler.—Then, let him say, Whether he ever beheld a finer or a bolder Contrast? Whether, upon the Whole, he ever saw the *Ordonnance* of descriptive Painting, more *justly designed*, or more *happily executed*?

I would beg Leave to observe farther, That the *virulent* Animosity of the *Jew* discovers itself, even in the Lawyer's Reply; *He that shewed Mercy on him*. He will not so much as *name* the *Samaritan*. Especially in a Case, where he could not be named without an honourable Distinction.—So strongly marked,

horred Nation ; whom the *Jew* hated with the most implacable Malignity. Though the *Levite* had neglected an expiring Brother : though the Priest had with-held his Pity, from one of the LORD's peculiar People : the very Moment this *Samaritan* sees the unhappy Sufferer, he melts into Commiseration. He forgets the *imbittered Foe*, and considers only the *distressed Fellow-creature*. He springs from his Horse, and resolves to intermit his Journey. The Oil and Wine, intended for his own Refreshment, he freely converts into healing Unguents. He binds up the Wounds ; sets the disabled Stranger upon his own Beast ; and, with all the *Affiduity* of a *Servant*, with all the *Tendernefs* of a *Brother*, conducts him to an Inn. There, he deposits Money for his present Use : charges the Host to omit nothing, that might conduce to the Comfort of his Guest : and promises, to defray the whole Expence of his Lodging, his Maintenance, and his Cure.

What a lively Picture this, of the most *disinterested* and *active* Benevolence ! A Benevolence, which excludes no Persons, not even Strangers or Enemies, from its tender Regards. Which disdains no Condescension, grudges no Cost, in its Labours of Love.— Could any Method of Conviction have been more *forcible*, and at the same Time *more pleasing*, than the Interrogatory, proposed by our LORD, and deduced from the Story ? *Which now of these Three, thinkest thou, was Neighbour unto him that fell among the Thieves ?* — Or, can there be an Advice more *suitable* to the Occasion ; more *important* in its Nature ; or expressed with a more *sententious* Energy ; than *Go thou, and do likewise ?* — In this Case, the Learner instructs, the Delinquent condemns himself. *Bigotry* bears away its Prejudice ; and *Pride* (when the Moral so sweetly, so imperceptibly insinuates) even *Pride* itself lends a willing Ear to Admonition.

Asp.

ed, and so exactly preserved, are the *τα ηθη*, the *Manners* or distinguishing Qualities of each Person, in the sacred Narrations.

Asp. It has been very justly remarked, That this *Eloquence of Similitudes*, is equally affecting to the Wise, and intelligible to the Ignorant.---It *shews* †, rather than *relates*, the Point to be illustrated.---It has been admired, by the best Judges, in all Ages. But, never was carried to its *highest Perfection*, till our LORD spoke the Parable of the *Prodigal* ‡.---Which has a *Beauty*, that no Paraphrase can heighten: a *Perspicuity*, that renders all Interpretation needless: and a *Force*, which every Reader, not totally insensible, must feel.

Ther. The Condescension and Goodness of GOD are, every where, conspicuous.---In the Productions of Nature, He conveys to Us the most *valuable* Fruits, by the Intervention of the *loveliest* Blossoms. Though the Present is, in itself, extremely acceptable; He has given it an *additional Endearment*, by the Beauties which array it, or the Perfumes which surround it.---In the Pages of Revelation likewise, He has communicated to Us the most *glorious Truths*, adorned with all the *Graces of Composition*. Such as may polish the Man of Genius, and improve the Man of Worth. Such as highly delight our Imagination, even while they cultivate and refine our Morals.---So that they really are, as one of their divine Authors very elegantly speaks; *Like Apples of Gold in Pictures of Silver* §.

Asp. Who then would not gladly receive that gracious Exhortation; *Let the Word of CHRIST dwell in You richly* ||? Who would not willingly obey that benign

† *Discentem*, says *Seneca* upon the Subject, *Et audientem in rem presentem adhaerent*. Epist. lix.

‡ Luke xv. 11.

§ *Prov.* xxv. 11.—*Tberon* follows the received Translation. I should prefer the Exposition of *Giasius*; who supposes מַשְׁכֵּית כֶּסֶף to signify, *Retacula argentea, in quibus Oculi sunt minutissimi, penetrabiles tamen Visu*. According to this Interpretation, the Passage will present Us with *Apples of Gold in Network, or Lattice-work, of Silver*. Where the exquisitely fine Fruit, receives a new Charm, by shewing itself through the elegant Apertures of the Silver.

|| *Coloss.* iii. 16. *The Word of CHRIST*; so the Apostle calls the whole inspired Writings, and thereby asserts the *Divinity* of his Master—*Dwell*; not make a short Stay, or an occasional Visit,

nign Command ; *Thou shalt talk of it, when Thou fittest in thine House, and when Thou walkest by the Way ; when thou liest down, and when thou risest up* †.

When I consider the *Language* of the Scriptures, and sometimes experience their Energy on my Soul ; I am inclined to say---“ Other Writings, though polished “ with the nicest Touches of Art, only *tinkle* on the “ Ear, or affect Us like the Shepherd’s Reed. But “ these, even amidst all their noble Negligence, *strike* “ ---alarm---transport Us---somewhat like the Voice of “ Thunder, or the Arch-Angel’s Trumpet.”

When I consider the *Contents* of the Scriptures ; and believe myself interested, in the Promises they make, and the Privileges they confer ; I am induced to cry out---“ What are all the other Books in the World, “ compared with those invaluable Volumes ? No “ more than an *entertaining* Novel, or a few *prudential* “ Rules for domestick Oeconomy, compared with “ a *Parent’s Will* ; a *royal Charter* ; or an *imperial* “ Grant of Titles and Manors.”

All these Circumstances remind me of an *Encomium*, most deservedly given to the BIBLE. Which, though quite *artless*, is, I think, abundantly more expressive, than the most laboured Efforts of Rhetoric.---It came from the Lips of a Martyr. Who, being condemned to die, for his inviolable Adherence to the pure Doctrines of Scripture ; when he arrived at the Stake, and had composed Himself for Execution, took his final Leave in these affecting Words : “ Farewel Sun and “ Moon ! Farewel all the Beauties of Creation, and “ Comforts of Life ! Farewel my honoured Friends ! “ Farewel my beloved Relations ! And farewel thou “ *precious, precious Book of GOD !*”

Aspasio had scarce uttered the last Sentence, when a Servant came to let them know ; “ Supper was upon “ the Table.”---Very opportunely, said *Theron*, has our Repast waited, till our Conference is ended. We have shewed, what a large Field of delightful Specu-

lation, but take up a fixed and stated Residence.—*Richly* ; in the largest Measure, and with the greatest Efficacy ; so as to fill the Memory, sway the Will ; and actuate all the Affections.

† Deut. vi. 7.

D I A L O G U E I. 27

lation, the Scriptures open ; and what ample Materials for the most refined Discourse † they afford. As nothing can be more ungraceful, than to *neglect* in *our own* Conduct, what We *recommend* to the Practice of *Others* ; let Us, this very Night, begin to ennoble our Interviews with these improving Subjects. Let Us endeavour to make religious Conversation, which is in all Respects *desirable*, in some Degree *fashionable*.



D I A L O G U E II.

THE next Morning, when Breakfast was over, *Theron* and *Aspasio* took a Walk into the Garden --- Their Spirits cheered, and their Imaginations lively --- Gratitude glowing in their Hearts, and the whole Creation smiling around them.

The Spot adjoining to the House, was appropriated to the Cultivation of *Flowers*.---In a Variety of handsome Compartments, were assembled the choicest Beauties of blooming Nature. Here, the *Hyacinth* hung her filken Bells, or the *Lilies* reared their silver Pyramids. There, stood the neat *Narcissus*, loosely † attired in a Mantle of snowy Lustre ; or the splendid *Ranunculus* wore a full-trimmed Suit of radiant Scarlet. *Pinks* were rising to enamel the Borders ; *Roses* were opening to dress

† Should the serious Reader want any *farther* Persuatives, to this most beneficial Practice ; He may see—How particularly our divine Master *observes* the Strain of our Conversation ; *Luke* xxiv. 17.—How strictly he has commanded such social Communications, as may tend to the *Use of Edifying*, *Eph.* iv. 29.—And what an *Evidence* will arise from this Article, either for our Acquittal or Condemnation, at the Day of everlasting Judgment, *Matt.* xii. 36, 37.

† ————— *Hiantem Flore decoro*
Narcissum.

28 DIALOGUE II.

the Walls ; furrounded, on all Sides, with a Profusion of beauteous Forms, either latent in the Stalk, or bursting the Buds, or blown into full Expansion.

This was bounded by a slight Partition ; a Sort of verdant Parapet. Through which they descend by an easy Flight of Steps ; and are presented with the elegant Simplicity of the *Kitchen-Garden*. --- In one Place, You might see the *Marigold* flowering, or the *Beans* in Blossom. In another, the *Endive* curled her Leaves, and the Lettuce thickened her Tufts : *Collyflowers* sheltered their fair Complexion, under a green Umbrella ; while the *Burrage* disshevelled † her Locks, and braided them with blooming Jewels, of a finer Azure than the finest Sapphires. --- On the sunny Slopes, the *Cucumber* and *Melon* lay basking in the collected Beams. On the raised Beds, the *Artichoke* seemed to be erecting a Standard, while the *Asparagus* shot ‡ into Ranks of Spears. The level Ground produced all Manner of cooling Sallets and nourishing Esculents. Nothing was wanting to furnish out the wholesome Luxury of an *Antediluvian* Banquet.

Soon, a high Wall intervenes. Through which a Wicket opens, and transmits them into the regular and equi-distant Rows of an *Orchard*. --- This Plantation is so nicely adjusted, that it looks like an Arrangement of rural Piazzas, or a Collection of diversified Vistas. The Eye is, every where, entertained with the exactest Uniformity ; and darts, with unobstructed Ease, from one End of the branching Files to the Other. --- On all the Boughs, lay a lovely Evolution of *Blossoms* ; arrayed in milky White, or tinged with the softest Red. Crouding into one general Cluster, without relinquishing any vacant Space for Leaves, they formed the fairest, the gayest, the grandest Alcove, that Fancy itself can imagine. --- It is really like the *Court* of the *Graces*. None can approach

† Referring to the *loose irregular* Manner of its Foliation.

‡ Alluding, not only to the *Shape*, but also to the *Growth* of this Plant ; which is so unusually quick, that it may almost be said to *start*, rather than to *rise* out of the Earth.

approach it, without finding his Ideas brightened, and feeling his Temper exhilarated.

Contiguous to this correct Disposition of Things, Nature had thrown a *Wilderness*; hoary, grotesque, and magnificently confused. It stretched itself, with a large circular Sweep, to the North; and secured both the Olitory and the Orchard from incommoding Winds.—Copses of Hazel, and flowering Shrubs, filled the lower Spaces. While Poplars quivered aloft in Air, and Pines pierced the Clouds with their leafy Spires. Here, grew Clumps of Fir, clad in everlasting Green: there, stood Groves of Oak, that had weathered, for Ages, the wintry Storm.—Amidst this woody Theatre, ran a *winding Walk*; lined with Elms of insuperable Height! whose Branches, uniting at the Top, reared a stately Arch, and projected a solemn Shade. It was impossible to enter this lofty Labyrinth, without being struck with a *pleasing Dread*. As they proceed, every Inflexion discloses a deeper Gloom, and awakens a more pensive Attention.

Having strolled in this darksome Avenue, without a Speck of Sunshine, without a Glimpse of the Heavens; on a sudden, they step into open Day—Surprising! cries *Aspasio*. What a Change is this! What *delightful Enchantment* is Here!—One Instant whelmed in *Trophonius's Cave* †; where Horror frowns, and Darkness lours. Transported, the next, into the romantic Scenes of *Arcadia*; where all is lightsome, and all is gay.—Quick as Thought §, the Arches of

C 3

Heaven

† The Reader may find a *curious* Account of this Cave, together with a very *humorous*, and (which should always accompany Humour, or else it will be like a Sting without the Honey,) an *improving* Description of its Effects. *Spect.* Vol. VIII. No 598, 599.

§ Such a sudden Alteration of the Prospect, is beautifully described by *Milton*.

— As when a Scout,
Through dark and desert Ways, with Peril gone
All Night, at last by Break of chearful Dawn
Obtrains the Brow of some high-climbing Hill,
Which to his Eye discovers unaware
The goodly Prospect of some foreign Land,
First seen; or some renown'd Metropolis,

With

Heaven expand their Azure. Turrets and Spires shoot into the Skies. Towns, with their spacious Edifices, spread themselves to the admiring View—Those Lawns, green with freshest Herbage; those Fields, rich with undulating Corn; where were they all, a Moment ago?—It brings to my Mind that remarkable Situation of the *Jewish* Law-giver; when, elevated on the Summit of *Pisgab*, He surveyed goodly Land of Promise—surveyed *the Rivers, the Floods, the Brooks of Honey and Butter*—surveyed *the Mountains dropping with Wine, and the Hills flowing with Milk* †—Surveyed all with those Eyes, which, for forty tedious Years, had been confined to dry Sands, ragged Rocks, and the irksome Wastes of a desolate howling Wilderness.

Here they seated themselves, on the first *mossy* § *Hillock*, which offered its Couch. The rising Sun had visited the Spot, to dry up the Dews, and exhale the Damps that might endanger Health; to open the Violets, and expand the Primroses, that decked the Green. The whole Shade of the Wood was collected *behind* them; and a beautiful, extensive, diversified *Landscape* spread itself *before* them.

Theron, according to his usual Custom, made many improving Remarks on the Prospect, and its Furniture. He traced the Footsteps of an *all-comprehending* Contrivance, and pointed out the Strokes of *inimitable* Skill. He observed the *grand Exertions* of Power, and the *rich Exuberance* of Goodness, most signally, most charmingly conspicuous through the Whole.—Upon one

*With glist'ring Spires and Pinacles adorn'd,
Which now the rising Sun gilds with his Beams.*

Book III.

† This is the Language of the Book of *Job*, and the Prophecy of *Joel*. A Language, like the Scene it describes, not beautiful only, but beautiful and rich even to *Luxuriancy*.—One would almost suspect, the *Lyric* Poet had read these Passages, and attempted an Imitation of their Delicacies.

Vin que Fontem, Lactis & uberes

Cantare Rivos atque truncis

Lapsa cavis iterare Mella.

Lib. II. Od. 19.

§ *Horace* would have called it, *Cepes fortuitus*.

one Circumstance he enlarged, with a particular Satisfaction.

Ther. See! *Aspasio*; how all is calculated, to administer the highest *Delight* to Mankind.---Those Trees and Hedges, which skirt the Extremities of the Landscape; stealing away from their real Bulk, and lessening by gentle Diminutions; appear like elegant *Pictures* in *Miniature*. Those, which occupy the nearer Situations, are a Set of noble *Images*; swelling upon the Eye, in *full Proportion*, and in a Variety of graceful Attitudes. Both of them *ornamenting* the several Apartments of our common Abode, with a Mixture of Delicacy and Grandeur.

The *Blossoms*, that array the Branches; the *Flowers*, that embroider the Mead; address and entertain our Eyes with every Charm of Beauty *. Whereas, to other Creatures, they are destitute of all those Attractives; which result from a Combination of the loveliest Colours, and most alluring Forms.---Yonder *Streams*, that glide, with smooth Serenity, along the Vallies; glittering to the distant View, like Sheets of polished Crystal; or soothing the attentive Ear, with the Softness of aquatic Murmurs; are no less *exhilarating* to the Fancy, than to the Soul, through which they pass.---The huge enormous *Mountain*; the steep
C 4 and

* Therefore, when the Prophet describes the Christian Church, adorned with all the *Beauties of Holiness*, He borrows his Imagery from these amiable Objects. *Israel shall bud and blossom*, Isai. xxvii. 6.---Nay, the very *Wilderness*, even the Gentile Nations, being converted unto CHRIST, *shall blossom as a Rose*, Isai. xxxv. 1.---*I will be as the Dew unto Israel; He shall blossom as the Lily, and cast forth his roots as Lebanon*, Hof. xiv. 6. What an elegant Picture! And what a comfortable Promise! Here is the Queen of Flowers, and the Prince of Trees. Nothing fairer than the full-blown Lily: nothing firmer than the deep-rooted Cedars. Yet these are a Representation (and but a faint Representation) of the *Comeliness*, which the all-gracious REDEEMER puts upon his People; and of the *Stability*, which they derive from his inviolable Faithfulness.

N. B. The fourteenth of *Hosea*, is one of those Chapters, which for their *peculiar* Importance and Excellency, deserve not only to have a Turn in our Reading, but a Place in our Memory.

and dizzy *Precipice*; the pendent Horrors of the craggy *Promontory*: wild and tremendous as they are, furnish out an agreeable Entertainment to the human Mind; and *please*, even while they *terrify*. Whereas the Beasts take no other Notice of those majestic Deformities, than only to avoid the Dangers, they threaten.

asp. How wonderfully do such Considerations *exalt* our Idea of the CREATOR's Goodness; his very *distinguishing* Goodness to Mankind! And should they not proportionably *endear* that eternal Benefactor to our Affections? --- His ever-bountiful Hand has scattered Blessings, and with profuse Liberality, among all the Ranks of animated Existence. But to *Us* he exercises a Beneficence of a very superior Kind. *We* are treated as his peculiar Favourites. *We* are admitted to Scenes of Delight, which None but Ourselves are capable of relishing.

Ther. Another Remark, though very obvious, is equally important. The Destination of all these external Things, is no less *advantageous*, than their Formation is *beautiful*.---The Bloom, which engages the Eye with its delicate Hues, is cherishing the *Embryo Fruit*; and forming, within its silken Folds, the Rudiments of a *future Dessert*.---Those Streams, which shine from afar, like fluid Silver, are much more valuable in their Productions, and beneficial in their Services, than they are amiable in their Appearance. They distribute, as they roll along their winding Banks, *Cleanliness* to our Houses, and *Fruitfulness* to our Lands. They nourish, and at their own Expence, a never failing Supply of the *finest Fish*. They visit our Cities, and attend our Wharfs, as so many *public Vehicles*, ready to set out at all Hours.

Those Sheep, which give their Udders to be drained by the busy frisking Lambs, are fattening their Flesh for our *Support*; and while they fill their own Fleeces, are providing for our comfortable *Clothing*.---Yonder Kine, some of which are browsing upon the tender Herb; others, satiated with Pasturage, ruminate under the shady Covert; though conscious

of

of no such Design, are concocting for our Use, one of the *softest, purest, healthiest* Liquors in the World. —The Bees, that fly humming about our Seat, and pursue their Work on the fragrant Blossoms, are collecting Balm and Sweetness, to compose the richest of Syrups. Which, though the Produce of *their Toil*, is intended for *our Good*.

Nature, and her whole Family, are our *obsequious* Servants, our *ever-active* Labourers. They bring the Fruits of their united Industry, and pour them into our Lap, or deposite them in our Store-Rooms.

Asp. Who can ever sufficiently admire this immense Benignity? —The SUPREME Disposer of Events, has commanded Delight and Profit to walk Hand in Hand, through his ample Creation: making all Things so *perfectly pleasing*, as if Beauty was their only End; yet all Things so *eminently serviceable* *, as if Usefulness had been their sole Design. —And, as a most winning Invitation to our Gratitude, He has rendered Man the Center, in which all the *Emanations* of his Beneficence, diffused through this Terrestrial System, finally terminate.

But my dear *Theron*, is not this apparent, in a much more wonderful Manner, throughout the whole Oeconomy of *Redemption*? — It were a small Thing for this inferior Class of *unintelligent* Creatures, to be continually employing themselves for our Benefit. Even the *Son of the most High GOD*, through all his incarnate State, acted the very same Part. —He took Flesh, and bore the Infirmities of human Nature, not for Himself, but *for Us Men, and our Salvation*. He suffered Want, and endured Misery in all its Forms; that *We* might possess the Fulness of Joy, and abound in Pleasures for evermore. —When he poured out his Soul in Agonies, under the Curse of an *avenging* Law; what other End had He in View, but to make *Us* Partakers of eternal Blessedness? When He fulfilled, perfectly fulfilled the whole *commanding* Law;

C 5

was

* *Omnes Mundi Partes ita constitutæ sunt, ut neque ad Usus meliores esse paterint, neque ad Speciem pulchriores.*

Cic. de Nat. Deor. Lib. II.

was it not on purpose, that his Merits might be imputed to Us? That *We*, by *his* Obedience, might be made righteous? Yes;

————— *For Us He liv'd,
Toil'd for our Ease, and for our Safety bled.*

Nothing in the whole Course—————

Ther. Pardon me for interrupting You, *Aspasio*. I have no Objection to the general Drift of your Discourse. But that particular Notion of *imputed Righteousness*, has always appeared to me in a very ridiculous Light. And I must say, that such a *Puritanical Nosttrum* makes a very unbecoming Figure, amongst your other manly and correct Sentiments of Religion.

Asp. You know, *Theron*, I have long ago disavowed that ignoble Prejudice, which rejects Doctrines, or despises Persons, because they happen to be branded with contemptible Names. 'Tis true, the Writers styled *Puritans*, are remarkable for their Attachment to this *Peculiarity* of the Gospel. It runs through all their Theological Works; and very eminently distinguishes them, from the Generality of our modern Treatises.—But must it *therefore* be wrong, because maintained by that particular Set of People? Or, are they the *only* Advocates for this important Truth?

Ther. Aye: it is as I suspected. I have lately conjectured, from several Hints in my *Aspasio's* Discourse, that he has been warping to the low ungentlemanlike Peculiarities of those whimsical Fanatics.

Asp. I cannot conceive, why you should call them *whimsical*.—To settle Faith on its *proper Basis*, the meritorious Righteousness of the REDEEMER; and to deduce Obedience from its *true Origin*, the Love of GOD shed abroad in the Heart—To *search* the Conscience, and *convince* the Judgment—To *awaken* the lethargic, and *comfort* the afflicted Soul—And all from a thorough Knowledge, joined to a masterly Application, of the divine Word—These, sure, are not *whimsical* Talents, but *real* Excellencies. Yet these, if we may credit History, entered into the Preaching; these, if we will examine impartially, are to be found in the Writings of the Puritans.—And a *Pearl*, you will
please

please to remember, is a Pearl still, though it should hang in the *Ethiopian's* Ear.

Ther. *Ethiopian* indeed! You have truly characterized, that *demure* and *gloomy* Generation. I hope, You don't intend to introduce their Solemnity and Reserve, into your easy and engaging Conversation.— Though, for aught I can judge, this would be no more ungraceful, than to patch such *antiquated* Notions on your own *refused* Scheme of Christianity.

Asp. My dear Friend, You are too ludicrous; and I begin to catch the Infection. We had better return to our first Topic. Let us contemplate the Wonders of Creation; and as we *admire* the Works, learn to *adore* the Maker.

Ther. None of your Evasions, good *Aspasio*. You must not think to put me off at this Rate. I have wanted an Opportunity to rally you upon this Head; and to argue or laugh you, out of these *religious Oddities*.

Asp. If you will not agree to Terms of Peace; I hope, you will allow some Cessation of Arms. At least, till I can muster my Forces, and prepare for the Vindication of my Principles.

Ther. No: upon the Spot, and out of Hand, you are required to answer for yourself, and these same queer Opinions.—I shall serve you, as the *Roman* Consul served the *procrastinating* Monarch. When he demurred about his Reply to the Demands of the Senate, and said, *He would consider of the Matter*: the resolute Ambassador drew a Circle round Him with his Cane, and insisted upon a positive Answer, before He stepped over those Limits.

Asp. This, however, You will give me Leave to observe, That the Affair is of a *very serious* Nature. Upon Condition, that you will dismiss your Flourishes of Wit, and Strokes of Satyr; I will acquaint you with the Reasons, which have made me a thorough Convert to this Doctrine.—Once, I held it in the utmost Contempt; and pitied the Simplicity of (as I then styled them) its *deluded* Admirers. But, I am now become *such* a Fool, that I may be truly wise, and *substantially* happy. I have seen my *ruined* State; and I bless G O D for this sovereign

reign *Restorative*. It is the Source of my strongest Consolations, and the very Foundation of my eternal Hopes.

Ther. Excuse me, *Aspasio*; if the Vivacity of my Temper, and the seemingly uncouth Tenet, kindled me into a more humorous Gaiety, than became the Occasion. You speak of the Point, with so much Seriousness, and in such weighty Terms, as check my Levity, and command my Respect. Be pleased to execute what you have promised; and the most *engaged* Attention of my Mind, shall atone for the *petulant* Sallies of my Tongue.

Asp. To conceive a Dislike of any Doctrine, only because Persons of a particular Denomination, have been very officious to promote its Reception; this is hardly consistent with an *impartial* Inquiry after Truth.

Ther. I grant it, *Aspasio*. And I should be ashamed of my Opposition, if it was founded on so slight a Bottom. But, abstracted from all *Party-Considerations*, I can see nothing in this supposed Article of our Faith, that may recommend it to the unprejudiced Inquirer.—What can be more *awkward* than the Term, or more *irrational* than the Sentiments?

Asp. The Word *imputed*, when used in this Connection, may possibly convey a disagreeable Sound to the Ears of some People. Because, they look upon it, as the peculiar Phraseology of a few *superstitious Sectarists*; and reject it, merely on the Foot of that unreasonable Surmise.—But, how can you be disgusted at the Expression, *Theron*; who have so often read it, in the most approved and judicious Writers? St. *Paul*, who might affirm with Relation to his Epistles, much more truly than the Painter concerning his Pourtraits, *I write for Eternity**; scruples not to use this awkward Language, several Times in the same Chapter †.

Milton,

* Alluding to the Painter, who, apologizing for the *slow* Proceedure and scrupulously *nice* Touches of his Pencil, said; *Æternitati pingo, I paint for Eternity*. And those Strokes had need be correct, which are intended to survive, so long as Time itself shall last.

† R. m. iv. Where some Branch of the Word λογισμας, *to be imputed*, occurs no less than ten or eleven Times.

Milton, the Correctness of whose Taste, and the Propriety of whose Style, no Person of Genius will ever question, delights to copy, in various Parts of his incomparable Poem, the Apostle's Diction.—Authorized by such Precedents, it is superior to Cavil, and warranted beyond all Exception.

As to the *Sentiment*, I take it to be the *very fundamental* Article of the Gospel: and I believe, whoever is acquainted with ecclesiastical History, will allow, that it bore the *principal Sway*, in extricating us from Popish Darkness, and introducing the *Reformation*.—What says our LORD, with regard to the Love of GOD, and the Love of our Neighbour? *On these two Commandments hang a'l the Law and the Prophets*. Much the same would I venture to say, concerning the Imputation of our Sins to CHRIST, and the Imputation of CHRIST's Righteousness to us: *On these two Doctrines hang all the Privileges and the whole Glory of the Gospel*.

Ther. In our last Conversation, I must own, I saw a strong Resemblance between the *Works* and the *Word* of GOD. But I never observed any Thing in Nature, that bore the least *Analogy* to imputed Sin, or imputed Righteousness.—To me your two Doctrines seem very unaccountable and irrational.

Asp. That our Sins should be charged upon the only begotten Son of GOD, and that his Righteousness should be made over to sinful Worms, is strange, exceeding strange. The Psalmist calls it, *marvellous Loving-Kindness* *. The Apostle styles it, *Love that passeth Knowledge* †. And it has sometimes, I must freely confess, been almost ready to stagger my Belief.—However, I have found myself relieved in this Perplexity, not only by the *Testimonies* of Scripture, but even from the *Contemplation* of Nature. All Nature is full of strange and mysterious Effects; consequently, is a Voucher for the mysterious Truths of Christianity.

How

* Psal. xvii. 7.

† Eph. iii. 19.

How surprising are the Experiments of *Electricity*, and the occult Qualities of the *Loadstone*! How surprising those countless Legions of *Effluvia*, which transpire from a small odoriferous Body! and those from infinite Myriads of *luminous Particles*, which issue from a smaller flaming Substance*! There's not a Blade of Grass, but surpasses the Comprehension of all Mankind; and not a single Atom, but is big with Wonders.—Insomuch, that the *intelligent* Observer can nowhere fix his Thoughts, without being astonished, transported, and even lost in Admiration.

Since the Procedure of Providence in this visible System, is a continued Series of *stupendous* and *unsearchable* Operations; need We be alarmed, can We reasonably be offended, if the Scheme of Redemption is equally stupendous, is far more amazing? Yet, though *amazing*, I hope, it will not appear, what you was pleased to insinuate, *irrational*.

Suppose, we *state* the Signification of the *Terms*; and adjust the Boundaries of our Subject, before we enter upon a Survey of its Contents?

Ther. Such a Caution would have prevented, at least have shortened, many a vehement and tedious Controversy.—You see, on yonder Heath, the Preparations for an approaching Race. There stand the *Posts*, which are to mark out the Limits of the Course. Without this previous *restrictive* Care, how irregular would be the Excursions of the contending Steeds! How *difficult*, rather how *impossible*, to declare the Conqueror, and award the Prize!—A clear Definition of Terms, seems equally necessary for candid Disputants. Without it, they may *wrangle* for Ages, and never come to a *Determination*.

Asp.

* Dr. *Neuwentyt* has computed, That, from a lighted Candle, about the Size of six to the Pound, there issues, in the Second of a Minute, an Effusion of Particles, vastly more than ten hundred thousand million Times the Number of Sands which the whole Globe of the Earth contains.—To call this a *very great* Multitude, would be saying little. It nonplusses our *Thoughts*, and exceeds the utmost Stretch of *Imagination*!

Asp. Justification is an Act of GOD Almighty's Grace ; whereby he acquits his People from Guilt, and accounts them righteous* ; for the Sake of CHRIST's Righteousness, which was wrought out for them, and is imputed to them.

Ther. Two of your Terms want some further Explanation. What do you understand by CHRIST's Righteousness ? And what is the Meaning of imputed ?

Asp. By CHRIST's Righteousness I understand, all the various Instances of his *active* and *passive* Obedience ; springing from the perfect Holiness of his Heart ; continued through the whole Course of his Life ; and extending to the very last Pang of his Death.—By the Word *imputed* I would signify, That this Righteousness, though performed by our LORD, is *placed to our Account* ; is reckoned or adjudged by GOD as *our own*. Inſomuch, that we may *plead* it, and *rely* on it, for the Pardon of our Sins ; for Adoption into his Family ; and for the Enjoyment of Life eternal.—Shall I illustrate my Meaning by a well attested Fact ?

Ther. Nothing gives us ſo eaſy a Conception of any difficult Point, as this Method of explaining, by *parallel* Facts, or proper Similitudes.

Asp. I don't ſay the Caſe is parallel. I only produce it, to aid our Conceptions.—*Onesimus*, you know, was *Philemon's* Slave †. He had perfidiouſly deſerted his Maſter's Service, and ſtill more perfidiouſly ſtole his Goods. The Fugitive, in his guilty Rambles, providentially meets with *St. Paul*. He is charmed and captivated with that gracious Goſpel, which proclaims Mercy even for the vileſt of Sinners. He becomes a thorough Convert to the Religion of *JESUS*, and is received into the ſpiritual Patronage of the Apoſtle. Who, learning his criminal Conduct, and obnoxious State, undertakes to bring about a Reconciliation, with

* Should any Reader object to the Definition ; apprehending, that Juſtification implies no more, than *the Pardon of Sins* ; I would deſire him to ſuſpend his Judgment, till he has peruſed Dialogue X, where this Point is more circumſtantially conſidered.

† See the Epiſtle to *Philemon*.

with his offended Master: dispatches him for this Purpose, with a Letter to *Philemon*: and amongst other Persuatives, writes thus in the poor Criminal's Behalf; *If he have wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine Account: I Paul have written it with my own Hand; I will repay it.*

That, which the zealous Preacher of Christianity offered, the adored Author of Christianity executed.—We had revolted from the LORD of all Lords, and broke his holy Commandments. The Son of GOD, infinitely compassionate, vouchsafes to become our Mediator. That nothing might be wanting, to render his Mediation successful, He places Himself in our stead. The Punishment, which *We* deserved, *He* endures. The Obedience, which *We* owed, *He* fulfils,—Both which, being imputed to Us, and accepted for Us, are the Foundation of our Pardon, are the procuring Cause of our Justification.

Ther. Is this the exact Signification of the original Word, which we translate *imputed*?

Asp. In the Book of *Numbers*, we meet with this Phrase; and in such a Connection, as clears up its Meaning.—JEHOVAH enacts a Decree concerning the *Levites*; who had no Vintages to gather, nor any Harvests to reap. He directs them, to present the tenth Part of their Tythes, in the Form of a Heave-Offering: adding, *And this your Heave-Offering shall be reckoned * unto you, as though it were the Corn of the Threshing-Floor, and as the Fullness of the Wine-Press: as satisfactory to me, and as beneficial to You,*
as

* *Numb.* xviii. 17. *וַיִּשָּׂא* exactly answers to *St. Paul's* *λογισθη*, *Rom.* iv. 9.—The same Phrase is used, and the same Doctrine taught, *Levit.* xvii. 3, 4. *What Man soever there be of the House of Israel that killeth an Ox, or Lamb, or Goat in the Camp, or that killeth it out of the Camp; and bringeth it not unto the Door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation, to offer unto the LORD an Offering before the Tabernacle of the LORD, Blood shall be imputed to that Man; He hath shed Blood; and that Man shall be cut off from among his People.*—Here was no Murder committed by the Offender, yet the Crime of Murder is charged, or as the Scripture speaks, *Blood is imputed to Him.* Lest any should mistake the Meaning of this Expression, or not understand it in its due Latitude,

as if it was the Tenth of your own Labours, and the Tythe of your own Increase—So, the expiatory Sufferings, which *CHRIST* endured; the complete Obedience, which He performed; are reckoned to true Believers. And are altogether as effectual for obtaining their Salvation, as if they were their own personal Qualifications.

Ther. The Imputation mentioned in your Passage, is the Imputation of something done by the *Levites themselves*, not of something done by *Another*. This, I apprehend, is the true Import of the Word, when it occurs affirmatively in Scripture.

Asp. This is *always* the Import—should have been said, in order to make the Objection forcible. But you could not so soon forget the Instance, just now alledged. *St. Paul*, speaking of the Crimes which *Onesimus* had committed; and of the Injuries which *Philemon* had sustained; says, “Charge them all on me*. I will be responsible for the one, and for the other; as much, as if the whole Guilt had been of my own contracting.”—Here is supposed, not the Imputation of something done by the Apostle *himself*, but of *another’s* criminal Behaviour.

Under the Law, *Aaron* is commanded to put the Iniquities of *Israel* upon the Scape-Goat †.—The same Sentiment is re-inculcated, when the Goat is said to bear the Iniquities of the People ‡. This was plainly an Imputation; yet could not possibly be the Imputation of any Thing done by the devoted Animal.—The Effects which took Place upon the Execution of the Ordinance, indicate a Translation of Guilt. For, the Congregation was cleansed, but the Goat polluted. The Congregation *so cleansed*, that their Iniquities were conveyed away, and to be found

no.

tude, the divine Law-giver is his own Interpreter; *He bath in the Eye of my Justice shed Blood: He shall pass for a Murderer, and be punished as a Murderer; He shall be cut off from among his People.*—Thus also saith the eternal Judge, concerning the Believers in *CHRIST*; “The Righteousness of my Son is imputed to them: they are in the Eye of my Justice righteous: they shall be dealt with, as righteous Persons; and made Partakers of the Kingdom of Heaven.”

* *Εγος ελλογις.* † *Levit. xvi. 21.* ‡ *Levit. xvi. 22.*

no more. The Goat *so polluted*, that it communicated Defilement to the Person, who conducted it into the Land not inhabited.—All this was GOD's own Appointment; and designed, like the whole System of *Mosaic* Ceremonies, to instruct his Church in the Knowledge of the great MEDIATOR: in whose Person and Office that was done *really*, which elsewhere could be done no otherwise than *typically*.

Ther. If this is your Meaning, *Aspasio*, I am apt to think, it will be a difficult Matter to make me a Profelyte. I must be content to pass for one of the stiff-necked Generation. Since I can see neither *Wisdom* nor *Equity*, in ascribing to a Person, what he *has* not; or imputing to him, what he *does* not.

Asp. It was not *Aspasio*, but his Friend, who set out with a View of making *Profelytes*. If I can maintain my Ground, and vindicate my own Belief, it will be no inconsiderable Acquisition.—However, I shall not despair of seeing the Partner of my Heart become a Sharer of my Faith. When we are convinced of our *numberless Sins*; when we feel the *Depravity* of our *Nature*, and begin to discern the *inconceivable Sanctity* of our Judge; THEN, perhaps, this exploded Article may be found worthy of Acceptance—its Constitution admired, as the Wisdom of GOD—and its Privilege coveted, as the Consolation of our Souls.

Ther. I shall wave, at present, an Examination of each Particular; and only make some *remote* Observations. Which seem, nevertheless, pretty nearly to affect your Scheme.—Many Persons, have scarce so much as *heard* of your Terms; have no manner of *Acquaintance* with your Doctrine. Will you strike off all these from the List of Christians? Will you condemn all these as desperate Infidels?

Asp. Not heard of them!—In a Protestant Nation!—Where the Gospel is publicly preached, and the Bible in every one's Hands!—This, if true, is *much* to be *lamented*.—In Answer to your Question; It is not my Custom, much less is it my Prerogative, to *condemn* others. Has GOD committed all Judgment unto me; that I should presume to anticipate the

the decisive Sentence, or launch the Thunder-bolts of eternal Vengeance?—Neither do I affirm the Condition of such Persons to be desperate. There may be *those*, who have no *explicit* Knowledge of the Doctrine; who are even *disgusted* at the Expressions; yet live under the Belief of the Truth, and in the Exercise of the Duty.—“ They are never diverted, by “ the Splendor of any Thing that is *great*, or by the “ Conceit of any Thing that is *good* in them, from “ looking upon themselves as *sinful* Dust and Ashes.” Their whole Dependence is upon that *JUST ONE*, who expired on the Cross, and whom the Heavens have received. They seek the *sanctifying* SPIRIT, in consequence of their Saviour’s Death; and give all Diligence, to *add to their Faith Virtue*.

Ther. If People may be safe, and their eternal Interests secure, without any Knowledge of these Particularities; why should you offer to puzzle their Heads, about a few unnecessary *scholastic* Terms?

Asp. *Scriptural* Terms, you should have said, *Theron*.—However, we are not very solicitous, as to the Credit, or the Use, of any particular Set of Phrases. Only let Men be humbled, as *repenting Criminals*, at the REDEEMER’s Feet: Let them rely, as *devoted Pensioners*, on his precious Merits: and they are undoubtedly in the Way to a blissful Immortality.—Yet, will their Way be less clear, and their Steps more embarrassed, by not distinctly understanding the benign Genius of the Gospel. A proper Information in this important Point, would shed *Light* upon their Paths, and *encourage* them in their Journey; would further their Progress in vital Holiness, and increase their Joy in the LORD.

Ther. The Followers of your Opinion, I have observed, are perpetually dwelling upon this one *favourite* Topic; to the Exclusion of that grand and truly essential Part of Christianity, *Sanctification*.

Asp. If you have ever taken Notice of such a Conduct, you are unquestionably right in withholding your Approbation. It is a manifest *Incongruity*, and deserves your *Censure*. But, assure yourself, it proceeds

ceeds from a Misapprehension in the Persons, and has no Connection with the Nature of the Doctrine.

I am far, very far from reducing the *various* Parts of Christianity, (which, when connected, make up so well-proportioned a System) to this *single*, however distinguished Branch. Sanctification is *equally necessary*, both to our present Peace, and to our final Felicity. Indeed, they are as reciprocally necessary, for the Purposes of *intellectual* and *eternal* Happiness; as the *Heart* and the *Lungs* are, to the Subsistence of the animal Oeconomy. The former must transmit, the latter must refine, the vital Fluid; or else, Disease will take Place, and Death will ensue.—My Intention is, that those *fundamental Truths* of the Gospel, like these *Master-Organs* in the Body, may have *each* its proper Office assign'd; each concur to support the better Health, and to promote the spiritual Growth of the Christian.

Ther. Others of your zealous Folks I have known, who are all for the *sanctifying* Influence of the SPIRIT; and reckon this Affiance on the SAVIOUR's Merits, among the beggarly Elements of Religion. They scarce ever mention, what *CHRIST* has done *for us*; but insist wholly upon what he does *in us*.—When the religious People are so divided among themselves ||, how can a Stranger act? Which Opinion shall he choose?

Asp. Which, *Theron*! Let him *discard* neither, but *associate* both.—If the all-gracious REDEEMER has poured out his Blood on the Cross, that my Guilt may be expiated; and presents his Intercession in Heaven, that I may be endued with the SPIRIT:—If he will be the *meritorious Cause* of my Justification, and the *operative Principle* of my Sanctification:—Why should

|| *Theron's* Inquiry concerning these two Particulars, is sometimes made an Objection against *all* Religion.—But have the Gentlemen, who adopt this Objection, never seen the *Naturalists* divided in their Judgment; with relation to the Design and Use of several Appearances in the material, the vegetable, the animal Creation? While one derides as a *Nuisance*, what another admires as a *Beauty*.—Yet no one, I believe, ever took it into his Head, from such a Diversity of Opinions, to *doubt* whether the Frame of Nature is a just, a regular, and a finished System; or to *deny*, That Power, Goodness, and Wisdom, support, pervade, and direct the Whole.

should I scruple to receive him, in either, in both Capacities? Who would lop off the Right Hand, in order to impart the higher Dignity or the greater Importance to the Left? I would be no *Partialist* in Christianity: neither diminish her Dowry, nor mutilate her Privileges.

Ther. You seem, if not to mutilate, yet to *split* the Merits of *CHRIST*, and *parcel out* the Efficacy of his mediatorial Undertaking; ascribing so much to his active, and so much to his passive Righteousness; Pardon to *this*, and Life to *that*.

Asp. Some, I believe, are pleased with this Way of stating the Matter. But it is a Method, that I neither attempt to defend, nor wish to imitate.—To *distinguish* between the active and passive Righteousness, I think, is not amiss. Because, this sets the Fulness of our LORD's Merit in the clearest Light; and gives the completest Honour to GOD's holy Law.—But to *divide* them into detached Portions, independent on each other, seems to be fanciful, rather than judicious. For, had *either* Part of the mediatorial Obedience been *wanting*; I apprehend, neither Pardon, nor Acceptance, nor any spiritual Blessing, could have been vouchsafed to fallen Man.

The two *Parts* are inseparable; making, in their Connection, a necessary and noble *Whole* for the Accomplishment of our Salvation. Just as the Light and the Heat of yonder Sun, blend their Operation; to produce this delightful Day, and this fruitful Weather.—However, therefore, I may happen to express myself, I never consider them as acting in the *exclusive* Sense; but would always have them understood, as a grand and glorious *Aggregate*. Looking upon our SAVIOUR's universal Obedience, which commenced at his Incarnation; was carried on through his Life; and terminated in his Death;—looking upon all this, in its *collective* Form, as the Object of my Faith, and the Foundation of my Hopes||.

Ther.

|| In this Opinion, *Aspasio* has *Milton's* Arch-Angel for his Precedent. *Michaei* speaking of *his* LORD and *our* LORD, says,
The

Ther. I think, you lay too much Stress upon this controverted, and perhaps *merely speculative* Point.

Asp. Merely speculative! Say not thus, my dear Friend.—*How I may be justified before GOD, my Maker, my Governor, and my Judge?* is an Inquiry, of all others, the *most interesting and important*. It is the main Hinge, on which every Instance of practical Religion turns †. True Comfort, willing Obedience, holy Communion with the divine Majesty, *all* depend upon this capital Point.

Far from being a merely speculative Point, it ascribes the most *undivided* Glory to the ever-blessed GOD, and his free Grace.—It administers the most *serene* and *substantial* Satisfaction to frail, but believing Men.—It cherishes, with the most kindly Influence, that *pure and undefiled* Religion, which has its Seat in the Heart; has its Birth from Love; and is a real Antepast, both of the Business and the Bliss of Saints in Light.

Can We, then, lay too much Stress upon a Doctrine, so *greatly momentous*; upon a Privilege, so *extensively beneficial*?

Ther. When all this is proved, then for my Reply,
Aspaso. Nay, then You shall have more than a Reply; I promise You my cordial Assent.

Asp.

The Law of GOD exact he shall fulfil,
Both by Obedience and by Love, though Love
Alone fulfil the Law; thy Punishment
He shall endure, by coming in the Flesh
To a reproachful Life and cursed Death;
Proclaiming Life to all who shall believe
In his Redemption.

B. XII. 402.

According to the Tenour of these very valuable Lines, our LORD's Fulfilling the Law, and Enduring the Punishment, are the *concurring* Causes, or the one *compound Cause* of Life and Redemption to Sinners.

† *Diffundit se*, says the judicious *Witsius*, *Justificationis Doctrina per totum Theologiæ Corpus*; & prout *Fundamenta hic, vel bene, vel male, jacta sunt, eo universum Ædificium vel solidius augustinusque ascendit, vel male statuminatum sædam minitatur Ruinam.*

De Oecon.

Asp. And if all this be incapable of Proof, I assure You, *Theron*, I will not solicit your Assent. Nay more, I will revoke and renounce my own.

Ther. At present, I believe, We must go in, and prepare for our Visitants. Some other Interview will give us an Opportunity to canvass this Question more minutely.

Asp. Though I have never much Inclination, even when there is the most Leisure, for Controversy; yet, if you insist upon it, I shall not absolutely refuse to engage in a Debate with my *Theron*. Because, He will come to the amicable Rencontre, without bringing angry Passions for his Second.—My Reasons will be impartially weighed, not artfully eluded, much less answered with Invektive.—If some inadvertent Expression should drop from my Lips, he will not rigorously prosecute the Slip; nor aggravate an unguarded Sentence into the Crime of Heresy.—Candour will form his Judgment, and Good-nature dictate his Expressions.

Ther. I thank You, my dear *Aspasio*, for your genteel Admonition. What I am, in the Language of Complaisance, means, what I should be.—Well: I will endeavour to take your Hint, and check this Impetuosity of my Spirit. I have often admired, O! that I could imitate, the beautiful Example of St. Paul. When Festus, forgetting the Dignity of the Governor, and the Politeness of the Gentleman, uttered that indecent Reflection; *Paul, thou art beside thyself: much Learning doth make thee mad.* Did the great Preacher of Christianity kindle into Resentment?—The Charge was unjust and abusive. But the Apostle, with the most perfect Command of himself, returned the softest, yet the most spirited Answer imaginable. *I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak the Words of Truth and Sobriety.*—Inexpressibly graceful was this calm and obliging

¶ See *Acts* xxvi. Where we have an *Apology*, the noblest, perhaps, that ever was made; eminent for fine Address, clear Reasoning, and the most important Truth. Which, notwithstanding all its very superior Recommendations, is deemed Mad-ness;

48 DIALOGUE II.

obliging Reply. Though short, infinitely more convincing than a whole torrent of *bitter* or *recriminating* Words. It disarmed the Judge of his rising Displeasure; it conciliated the Favour of his royal Assessor; and brought Honour to the Christian Cause.

This amiable *Self-Regimen*, and Moderation of Temper, I shall be sure to see exemplified in my Friend's Conversation; however I may fail of it myself, or be Proof against all his Arguments.

Asp. Ah! *Theron*, we want no Monitor, to remind us of our *supposed* Excellencies. And if you begin with your Compliments, it is time to put an End to our Discourse.

Only let me just observe, that *divine Truths* cannot be properly discerned, but by the enlightening Influences of the *divine SPIRIT*. We must address ourselves to this Inquiry, not only with *unprejudiced* Minds, but likewise with *praying Hearts*. We must bring to this Dispute, not barely the Quiver of Logic, but that *Unction from the HOLY ONE, which may teach us all Things* ||.—Let us then adopt the Poet's Aspiration;

————— *Thou celestial Light,*
Shine inward, and the Mind through all her Powers
Irradiate; there plant Eyes; all Mist from thence
Purge and disperse! MILTON, B. III. 51.

ness; and that by a Nobleman from *Rome*; the Seat of Science, and Fountain-head of polite Literature — A Proof this, no less demonstrative than deplorable, of the Apostle's Assertion; *The natural Man*, however ingenious or accomplished, *receiveth not the Things of the Spirit of GOD; for they are Foolishness unto him*, 1 Cor. ii. 14.

|| 1 John ii. 20, 27.



D I A L O G U E III.

THERON.

WE are now, *Aspasio*, about two Miles distant from my House. The Horse-road lies through a narrow dusty Lane. The Foot-path leads along a spacious pleasant *Meadow*. Suppose, we deliver our Horses to the Servant, and walk the Remainder of the Way?

Asp. Nothing can be more suitable to my Inclination. Especially, as the Air is become cool, and the Walk is so inviting.

What a *magnificent* and *charming* Scene! *Hills* on either Side, gently rising, and widely spreading. Their *Summits* crowned with scattered Villages, and clustering Trees. Their *Slopes*, divided into a beautiful Chequer-work; consisting partly of Tillage, with its waving Crops; partly of Pasturage, with its grazing Herds.—*Before us*, the Trefoil, the Clover, and a Variety of grassy Plants, differently bladed, and differently branched, weave themselves into a *Carpet* of living Green. Can any of the Manufactures formed in the Looms, or extended in the Palaces of *Persia*, vie with the Covering of this ample Area? Vie with it, in *Grandeur* of Size, or *Delicacy* of Decoration?

What a Profusion of the gayest Flowers, fringing the Banks, and embroidering the Plain!

Nature here
Wantons as in her prime, and plays at Will
Her Virgin-fancies, pouring forth more Sweet,
Wild above Rule or Art, enormous Bliss! MILT.

VOL. I.

D

Nothing

Nothing can be brighter than the Lustre of those silver *Daisies*; nothing deeper than the Tinge of those golden *Crowfoots*. Yet, both seem to acquire additional Beauty, by succeeding to the Deformity of Winter, and flourishing amidst so much surrounding Verdure.

Ther. Nature is truly in *her prime*.—The vegetable Tribes are putting on their richest Attire. Those *Chestnuts*, on our Right Hand begin to rear their flowering Pyramids; those *Willows*, on our Left, are tipped with Tassels of Grey; and yonder *Poplars*, that overlook the River, and seem to command the Meadows, are pointed with Rolls of Silver.

The *Hawthorn*, in every Hedge, is partly turgid with silken Gems, partly diffused into a milk-white Bloom. Not a stragling *Furze*, nor a solitary *Thicket*, but wears a rural Nosegay. All is a delightful Display of present Fertility, and a joyous Pledge of future Plenty.—Now we experience what the royal Poet, in very agreeable Imagery, describes: *The Winter is past; the Rain is over and gone. The Flowers appear on the Earth; the Time of the Singing of Birds is come; and the Voice of the Turtle is heard in our Land. The Fig-tree putteth forth her green Figs; and the Vine with the tender Grapes give a good Smell* *.

Asp. Your Quotation and the Scene remind me of a Remark, that should have been admitted into our last Night's Discourse. When we were enumerating the Excellencies of the sacred Writings, methinks, we might have added;—Are you fond of *Pastoral*, in all its flowery Graces and blooming Honours? Never have we seen such exquisite Touches of rural Painting, or such sweet Images of endeared Affection, as in the *Song of Songs* which is *Solomon's*. All the brilliant and amiable Appearances in Nature are employed, to delineate the Tenderness of *his* Heart, who is *Love* itself—to pourtray the Beauty of *his* Person, who is *the chiefest among ten thousand*—and describe the Happiness of those Souls, whose Fellowship is *with the Father, and with his Son JESUS CHRIST* †.

See!

* Cant. ii, 11, 12, 13.

† 1 John i. 3.

DIALOGUE III. 51

See! *Theron*, what the chearing Warmth and the genial Showers of Spring have done! *Such a Change* so pleasing and so ennobling, the Gospel of *CHRIST* introduces into the Soul.—Not a Day, scarce an Hour passes, but this Season of universal Fecundity produces *something new*. And is there any State, or any Circumstance of Life, on which the Faith of *CHRIST* does not exert a similar Efficacy, and *bring forth Fruit* unto GOD.

This is supposed to be the *spiritual* Meaning of that fine descriptive Picture, which you have borrowed from the *Canticles*. It displays the *benign Agency* of Grace and its Doctrines; especially of our LORD's Satisfaction for Sin, and of his Righteousness imputed to Sinners. These operate, with much the same favourable and happy Energy, both on our Morals and our Comforts; as the *sweet Influences* of the vernal Sun operate on the sprouting Herbs, and opening Flowers.

Ther. If *such* were the Effects of your Doctrine, it would stand the fairer Chance for general Acceptation.—But there are several weighty Scruples to be removed, before Persons of a *liberal* and *enlarged* Way of Thinking, can acquiesce in your Opinion. Who, for Instance, can persuade himself, that what you call *the Satisfaction of CHRIST*, is consistent with the Dictates of Reason, or with the Perfections of the DEITY?

Asp. Let Gentlemen be candid in their Inquiries, and *truly liberal* in their way of Thinking; then, I flatter myself, these Scruples may be removed, without much Difficulty.

GOD, the almighty Creator, and supreme Governor of the World, having made Man, gave him a Law; with a *Penalty* annexed, in Case of Disobedience.—This sacred Law our Fore-father *Adam* presumptuously broke; and *we*, his Posterity, were *involved* in his Guilt. Or, should that Point be controverted, we have undeniably made, by many personal Transgressions, *his Apostacy our own*.—Inasmuch, that all have sinned; have forfeited their Hap-

piners, and rendered themselves obnoxious to Punishment.

Man being thus ruined, none could recover him, except his injured Maker. But shall he be recovered, shall he be restored, without suffering the Punishment, *due* to his Crime, and *threatened* by his Creator?—What then will become of the *Justice* of the divine Lawgiver? And how shall the *Honour* of his holy Law be maintained? At this rate, who would reverence its Authority, or fear to violate its Precepts?—Sinners might be emboldened to multiply their Transgressions; and tempted to think, that the GOD of immaculate Holiness, the GOD of unchangeable Veracity, is *altogether such an one as themselves* *.

Does it not appear needful, that *some* Expedient be devised, in order to prevent these dishonourable and horrid Consequences?

Ther. Proceed to inform us, what the Expedient is.

Ass. To ascertain the *Dignity* of the supreme Administration, yet *rescue* Mankind from utter *Destruction*, this admirable Purpose was formed, and in the Fulness of Time executed. The *second Person* of the ever blessed TRINITY unites the human Nature to the divine; *submits* himself to the *Obligations* of his People; and becomes *responsible* for all their *Guilt*. In this Capacity, he performs a perfect Obedience, and undergoes the Sentence of Death: makes a full Expiation of their Sins, and re-establishes their Title to Life.

—By which Means, the Law is satisfied; Justice is magnified; and the richest Grace exercised. Man enjoys a *great Salvation*, not to the Discredit of *any*, but to the unspeakable Glory of *all*, the divine Attributes.

This is what we mean by *CHRIST's* Satisfaction. And this, I should imagine, wants no Recommendation to our *unprejudiced Reason*; as, I am sure,
it

* This was actually the Case, as we are informed by the Searcher of Hearts, when, on a particular Occasion, Punishment was only *retarded*. How much more would such impious Opinions have prevailed, if, on this grand Act of Disobedience, Punishment had been intirely *forborne*? Psal, l, 21.

it is most delightfully accommodated to our *distressed Condition*.—It is also confirmed by many *express Passages* of Scripture, and illustrated by a Variety of very *significant Images*.

Ther. Pray, let me be favoured with some of your scriptural Images.—After which, We may inquire, whether your Doctrine will stand the Test of Reason.

Asp. What is your Notion of a *Ransom*? When *Priam* redeemed the dead Body of *Hector* from the victorious *Achilles*, how was it done?

Ther. By paying a *Price**.—Thus *Fabius* recovered the Captives that were taken by *Hannibal*. He transmitted the Sum required, and they were discharged from their Confinement.

Asp. Such is the Redemption, procured for Sinners by our LORD *JESUS CHRIST*. Of *such* a Nature, (though incomparably more grand and august in all its Circumstances) and expressed by the very *same* Word †. *The Son of Man came, not to be ministered unto, but to minister; and to give his Life a Ransom for Many*.

CHRIST also *paid* a Price—a *real Price*—a most *satisfactory Price*. In Consideration of which, our Freedom from every penal Evil is granted. *Ye*

* ————— *φέρων τ' ἀπερείσι' ἀποίνα*, an infinitely rich Price. Hyperbolical this, as applied by *Homer*: *strictly true*, when referred to *CHRIST*.

† *Λυτρον ἀπολυτρον*, are used in this precise Signification, by the most approved Authors of *Greece*.—*Ἀπέπεμψε τὰ λυτρά τῳ Ἀντίῳ, καὶ τῆς αἰχμαλωτῆς ἀπελάβε*, says *Plutarch*. *Ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἦλθε δοῦναι τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ λυτρον ἑαυτοῦ πολλῶν*, says our blessed Saviour, *Matt. xx. 28*.—*Ἀπελυτρώσει ταλαίῳιν ἐννα*, is the Language of *Demosthenes*. *Εἰ ὡς ἐχομεν τὴν ἀπολυτρώσιν διὰ τοῦ αἵματος αὐτοῦ*, are the Words of *St. Paul*, *Eph. i. 7*.—To *establish* this important Point, and to *familiarize* the comfortable Idea to our Minds, the sacred Writers abound in this Phraseology. See *Luke i. 68. ii. 38. xxiv. 21.—Rom. iii. 34.—Tit. ii. 24.—Heb. ix. 12.*

are redeemed †, says the Apostle, *not with corruptible Things, Silver and Gold, but with the precious Blood of CHRIST.*—Let me add one Text more; which, in the same Style of commutative Justice, asserts the same Truth. *CHRIST hath redeemed Us †, hath bought Us off, from the Curse of the Law.*—Yes, my Friend,

*The Ransom was paid down. The Fund of Heav'n,
Heav'n's inexhaustible exhausted Fund,
Amazing, and amaz'd, pour'd forth the Price,
All Price beyond. Though curious to compute
Arch-Angels fail'd to cast the mighty Sum*.*

Ther. Hold a little, good *Aspasio*. Consider the Consequence of what You maintain. If there was a Ransom in the Case, to *Whom* was it paid?—The *Devil* had led Sinners captive. They are said to be the Slaves of Satan. And shall the blessed *JESUS* pay his Life to that accursed Fiend? Shocking to imagine!—Yet, shocking as it is, it must follow from your own, and your Poet's Assertion.

Asp. You misapprehend the Case, *Theron*. The Ransom was paid to GOD. *Thou hast redeemed Us to GOD* ‖, is the Confession of the Saints in Light.—Satisfaction was made to the divine *Law*, and to the divine *Justice*. The one of which was offended; the other violated; and both concurred to denounce the Transgressor's Doom.—Of which Doom *Satan* was the destined Executioner, whose Malignity, and implacable Rage, GOD is pleased to make the Instrument of
in-

† 1 Pet. i. 18. We have an *equivalent* Expression, used in the same Signification, by one of the correctest Writers in the World;

Et Fratrem Pollux alterna Morte redemit.

VIRG.

† Gal. iii. 13. *Εξηγοασιν*—We are said to be *bought*, 1 Cor. vi. 20. Not in a metaphorical Sense, but really and properly. For, here the Price is *mentioned*; and by St. Peter the Price is *specified*, 1 Pet. i. 18, 19.

* Night-Thoughts, No. IV.

‖ Rev. v. 6.

inflicting his Vengeance. As He formerly used the idolatrous Kings of *Affyria* and *Babylon*, to chastise the disobedient *Israelites*.

When We were without Strength †, utterly ruined, yet absolutely helpless—when None, in Heaven or Earth, could afford Us any Succour—then our LORD JESUS CHRIST most graciously and most seasonably interposed. He said, as it is very emphatically represented by Elihu; Deliver them from going down into the Pit; I have found a Ransom. He did, what is very beautifully described by our English Classic;*

————— So Man, as is most just,
Shall satisfy for Man, be judg'd, and die;
And dying rise, and rising with Him raise
His Brethren, ransom'd with his own dear Life.

Milton, B. iii. 294.

Ther. But pray, do not You allow, that *CHRIST* is truly and properly *GOD*?

Asp. We not only allow it, but We insist upon it, and make our Boast of it. This is the very Foundation of his Merit, and the Support of our Hope.

Ther. This may aggrandize the Merit of *CHRIST*, but it will increase the Difficulty of your Task. For, according to this Opinion, *CHRIST* must make Satisfaction to Himself. And is not this a Practice quite unprecedented? A Notion perfectly absurd?

Asp. It is quite unprecedented, You say.—On this Point, I shall not vehemently contend. Only let me mention one Instance. *Zaleucus*, You know, the Prince of the *Locrians*, made a Decree, That whoever was convicted of Adultery, should be punished with the Loss of both his Eyes. Soon after this Establishment, the Legislator's own Son was apprehended in the very Fact, and brought to a public Tryal.—How could the Father acquit Himself, in so tender and delicate a Conjunction?—Should he execute the Law, in all its Rigour? This would be worse than

† Rom. v. 9.

* Job xxxiv. 24.

Death to the unhappy Youth.—Should he *pardon* so notorious a Delinquent? This would defeat the Design of his salutary Institution.—To avoid both these Inconveniencies, He ordered one of his own Eyes to be pulled out, and one of his Sons. By which Means, the *Rights of Justice* were preserved inviolate; yet the *Tenderness* of a *Parent* was remarkably indulged. And may We not venture to say, That, in this Case, *Zaleucus* both received and made the Satisfaction?—*received* it, as a Magistrate; even while he *made* it, as a Father.

Ther. I cannot see, how this Suffering of the Father was, in any Degree *satisfactory* to the Law: since the Father and the Son could not be considered, as *one* and the *same* Person. It may pass for an extraordinary Instance of parental Indulgence. It may strike the benevolent and compassionate Hearer. But, if tried at the Bar of Equity and Reason, it will hardly be admitted as any *legal Satisfaction*: it will probably be condemned, as a Breach of Nature's first and fundamental Law, *Self-preservation*.

Asp. What You observe, *Iheron*, I must confess, has Weight. It will oblige me to give up my Illustration.—Nevertheless, what you urge against the *Propriety* of the Comparison, tends to establish the Certainty of the Doctrine. For *CHRIST* and his People are actually considered as one and the same Person. They are *one* mystical *Body*: He the Head, they the Members: so intimately united to Him, that they are, *Bone of his Bone, and Flesh of his Flesh*.—By virtue of which Union, their Sins were punished in Him; and *by his Stripes they are healed* *, they obtain Impunity and Life.

Though there may be nothing in the Procedure of Men, which bears any *Resemblance* to this Miracle of heavenly Goodness; it receives a sufficient Confirmation from the Language of Scripture. He, who wrote as an Amanuensis to the unerring SPIRIT, has declared; That *GOD was in CHRIST, reconciling the World*—unto Whom? Unto some third

* *Isai. liii. 5.*

third Party ? No ; but reconciling it, by the Death and Obedience of *CHRIST unto Himself* *. And I can very readily grant, that this divine Exertion of Benignity and Wisdom, should be without a *Precedent*, and without a *Parallel* †.

Difficulties, I own, may attend the Explication of this Article, or be interwoven with its Consequence, — At the same Time I must affirm, That our Apprehensions of heavenly Things are so *obscure*, and our Ideas of the divine Benevolence so *scanty*, that We may very possibly mistake ; and fancy that to be absurd, which is only *great, wonderful and incomprehensible* ‡. — Nor shall I be thought presumptuous in adding ; That it will be impossible, for all the Sagacity in the World, to prove this Doctrine an *Absurdity*, though it should ever remain an *inexplicable Mystery*. — How many Phænomena in the Constitution of external Nature, are confessedly mysterious and inexplicable ! They *challenge*, they *command* our Assent ; yet *baffle* all our Researches, and *defy* our utmost Penetration. If then We find this Truth, fully and incontestably revealed in the Bible, We must renounce the *Philosopher*, before We can *consistently* act the *Sceptic*.

D 5

Ther.

* 2 Cor. v. 19. Col. i. 20.

† *Fancy*, in the Person of *Horace*, said of *Jupiter* and his fabulous Exploits.

Cui nihil viget simile aut secundum.

Much more will *Reason*, in the Character of a *Believer*, say the same of *JEHOVAH* and his marvelous *Grace*.

‡ Its *unparalleled*, nay, its *incomprehensible* Nature, is no Objection to its Truth and Reality. This is rather a Circumstance, which perfectly agrees with the *Testimony* of the inspired Writers ; and affords, in my Opinion, an unanswerable *Argument* for the divine Origin of Christianity.

It agrees with the *Testimony* of the inspired Writers ; who call it, not only *GOD's Wisdom*, by Way of supereminent Distinction, but his *Wisdom in a Mystery*, even his *hidden Wisdom* : which could not possibly have been conceived by any finite Mind, however enlarged or sagacious. — Is an *Argument* for the divine Origin of Christianity. Since it was infinitely too deep for the Contrivance of Men, and absolutely undiscoverable by the Penetration of Angels ; how could it be known, but by Manifestation from above ? Whence could it take its Rise, but from an *especial Revelation* ?

Ther. Let Us see then, Whether it be so fully and incontestably revealed in the Bible,—You have given me, as yet, but *one* of your scriptural Images.

Asp. I have another at your Service.—*CHRIST* is called an *High-Priest*. What do You take to be the Nature of the Priestly Office ?

Ther. The Business of the Priest was, I apprehend, To offer *Sacrifices*, and to *make Intercession* for the People.

Asp. Very true : and *CHRIST* could not with any Propriety, receive this Appellation, if He had been defective in performing *either* of the sacerdotal Functions.—Now, that he offered no such Victim as *slain Beasts*, is universally acknowledged. We might presume therefore, even though We had not the Authority of an Apostle to assure Us, That *He offered Himself, through the eternal SPIRIT to GOD*.

The Cross, shall I say *? Rather his divine Nature was the *Altar*. His Soul and Body, each immaculately pure, were the *Holocaust*. These He resigned ; the one to deadly Wounds ; the other, to inexpressible Anguish ; and both, to be instead of all *whole Burnt-Offerings*.—On this invaluable Oblation, his Intercession at the Right-hand of his FATHER is founded : from this it derives that prevailing Efficacy, which is the Security of his *standing*, and the Recovery of his *fallen* Disciples.

Give me Leave to ask farther ; What is your Idea of a *Sacrifice* ? When *Iphigenia* was slain at the Altar, What was the Import of that memorable Action ?

Ther.

* The Cross is, by some Authors, styled The *Altar*. But, I think, improperly. This Notion seems to have sprung from, or given rise to, the *Popish* Practice of idolizing the *Crucifix*. At least, it countenances such a Kind of *foppish* or *sacrilegious* Devotion, more than a Protestant Writer could wish.—It was the Property of the Altar, to *sanctify the Gift*. This therefore, when referred to our LORD's Sacrifice, is a far more exalted Office, than We dare ascribe to the *Instrument* of his Suffering. This must be the Honour and Prerogative of his *divine Nature*, which did indeed sanctify the great Oblation : gave it a Dignity, a Merit, an Efficacy, unspeakable and everlasting.

Ther. It was intended, if We may credit *Virgil's* Account *, to appease the Indignation of the superior Powers ; and to obtain a propitious Gale for the wind-bound Fleet, and confederate Forces of Greece. But, I hope, You would not make that solemn Butchery of the royal Virgin, a Pattern for the supreme Goodness ; nor the Practice of gross Idolaters, a Model for the Religion of the holy JESUS.

Asp. By no means, *Theron*. Only I would observe—That the Custom of offering Sacrifices obtained, among the most cultivated Nations of the Heathen World— That these Sacrifices were frequently of the vicarious † Kind ; in which the Victim was substituted, instead of the Offerer ; and the One being cut off, the Other was discharged from Punishment.

—Conse-

* *Sanguine placasti Ventos, & Virgine casâ.*

† *Seneca* says, alluding to the Custom of Sacrifices, and the prevailing Opinion concerning them ; *Fuerim tantum nunquam amplius dolituræ Domus Pamentum.*—What we are to understand by *Pamentum*, our Author himself explains, in the preceding Clause ; *Quicquid Matri dolendum fuerit, in me transierit ; quicquid Avia, in me.* To which his judicious Commentator *Lipsius*, from an extensive Knowledge of Antiquity, adds ; *ut duæ sive piacularis Victimæ.* Sen: ad *Helv.*

The same Writer, in the same consolatory Epistle, has another Sentence still more to our Purpose ; *Nobilitatur omnium Carminibus, quæ se pro Conjuge vicariam dedit.*—*Juvenal* speaking of this very Fact, expresses Himself in very remarkable Language. Such as shews Us, with the utmost Clearness and Precision, what the Ancients meant, when they affirmed of a suffering or dying Person, That He gave Himself for Another :

— — — *Spestat subeuntem Fata Mariti
Alcesim, & similis si Permutatio datur.*

Sat. VI.

There is a Passage in *Livy*, which most of all deserves our Notice. As it seems to imply a popular Belief of the Dignity, the more than human Dignity, of the Sacrifice which was necessary to appease the Wrath of Heaven. It relates to *Decius*, devoting Himself for the public Good ; *Conspetus ab utraque Acie*, aliquanto augustior humano Visu, *sicuti Cælo missus, Placulum omnis Deorum Iræ.* Lib. VIII. c. 9.

—Consequently, that the *Classic* Authors would (in case there was any Need of such Auxiliaries) join with the sacred Writers, to declare the *Expediency*, and explain the *Nature* of Sacrifices.—This also You will permit me to add, That, if the Heathens talk sensibly on any Part of religious Worship, it is on the Subject of Sacrifices. Their Sentiments concerning expiatory Oblations, seem to be the *faint* and *distant* Echo of Revelation. And I have usually considered them, not as the Institutions of mere Reason, but as the Remains of some broken Tradition.

However, the truest and most authentick Signification of a Sacrifice, is to be learned from the *Jewish Ritual*, explained by the *Gospel Comment*. Do You remember the *Mosaic* Account of that Ordinance?

Ther. You are much better acquainted, *Aspasio*, with those *sacred Antiquities*; and can give the most satisfactory Information, with regard to this Particular. Only let me remind You, That *Alms* are styled *Offerings*; and *Praises*, both in the prophetical and evangelical Writings, come under the Denomination of *Sacrifices*.

Asp. Though Praises and Alms are styled Sacrifices, they are not of the *propitiatory*, but *eucharistic* Kind. They are never said to *expiate* Transgressions, only are represented as *acceptable* to GOD through *JESUS CHRIST*; that divinely precious Victim, whose Merits both cancel our Guilt, and commend our Services! According to---

Ther. Stay a Moment, *Aspasio*.---Let me recollect myself.---This may be the Meaning of Sacrifices, as ordained by *Moses*, and solemnized among the *Jews*.---“Sacrifices were a symbolical Address to GOD; intended to express before Him the Devotion, Affections, Dispositions and Desires of the Heart by significative and emblematical Actions.”---Or thus; “The Priest made Atonement for Sin, by sacrificing a Beast, *only* as that was a Sign and Testimony of the Sacrificer’s pure and upright Heart.”

Asp. Sacrifices, I acknowledge, were a symbolical Address to GOD.---But would You confine their Efficacy,

ficacy, *only* to the Death of the Animal, and the Purity of the Offerer? No, *Theron*: they always had a Reference to the great Sacrifice---*ordained* in the eternal Counsels of JEHOVAH---*prepared*, when the co-eternal SON was made Flesh---*offered*, when the blessed JESUS surrendered Himself, to be led as a Lamb to the Slaughter.---They were so far from being *independent* on this divine Oblation, that they acted in *perpetual* Subserviency to it, and derived *all* their Virtue from it. They were the Shadow, but the Body was CHRIST.

† They expressed, You say, the Devotion. Affections, Dispositions, and Desires of the Heart. But I rather think they expressed the Guilt and the Faith of the Offerer.---*His Guilt*; for this seems to be intimated, by the very Names of the propitiatory Sacrifices. The Sin and the Sacrifice, the offending Action and the expiatory Rite, being signified by one and the same Word *. It is somewhat more than intimated, by the Occasion of the Offering, and the State of the Offerer. Since it was only on account of Guilt contracted, that piacular Oblations were made; and only from a guilty Person, that they were required.---*His Faith*; or firm Belief, that *ceremonial* Guilt, which shut Him out from the Communion of the visible Church, and subjected Him to the Infliction of temporal Judgments, was removed by *these*; but that *moral* Guilt, which defiles the Soul, and excludes from Heaven, should be purged by *some better Sacrifice than these* †. In the Exercise of this Faith, *Abel* offered up a more acceptable Sacrifice than *Cain*; and without this Faith, exercised in some Degree, it is impossible to please GOD.

If Sacrifices were intended to bespeak *Integrity of Heart*, methinks, the State of *Innocency* had been the properest Period, for their Institution and Oblation.

But

* חטאת denotes a Sin, and Sin-Offering. Levit. iv. 3, 24, עוון signifies the Trespass, and the Trespass-Offering. Levit v. 15, 19.

† They sanctified to the purifying of the Flesh, Heb. ix. 13. But could not make Him that did the Service perfect, as pertaining to the Conscience, Heb. ix. 9.

But we never hear of this awful Ceremony, till Man is fallen, and Sin committed.---If intended to denote *Purity of Heart*, why should they be particularly enjoined on that solemn Day, when Confession was made of *all the Sins**, of the whole Congregation? An oddly concerted Device this! In which the Tongue must contradict, what the Ceremony would recognize.---Or, how could it be proper, after the Violation of some Law, or the *Neglect* of some Ordinance, immediately to go and offer a Sacrifice? What would be the Language of such a Practice? “I have done *wickedly*, “but my Heart is *pure* and *upright*.” Is this consistent with the Spirit of Humility, of Modesty, or of common Ingenuity? Is this the Way of *giving Glory* to GOD, or of *taking Shame* to ourselves?---Whereas, let the Sacrifice be a typical Expiation, and this is the Significancy of the Action. “LORD, I confess my-
“self guilty. Punishment and Death are *my Due*.
“Let them fall, I beseech Thee, on *my Victim* §.
“That thy Justice being glorified, and thy Law satisfi-
“fied, thy Mercy may be honourably displayed in
“my Forgiveness.”

Besides, *Theron*; What *Likeness*, what *Agreement* is there, between the Profession of Integrity, and an Animal mortally wounded; wallowing in its own Blood; and struggling in the Agonies of Death?---Whereas, between these dying Pangs, and the Punishment due to Sin, or the Sorrows sustained by the crucified SAVIOUR, there is an *apparent*, a *striking*, and, in various Respects, an *edifying* Resemblance.

Ther. They declared, perhaps, the Sacrificer's Readiness and Resolution, to *slay the Brute* in Himself, and to *lay down his Life* in Adherence to GOD.

Asp. I don't remember any Assertion of this Kind in the Bible, or any Hint to countenance such an Interpretation. It seems, in *some Cases*, to be *incompatible*

* Levit. xvi. 21.

§ What says, that Prodigy of oriental Learning, *Beckart ? Hoc eodem Ritu Iram Dei Peccator deprecabatur, eamque immitti petebat in illius Victimæ Caput, quam suo Loco ponebat.*

Hierosolic, Vol. I. Lib. II. c. 34.

patible with the very Nature of Things, and *contrary* to the exprefs Declarations of Scripture.--- *Doves*, You know, *Lambs*, and *Sheep* were offered in Sacrifice. But shall We slay the Lamb, the Dove, the Sheep in Ourselves? So far from it, that *CHRIST*'s Disciples are either described by these Creatures, or commanded to imitate their Properties. *Be ye harmless as Doves* *. Peter, *feed my Lambs* †. *My Sheep hear my Voice* ‡.

Supposing however, that this might be a *subordinate* Design, or a valuable *Improvement* of the sacrificial Acts; yet their *primary* Intention, and *ultimate* End, were widely different: were much more significant of the divine Compassions, and much better adapted to the Comfort of Mankind. They were---An *awful Indication*, that Death was the Wages of Sin: At the same Time, a *cheering Declaration*, that GOD was pleased to accept the Death of the Animal, instead of the Sinner's: a *figurative Representation* § also of that illustrious Person, who was *to bear the Sin of many, and pour out his Soul for Transgressors*.

Ther. Since Sacrifices were of a religious Nature, they should not only be instructive and beneficial in their Tendency; but have their *due Effects*, with regard to GOD, to Sin, and to the Person who brought them.

Asp. They had their Effects *with regard to GOD*; that his Justice might be magnified, and his Anger appeased --- *to Sin*; that its Demerit might be displayed, yet its Guilt be done away---*to the Person who brought them*; that he might obtain Pardon, be exempted from Punishment, and exercise his Faith on the *LORD JESUS CHRIST*.

Ther.

* Matt. x. 16.

† John xxi. 15.

‡ John x. 27.

§ What says *Milton* upon this Subject of Sacrifices, and with reference to their *principal* Design? He call's them

Religious Rites

Of Sacrifice; informing Men by Types

And Shadows, of that destin'd Seed to bruise

The Serpent, by what means He shall achieve

Mankind's Deliverance.

B. XII. 231.

Ther. There are so many Sorts of Sacrifice, appointed in the *Jewish* Rubric, that I am at a loss for a *distinct* Idea; unless some one be singled out, and separately considered.

Asp. Among all the Sacrifices instituted by *Moses*, none more circumstantially typified the blessed *JESUS*, or more appositely expressed the Benefits of his Oblation, than the *Paschal Lamb*, and the *Sin-Offering*.

An Expositor, who cannot be mistaken, has given Us this Interpretation of the *Paschal Lamb*; *CHRIST our Passover is sacrificed for Us* *. Declaring hereby---That *CHRIST* is a *real* Sacrifice---That He was *prefigured*, in this Capacity, by the *Paschal Lamb*---That the *Circumstances*, which distinguished it, met in Him; and the *Advantages*, which resulted from it, were procured by Him: *those*, in their truest Import; *these*, in their largest Extent.---The Words of the Apostle speak this Sense, to the *plainest simplest* Reader. Whereas, to extort any other Signification from them, what Subtlety of Wit, and what *Refinement*, or rather *Violence* of Criticism, must be used!

The *Paschal Lamb* was *without Blemish*. Such was the Lamb of GOD: free from all Taint of original Sin, and from every Spot of actual Transgression.---
A Lamb

* 1. Cor. v. 7. Would any one venture to say? *Paul our Passover is sacrificed for Us*. Yet this, I think, *may be*, or rather is in effect said, by the Account which some Persons give of *CHRIST*'s Satisfaction.---The very Thought of such a blasphemous Absurdity, is too *painful* and *offensive* for the serious Christian to dwell upon. I would therefore divert his Attention to a more pleasing Object. Let him observe the exquisite *Skill*, which, here and every where, conducts the *Zeal* of the inspired Writer.---The Odes of *Pindar* are celebrated for their *fine Transitions*; which, though bold and surprising, are perfectly natural. We have, in this Place, a very masterly Stroke of the same beautiful Kind. The Apostle, speaking of the *incestuous* Criminal, passes, by a most artful Digression, to his darling Topic, a *crucified SAVIOUR*. Who would have expected it, on such an Occasion? Yet, when *thus* admitted, who does not see and admire, both the Propriety of the Subject, and the Delicacy of its Introduction?

DIALOGUE III. 65

A Lamb of *the first Year*, and all the Sprightliness and Floridity of Youth. *CHRIST* also laid down his Life, not when worn with Age, and scarce worth the keeping; but in the very Prime of his Days; amidst all the Bloom and Vigour of Manhood.—The Lamb was to be slain in such a Manner, as might occasion the most *copious Effusion* of its Blood. And was not this very exactly fulfilled in our suffering SAVIOUR? His Blood flowed out in vast Abundance, by the amazing *Sweat* in the Garden; by the rending Lashes of the *Scourge*; by the lacerating Points of the *Thorns*; by the dreadful *Nails*, which cleft his Hands and his Feet; by the deadly *Spear*, which ripped open his Side, and cut its Way to his Heart.—Though the Blood was to be so liberally spilt, *a Bone of the Lamb was not to be broken*. And you cannot but recollect, You cannot but admire, the wonderful Interposition of Providence, to accomplish this *emblematical Prediction*. When the Soldiers had received a Command, to break the Legs of the three crucified Persons; when they had actually broke the Legs of each Malefactor, that hung on the right Side of our LORD and on the left; their Minds were over-ruled (by a divine Influence, no doubt) to spare the blessed *JESUS*, and to leave all his Bones *unhurt, untouched*.

The Lamb was to be killed *before the whole Assembly*; in the Presence, either of the whole Congregation of *Israel*, or else of that particular Society, which concurred in eating the Flesh. And did not the whole Multitude of the *Jews* conspire against our REDEEMER, to put Him to Death? Did they not all cry out, as with one Voice? *Crucify Him! Crucify Him!* Was He not executed, at one of their grand Festivals, and in the Sight of the *whole assembled Nation*?—The Blood was not to be poured heedlessly upon the Ground, but received carefully into a *Bason*; and *sprinkled*, with the utmost Punctuality, *upon the Door-Posts*. In like Manner, the Blood of the heavenly Lamb, is not to be trampled under Foot, by a contemptuous Disregard. It is the Treasure of the Church, and the Medicine of Life. To be *received* therefore by an humble Faith,
and

and devoutly *applied* to our Consciences.—The Sprinkling of that Blood *secured* every *Israelitish* Family, from the *destroying Angel's* Sword. So, the Merits of the slaughtered SAVIOUR * screen every believing Sinner, from the Stroke of offending Justice, and from the Pains of eternal Death. What must have become of the *Israelite*, who, trusting to the *Uprightness* of his Heart, should neglect to make use of this *divinely appointed* Safeguard? He must inevitably have been punished with the *Death* of his *First born*. Equally certain, but infinitely more dreadful, will be *his* *Condemnation*; who, before the omniscient Judge, shall presume to plead his own Integrity, or present his own Repentance, and reject the Atonement of the dying JESUS.

Ther. Now, if You please, for the *Sin-Offering* †. Which seems to have been the most eminent Sacrifice of them all.

Asp. It was the most *comprehensive*: because it shadowed forth not only the Death of CHRIST, but his Resurrection from the Dead, and his Ascension into Heaven.—As the various Actions of some illustrious Personage, which cannot be exhibited by the Painter in a single Draught, are displayed in *several Compartments*; yet all constitute one and the same grand *historical Picture*. So, these glorious Events, which could not possibly be typified by any *single Animal*,
were

* Both St. Peter and St. Paul speak of *The Blood of Sprinkling*. 1 Pet. i. 2. Heb. xii. 24. Intimating, by this remarkable Form of Speech, that the Death of CHRIST will be of *no Advantage* to the Sinner, unless it be *applied* to his *Heart*. As the Blood of the Paschal Lamb was no Protection to an *Israelite*, till it had tinged the Posts of his Door — *Isaiah*, using the same Phrase, and alluding to the same Custom, says of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, *He shall sprinkle many Nations*. lli. 15. Not only initiate them into his Church by Baptism; but also, by the Application of his Blood, shall *cleanse* them from their *Guilt*, and *deliver* them from the *Wrath* to come.—If We admit the generally received Doctrine, this Metaphor is *clear* and *easy*: if We reject the Doctrine of real Atonement, The Language is *obscure*, the Sense *embarrassed*, hardly if at all intelligible.

† For the Circumstances relating to the *Sin-Offering*, the Reader will consult *Levit.* xvi.—For those which concern the *Paschal Lamb*, He will have recourse to *Exod.* xii.

were represented by *two Kids of the Goats*: which nevertheless were reputed, but as *one* * Offering.

These Goats were brought to the Door of the Tabernacle, and there presented before the LORD. *CHRIST* also presented Himself before GOD, when *He went up to Jerusalem, that all Things written by the Prophets concerning Him might be accomplished*†.—The Goat, on which *the LORD's Lot fell*, was devoted to Death. *CHRIST* also being delivered by the *determinate Counsel and Fore-knowledge of GOD*‡, was crucified and slain.—The Body *was burnt without the Camp*. Which pointed at the very Place, and pictured out the very Nature, of our LORD's Sufferings. For *He suffered without the Gate* §: was there exposed to the Rage of Men, and the Wrath of GOD; under the most exquisite Pains of Body, and the most insupportable Agonies of Soul. All significantly typified,

* How runs the divine Command? *He (the High-Priest) shall take of the Congregation two Kids of the Goats for a Sin-Offering.* Levit. xvi. 5. Are not these two Kids styled, in the singular Number and collective Sense, *an Offering*?—That we might not mistake, GOD is pleased to add; *And one Ram for a Burnt-Offering.* Here he names *one*, to prevent a Misapprehension of his Meaning, when He had before said *two*.—That we might be still more secure from all Misconception, and regard this Goat as joined in the same Offering with the other; the LORD, contrary to his own Rule in all other Cases, orders the High-Priest to *lay his Hands upon the Head of the Scape-Goat*, not upon the Head of the Goat devoted to Death. He *divides* the necessary Circumstances of a Sacrifice between them *both*. To intimate, in the clearest Manner, that neither the One nor the Other *separate*, but both *taken together*, were the one sacrificial Oblation, appointed for this distinguished Solemnity.

If this be true, I think the Passage is a pretty considerable Proof, That *Atonement* was made by suffering *vicarious* Punishment; notwithstanding what has been urged against it, from the tenth Verse of the Chapter.—If We require human Authority for the Support of this Interpretation, one of the greatest human Authorities may be seen in the celebrated *Witius*: *Uterque Hircus pertinebat ad unum Sacrificium pro Peccato, Hostiæ unius loco. Uterque erat Pecus piacularis, vicaria Israeli Peccatori, ejusque Peccatum ferens.* De Oecon. Lib. IV. Cap. vi.

† Luke xviii. 31.

‡ Acts ii. 23.

§ Heb. xiii. 12.

68 DIALOGUE III.

fied, by the Flame of a devouring Fire. Than which nothing is more *fierce*, more *penetrating*, or more *severely* tormenting.

As the Animal that was *slaughtered*, shewed forth the REDEEMER *dying for our Sins*; that which *escaped*, prefigured the same SAVIOUR, *rising again for our Justification*.—The High-Priest put his Hands upon the Head of the Scape-Goat, and with great Solemnity, *confessed* the Sins of the whole Congregation. The Import of this Ceremony is expressly declared in the sacred Canon; *The Goat shall bear upon Him their * Iniquity*. It is charmingly explained by the Prophet, *The LORD laid on HIM the Iniquity of Us all*; and most delightfully confirmed by the Apostle, *He Himself bore our Sins in his own Body on the Tree*.

This done, the Goat was dismissed into a *Land not inhabited*: a Place separated from all Resort of Men: where he was never likely to be found any more. To teach Us, That our Offences, having been expiated by the bleeding JESUS, are intirely done away; shall never rise up in Judgment against Us; but, according to the Prophecy of *Jeremiab*, *When the Iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, there shall be none; and the Sins of Judah, they shall not be found †*.—It is farther enjoined, That *Aaron shall confess all the Iniquities of the Children of Israel, and all their Transgressions, in all their Sins*. Iniquities, Transgressions, Sins, are particularized; and, to this Group of Expressions, the Word *all* is added. To inform Us, that the *least* Sins need the Atonement of CHRIST's Death; to assure Us, that the *greatest* Sins are not beyond the Compass of its Efficacy; and that *all* Sins, be they ever so heinous, or ever so numerous, are forgiven to the true Believer.

The High-Priest carried the Blood of the Victim into the second Tabernacle, even *within the Veil*.

So

* It is observable, that whereas the Scape-Goat is said to *bear* **NW** the Sins of Israel, *Levit. xvi. 22*. the very same Phrase is applied to CHRIST, *Isai. liii. 12*.

† Jer. l. 20.

So *CHRIST* entered with his own Blood, not into the Holy Places made with Hands, but into *Heaven itself**.—The Blood was sprinkled *before* the Mercy-Seat; sprinkled *upon* the Mercy-Seat; and *left* in the Holy of Holies, that it might always remain before the LORD. And does not *CHRIST* always appear in the Presence of GOD for Us? Does He not ever live to make Intercession for Us? To plead his all-sufficient Propitiation in our behalf? that the Benefits procured thereby, may be *communicated*, ratified, and *perpetuated* to his People?

Ther. These Benefits, *Aspasio*, are ascribed in Scripture, to Repentance and Reformation of Life, Qualifications of *our own*; not to any such Cause as a vicarious Sacrifice; where the Merit must necessarily subsist in *another*. What says the Apostle *Peter*, when He had just received his Instructions from the HOLY GHOST? *Repent and be converted*, not look unto an Atonement, or depend upon a Propitiation, *that your Sins may be blotted out* †.

Asp. 'Tis true, the Benefits of the new Covenant are promised to Penitents, as their *happy Portion*; but never assigned to their Repentance, as the *procuring Cause*. Never to their Repentance, but to the Blood of the great High-Priest, called therefore *The Blood of the everlasting Covenant* ‡: being the Condition stipulated in it, required by it, and in Consequence of which, all its unspeakable Privileges are bestowed.

Besides; the Qualifications You suppose, are the Gift of Heaven. We are not able to *exercise*, till *CHRIST*, who is exalted for this very Purpose, *gives* Repentance ||.—A Conversion to GOD, and a Newness of Life, are not the Effect of *human Abilities*, but the Work of the *divine SPIRIT*, and the Fruit of the REDEEMER's Death.—Indeed, this Death is the Purchase of *every* heavenly Blessing. This opens the Hand, opens the Heart of GOD, and all the Stores of his inexhaustible Bounty.

Ther. You begin to be in Raptures, *Aspasio*!

Asp.

* Heb. ix. 24. † Acts iii. 19. ‡ Heb. xiii. 20. || Acts v. 31.

Asp. Excuse me, *Theron*. It is not easy to repress the Sallies of Delight and Devotion, when we muse upon *such amazing* Loving-kindness, and are touched with a Sense of such *immensely rich* Benefits.—A great High-Priest! Who is *higher than the Heavens*; yet *humbled* Himself to Death, even the Death of the Cross! Who is *consecrated for evermore*; and pleads *all* his Merit, improves all his Influence, for *our* consummate Felicity!

*What Heart of Stone but glows at Thoughts like these?
Such Contemplations mount Us, and should mount
The Mind still higher; nor ever glance on Man
Unraptur'd, uninflam'd*.*

But I check myself; and will either reply to your Objections, or listen to your Sentiments. Listen as attentively, as You Yourself attend to the Music of that *shrill-tongued Thrush*.

Ther. Its sweetly-modulated Lays, eminent even in the Symphony of Spring, have indeed attracted my Ears. But my Mind is *disengaged*, and *free* for your Conversation.

Asp. I can repeat a Song, sweeter far than this, or all the Melody of the Wood-land Choirs. A Song, that has Harmony enough, to make the *Brow* of *Melancholy* wear a Smile, or to sooth away the *Sorrows* of *Death* itself. *Who shall lay any Thing to the Charge of GOD's Elect? It is GOD that justifieth; who is He that condemneth? It is CHRIST that died; yea, rather, that is risen again; who is even at the right Hand of GOD; who also maketh Intercession for Us*†.—According to my Friend's Principles, the Strain of this triumphant Exclamation was ill-judged, and should have run in the following Manner: “Who shall lay any thing to our Charge? We have endeavoured to preserve a Rectitude of Disposition, and to persist in a laudable Course of Action. Where-ever We failed, We have been sorry for the Fault, and have implored Pardon from the divine MAJESTY. What then shall dismay Us? Or who shall condemn Us.”—*Your* Topics of Consolation would be complete,

* Night-Thoughts, N^o IV.

† Rom. viii. 33, 34.

complete, without having Recourse to the *Death* of *CHRIST*, as an *Atonement* for Sin; or to the *Resurrection* of *CHRIST*, as an *Evidence* that the *Atonement* is accepted; or to the *Intercession* of *CHRIST*, as the *Cause* of our Interest in that transcendent Blessing.

Ther. Since You so frequently mention, and so earnestly insist upon *Atonement*, I should be glad to know the precise Signification of the Word. I am told, the original Phrase has nothing to do with the Idea of *making Satisfaction*.

Asp. We may learn the precise Signification of *Atonement*, by considering The *Means*; the *Effect*; and the *Manner*, whereby the Means accomplish the Effect.—The Effect of *Atonement*, is *Pardon*—The Means of obtaining it, are the *Death* of *CHRIST*—The Way or Manner, whereby the Death of *CHRIST* becomes efficacious for this blessed Purpose, is the sovereign *Appointment* of his Father; the infinite *Dignity* of his Person; and especially the *vicarious* Nature of his Sufferings, or their being undergone in the Stead of Sinners.

The original Word, which We translate *Atonement*, implies, in its primary Acceptation, the Notion of *covering*. Thus the Ark was covered *, *was overlaid with Pitch, within and without*: that all its Chinks might be *secured*, against the insinuating Attempts of the Water; and all its Timber *defended*, from the Injuries of the liquid Element.—When an Object, in this or any other Manner, is covered over for Safety; the Covering *receives* every Shock, and *sustains* all Damages, that would otherwise fall upon the Thing covered. The Image, therefore, is very pertinently used, to express the true *evangelical* Nature of *Atonement*; and it is applied, with apparent Propriety, to HIM who is indeed the *anointed Cherub*,

* כפרת Thou shalt besmear, cover, or overlay. Gen. vi. 14. This is the first Place in which our Word occurs. And it is supposed to give Us the genuine and native Sense of the Phrase.—Perhaps, the *English* Expression *cover*, may be derived from the Participle כפר copher.

Cherub, that covereth **: covereth from the Wrath of GOD, and the Stroke of Justice, by bearing both in our Stead.

Now we have inquired into the exact Signification of the Hebrew Word, give me leave to add, That its Meaning is very *extensive*, and not unworthy of our particular Regard. It denotes—The Exercise of divine *Mercy* *—The *Pardon* of Sin †—A *Cleansing* from Guilt ‡—*Purging* from Transgression ||—*Reconciliation* for Iniquity §—The *Pacifying* of Wrath ¶—Do not these Passages, (which are expressed by some Branch of the *Verb*, that conveys to Us the Idea of *atoning*) plainly intimate—That the Atonement of *CHRIST* is the meritorious Cause of all these desirable Effects; is the Foundation of *every* Act of divine Goodness; and the Origin of *every* Blessing vouchsafed to Sinners?

Ther. After all, *this* is the Consideration, that principally offends and perplexes me—GOD is a *wise*, a *julime*, an *infinitely pure* Spirit. How then can He take Pleasure, in the Effusion of Blood, or the Burning of Flesh? How can any such *low carnal* Inducements, make Him *merciful* to Sinners; or appease, what You call, his Wrath?

Asp. Rather, what the *Scriptures* call his Wrath.—You mistake our Doctrine, my dear *Theron*. We never maintain, that any Sacrifice whatever, not even the Propitiation of *CHRIST*'s Death, was intended to *make* GOD merciful. Only to *make Way* for his eternal Purposes of Mercy, without *any Prejudice* either to the Demands of his Law, or the Rights of his Justice.—Our Sentiments on this Head, are,

** *Ezek. xxviii. 14.* This is spoken of the King of *Tyre*, who was probably a Type of *Anti-Christ*. The Passage describes, What He presumed to *think Himself*; and what He attempted to *pass for*, in the Estimation of the World. If so, I believe, *Appasio* may very justly apply it to the LORD *JESUS*. It is a Jewel of the mediatorial Crown, and since it has been sacrilegiously stolen, surely it should be restored to its proper Owner, and replaced upon the REDEEMER's Diadem.

* Deut. xxxii. 43. † Deut. xxi. 8. 2 Chron. xxx. 18.

‡ Numb. xxxv. 33.

|| Psal. lxx. 3.

§ Dan. ix. 24.

¶ Ezek. xvi. 63.

DIALOGUE III. 73

are exactly consonant to his own *Declaration*, and his own *Procedure*, in the Case of *Job's Friends* *. Tho' displeased with their Conduct, he was merciful to their Persons. Nevertheless, he would not exercise that Mercy, till they had first offered a Sacrifice, and acted Faith in a dying SAVIOUR.

Neither is it ever supposed, That the infinitely wise and pure GOD can *take Pleasure* in the Effusion of Blood, or the Burning of Flesh, *simply* considered. Only as they had a Reference to that *noble and inestimable* Sacrifice, which brings the highest Honour to his Name; which those slaughtered Animals exhibited in a Figure; and to which every true *Israelite* had a believing Regard.

I say, had a *believing Regard*. For, it is affirmed by the Author to the *Hebrews*, That the Gospel was preached to the *Israelites* in the Wilderness †. — *What* does He mean by *the Gospel*? The very Essence of this benevolent Scheme, according to the Apostle's own Definition, is, 'That *CHRIST* died for our Sins ‡. — *How* was this Gospel preached to our Fathers in the Wilderness? By significant Emblems; especially, by slaughtered Animals, and bleeding Victims. By which *CHRIST* was *almost continually*, though not so *evidently* as in these later Times, *set forth crucified among them* ||.

In *this* Sense alone, those carnal Usages were *worthy* the Wisdom of GOD to appoint, and the Majesty of GOD to accept. — This gave them a peculiar *Dignity* and *Importance*; and set them far above all the similar Observances, used in the Heathen Worship. — They were also, when thus explained, thus improved, extremely profitable to Believers; as they directed their Contemplation to the *future* Sufferings of a SAVIOUR, and ratified to their Faith the Benefits of his *ever-operating* Sacrifice. Which, We are assured by an infallible Voice, was effectual

* See Job xlii. 7, 8.
|| Gal. iii. 1.

† Heb. iii. 2.

‡ 1 Cor. xv. 3.

for the Redemption of the Transgressions under the first Covenant.*

Ther. So You apprehend, that, in those Usages, practised by the antient *Jews*, the Gospel was *emblematically* preached, and *CHRIST* in a Figure exhibited.

Asp. Most certainly, *Theron*. And for this Cause, under the Law, *almost all Things were purged with Blood* ||. The Multiplicity, the Variety, the Constancy of their Sacrifices, were all designed to *impress* upon their Minds, and *familiarize* to their Thoughts, this great evangelical Truth.—Was any One overtaken by a *Fault*? He must present a Victim, and the Priest must slay it, by way of *Trespass-Offering*. To signify, that the Guilt which was contracted, could be done away only by the atoning Death of *CHRIST*.—Had any One received a signal *Blessing*? A Beast was slain by way of *Peace-Offering*; as a public Expression of Gratitude for the Mercy, and also

* When I reflect on these Words, I wonder how any One can assert, That *all the Jews died under the Curse of the Law*—Died under the Curse of the Law! Even though the Apostle has warranted it for a Truth, That *All these* (meaning *Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Jacob, &c.*) *died in Faith*. Heb. xi. 13.—Even though He has elsewhere laid it down as a Maxim, *So then they which are of Faith*, in whatever Period of Time they live, or under whatever Dispensation of Religion they worship, *are blessed with faithful Abraham*. Gal. iii. 3.—Even though the Psalmist, in one Place, affirms, *Blessed are they whose Ungiftednesses are forgiven, and whose Sin is covered*. And, in another Place, declares concerning Himself and his pious Contemporaries; *Look how wide the East is from the West! So far hath He set our Sins from Us*, Psal. xxxii. 1. Psal. ciii. 12.

From these and many other Texts, I think, it is evident, That the faithful *Jews* no more died under the Curse of the Law, than the faithful *Christians*. The Death of *CHRIST* procured the *Pardon* and *Acceptance* of Believers, even before He came in the Flesh. From the Beginning, He had covenanted with the *FATHER*, as their *MEDIATOR*: and *GOD*, to whom all Things are present, saw the certain Accomplishment of his Undertaking. He was therefore, by virtue of the divine Decree, and in Point of saving Efficacy, *A Lamb slain from the Foundation of the World*. Though he laid down his Life in the Reign of *Tiberius*, He was a real *REDEEMER* in *all Ages*.

|| Heb. ix. 22.

also as an emphatical Declaration, that all Good vouchsafed to fallen Man, is owing to the REDEEMER's Ransom.

And not only by their solemn *sacrificial* Acts, but even by their *ordinary* Meals, this grand Lesson was inculcated. They were forbidden to eat the Blood; in order to awaken and preserve in their Consciences, a *reverential* and *fiducial* Regard to the precious Blood of *CHRIST*. The HOLY GHOST, assigning a Reason for this sacred Prohibition, says expressly, *Because the Blood maketh an Atonement for Your † Souls*: the Blood of Beasts typically, the Blood of *CHRIST* effectually. —O! that *Christians* would, in this Particular, learn of *Jews*. Learn, at least, from *Jewish* Ordinances, to have their Attention incessantly fixed on that divine High-Priest, who, *by one Offering, hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified* *.

Ther. Another odd Circumstance has often given me Disgust, and been apt to prejudice me against the Institutions of the Old Testament. Many of them are *mean, contemptible, and perfectly puerile*. “ Can these, “ I have said within myself, be ordained by a GOD “ of infinite Wisdom, and transcendent Glory? Can “ We reasonably imagine, that a Mandate should be “ issued from the *Court of Heaven*, on purpose to forbid the *Boiling*, and injoin the *Roasting* §, of a particular Piece of Meat? — Will the great Ruler of “ the Skies, concern Himself about the precise Manner of *killing* one Bird, and *releasing* another ‡? — “ Will He, who claims the Worship of the Heart, “ have such an especial Regard to a Drop or two of “ despicable Blood, put upon the *Tip* of the *Right Ear*, “ or the *Thumb* of the *Right Hand* ||? — Surely, such “ childish Ceremonies are too minute and trivial for “ the *Notice*, much more for the *solemn Appointment*, “ of the SUPREME Majesty!”

† Levit. xvii. 11.

* Heb. x. 14.

§ Exod. xii. 9.

‡ Levit. xiv. 4, 5, 6, 7.

|| Exod. xxix. 29.

76 D I A L O G U E I I I.

Asp. You will please to remember, that, when those Ceremonies were ordained, it was the *Infancy* §. at least the *Minority* of the Church. And We have Reason to admire the *Condescension* of the great CREATOR, in adapting his Revelation to the State of his People; *speaking unto them, even as unto Babes* *.——The Institutions, at which You hint, were undoubtedly mean and trifling, if considered in *themselves*. But, contemplate them in their Relation to the ever blessed MEDIATOR, some of whose *Offices, Merits, or Sufferings*, they shadowed forth; then they acquire a real Magnificence, and impart the noblest Instruction.

The Blood put upon the Tip of the Ear, and Thumb of the Hand, denotes our *personal* Application of the Death of CHRIST. Without which all its Virtue, though boundless and inconceivable, will profit Us nothing. Those particular Parts of the Body, may signify the *perceptive* and *executive* Faculties: in both which We offend, and for both which We need the great Propitiation.——Of the two Birds You mention, one was to be *killed*, the other was to *fly away*, after it had been dipped in the Blood of its Fellow. Thus the LORD JESUS was crucified for our Sins: and We, being *washed* in his Blood; being *interested* in the Atonement of our holy Victim, and elder Brother; are acquitted from Guilt, and *escape* Condemnation.——Concerning the Paschal Lamb, it was particularly enjoined, That the Flesh *should not be eaten raw, nor sodden with Water, but roasted with Fire*; and of every Burnt-Offering, the Fat and the Inwards were delivered up to the devouring Flame. All this was an Emblem of that tremendous Indignation, which *is poured out like Fire*; which *seized* our immaculate Sacrifice, that it might *spare* polluted Sinners; and which must have consumed utterly any MEDIATOR, who was less than infinite, or other than divine.

Had

§ St Paul calls the Church of those Times, *νηπιος*, An Infant or Babe. Gal. iv. 1, 3.

* 1 Cor. xii. 1.

Had You beheld our renowned *Newton* blowing up, with great Assiduity and Attention, his little *watery Vesicles* into the Air; You would, perhaps, have despised the venerable Philosopher, and have thought him little better than a *boary Idiot*. But when You was told, that, in every one of these volatile sopy Bubbles, He discovered the beauteous *Colours* of the *Rain-bow*; and from this seemingly childish Experiment, He explained the *Nature* of that wonderful Arch; You would then entertain a different Notion, both of the Man and of his Employ.—So, when You discern the blessed *JESUS* looking through these Windows, and flourishing through these *Lattices* * of the *Jewish* Oeconomy; You will, I hope, conceive a higher Opinion of them, and derive richer Advantage from them.

Ther. There are several *Persons*, as well as ritual Observances, of a very singular Character, mentioned in the *Mosaic* Law. The *Lepër*, for Instance, the *Nazarite*, with others of the same antiquated and grotesque Stamp. Which seem, to me, at least, so many *unmeaning* Narratives; that convey no manner of Edification to Readers in the present Age.—I have frequently had an Inclination, and now I have a proper Opportunity, to ask your Opinion upon these Points.

Asp. I thank you, *Theron*, for giving me the Hint. What You propose, is by no means foreign to the Topic of our Discourse.—Those Persons were truly remarkable; neither are the Circumstances of their Case recorded in vain. They picture out in *dismal* and *delightful* Colours, the Sinner and the SAVIOUR.—To know Ourselves, and to know *CHRIST*, is true *Wisdom*; is indeed the Consummation of all Knowledge. Here, We have a Lecture of hieroglyphical Instruction, on both those important Subjects.

* Cant. ii. 9. The ceremonial Institutions of the *Jewish* Law are, with as much Truth as Ingenuity, called—*Evangelium elementare & præliminare*.

The *Leper* * was an Emblem of a *Sinner*.—His Disease extremely *afflictive* to Himself, and intolerably *loathsome* to others. Sin likewise is the *forest* of all Miseries, to the Wretch who commits it; and most *detestably* odious, to the GOD who forbids it.—The Leper was secluded from the *Benefits* of *Society*, and all Communication with his Fellow-citizens. The Sinner also, while impenitent and unpardoned, is an *Alien* from the Commonwealth of *Israel*; without any Enjoyment of the Comforts, or any Interest in the Privileges of the Gospel. If He dies in this Condition, He must be for ever *shut out* from the Kingdom of Heaven; for ever *cut off* from the Presence of the LORD.

The Contagion was sometimes *so pestilent*, that it not only tainted the Clothes of the Diseased, but spread itself over the Walls of his House, and infected the Timber of the Beams. It was sometimes *so raging* and *inveterate*, that it could not be stopt, could not be eradicated, but by burning the Garment, and demolishing the Building. Does not this give Us a clear, but melancholy View, of *original* Corruption? Which has transfused its Poison, through *all* the Faculties of the Soul, and *all* the Members of the Body. Nor will ever be *intirely* expelled, till Death releases the former, and consigns the latter to the Dust.

What could cure this terrible Distemper, even in its *mildest* State? Not all the Balm of *Gilead*; not all the Drugs on a thousand Hills; nothing but the *consecrated* Oil and *sacrificial* Blood, duly applied by the High-Priest. And what can heal the Disorders of our fallen Souls? So far heal them, as to purge away their Guilt, and subdue the Prevalence of their Iniquities? No Acts of Mortification, no Vigilance, nor any Efforts of our own; nothing but the *atoning* Death, and *sanctifying* Spirit of the blessed *JESUS*. The Malignity and Virulence of this Plague of the Heart, are *absolutely incorrigible* by any other Expedient. But, blessed be divine Grace, this Remedy, provided by our great High-Priest, and administered by our great Physician, is *sovereign*, and *never fails*.

The

* Levit. xiii. xiv.

The Case of the *Nazarites* * was the very reverse of the State of the *Lepers*. *Her Nazarites*, Jeremiah says, *were purer than Snow, they were whiter than Milk; they were more ruddy in Body than Rubies; their Polishing was of Sapphires* †. A faint Representation of the only begotten SON, who is the *fairest among ten thousand*; the Brightness of his Father's Glory, and the express Image of his Person; both GOD and Man, in one sacred, wonderful, adorable SAVIOUR.—*They*, during the Time of their Separation, abstained from Wine; withdrew from secular Business; avoided every Kind of Pollution; and dedicated themselves, in an especial Manner, to the Service of GOD. A Type of that *glorious Nazarite*, who was separated, for a Season, from the Fruitions of Heaven: who was holy, harmless, and undefiled, both in his Nature and all his Conversation: who sanctified himself, and devoted his Life and Labours, his Soul and Body, to the Glory of his Father, and the Redemption of his People.—The *Nazarites*, when they had discharged their Vow, and were ceremonially *clean*, yet were obliged to offer a *Sin-Offering*, a *Burnt-Offering*, and a *Peace-Offering*. So, the great REDEEMER, though he had *perfectly obeyed* all the preceptive Parts of the divine Law, yet was required to offer up a Sacrifice—even the *incomparably precious* Sacrifice of Himself—in order to consummate the Work of our Salvation.

Ther. Have You a sufficient Warrant, *Aspasio*, for this Strain of Interpretation? Is it *sound*, is it *rational*, or conformable to any *authentic* Standard of scriptural Exposition? Methinks, it looks more like the Child of Fancy, than the Offspring of Judgment; more like the Sally of a sportive Imagination, than the Result of a sober Disquisition.

You cannot be ignorant, how the ruling Passion tinctures the whole Conduct. Hence it is, I apprehend, that your *religious Inamoratoes* find heavenly Beauties, where Scripture intended no more than natural Truths. Hence it is, that they turn plain Facts

* Numb. vi.

† Lam. iv. 7.

into profound Figures, and allegorize *common Sense* into *pious Absurdity*.—Have You never seen the *mythic* Interpretations of some antient, and I may add, some modern Divines? The Honesty of their Design is transparent, and the Piety of their Lives is unquestionable; otherwise, We should be tempted to suspect, that they meant to burlesque the Scriptures, and disgrace their Author.

Who can ever persuade Himself, that the supremely wise GOD, would send Us to search for a *Body of Divinity*, in a *Bundle of Rods*? Or set Us to spin all the Mysteries of Christianity, from a few Fleeces of Wool, *ring-straked*, *speckled*, and *grizled*? Thus to expound the Scriptures, is, not to open them clearly, and apply them judiciously, but rather to whip them into Froth*.

Asp. We have the Authority of our LORD Himself. Who has informed Us—That the *brazen Serpent* lifted up in the Wilderness †, was figurative of his own Suspension and Death on the Cross.—That the *Temple*, built on Mount *Sion*, was typical of his immaculate Body, in which dwelt all the Fulness of the GODHEAD ‡.—That the Prophet, *Jonah* lodged in the Belly of the Whale, and discharged from that strange Confinement, on the third Day ||; was an Emblem of his own descending into the Grave, and rising again before his Flesh saw Corruption.

We have also the Testimony and the Practice of the chiefest of the Apostles for our Warrant. He assures Us, That the *Rock* smitten by *Moses* had a Reference to *CHRIST* §; who was wounded for our Sins, and is the Foundation of our Hopes. That the *Waters*, issuing at the Stroke, were significative of those spiritual Blessings which flow from a crucified SAVIOUR. That, as the former *followed* the Sons of *Jacob*, thro' all the Circumvolutions of their tedious Journey; the latter accompany the Disciples of *JESUS*, in every Stage

* *Luther* used to call such far-fetched and unnatural Allegories, *Sjnam Scripturæ*.

† John iii. 14. ‡ John ii. 19, 21. Col. ii. 9. || Matt. xii. 39, 40. § 1 Cor. x. 4.

Stage of their earthly Pilgrimage.—Let the great Teacher of the *Gentiles* be our Expositor, and We shall see the *Veil* of the *Temple* dignified with a Significancy, richer far than its costly Materials, and curious Workmanship. Its Silk and Embroidery exhibit, to the Eye of Faith, the pure and spotless Flesh of *CHRIST**. As, by rending the material Veil, the Holy of Holies became *visible* and *accessible*; so, by wounding the Body, and spilling the Blood of *CHRIST*, the GOD of Heaven was *manifested*, and the Way to Heaven *opened*.

Every Reader must admire those *divided Waves*; which, instead of overwhelming the *Israelites* with a resistless Deluge, stood like a Wall of Defence on their Right-hand and on their Left, as they marched thro' the Depths of the Sea.—Every Reader must admire that *wonderful Cloud*, which hung like a wide extended Canopy over the Hosts of *Israel*; and screened them from the annoying Sun-beams, as they passed through the sultry Desert.—Our Admiration must be heightened, when We find *that*, which was a Cloud by Day, becoming a *Pillar of Fire* by Night; and illuminating their Camp with the most amazing, as well as the most cheering Splendor.—But St. *Paul* discerned a *greater Glory*, and a *deeper Design*, in these unparalleled Events. The People, He says, *were baptized unto Moses, in the Cloud and in the Sea*†. These symbolically represented, The Baptism of *Water*, and of *Fire*; or the Application of *CHRIST*'s Blood to our Souls, and the Efficacy of his *SPIRIT* on our Hearts. In the former of which consists our Justification; from the latter of which, proceeds our Sanctification.

I fear, You will think my Discourse, somewhat like the Journey just now mentioned; but I must not wholly omit the Epistle to the *Hebrews*. Which, of all others, is the most *unexceptionable Vindication*, as well as the *faultless Model* of allegorical Exposition.—It is delightful to observe, what Propriety of Address, the inspired Writer uses. He speaks to the *Jews*, in

* Heb. x. 20.

† 1 Cor. x. 2.

their own Way: alludes to their own Usages, Ordinances, and Ceremonies: proves them to be Types of, and Guides to, a more clear, a more benign, and in all respects a more excellent † Oeconomy. More particularly He displays the *transcendent Superiority* of *CHRIST* and his Gifts, even to those Persons and Privileges, which they held in the highest Esteem. These, like the Morning Star, were introductory to, yet totally eclipsed by the rising Sun.

They had exalted Apprehensions of the *angelic* Excellencies. The Apostle therefore celebrates the REDEEMER, as the LORD whom Angels obey, as the GOD whom Angels adore.—They always reckoned *Moses* to be the *first Favourite* of Heaven, and chief among the Children of Men. He lets them know, that *Moses*, with all his extraordinary Endowments, was but a *Servant* in the House of *JESUS*. It was his greatest Honour, to be the Harbinger of this Prince of Peace.—As the Priesthood and Sacrifices were some of their distinguishing Privileges; He shews the Pre-eminence of *CHRIST*'s Office to all the *Aaronic* Orders. He demonstrates the extensive and everlasting Efficacy of *his one* Atonement, in preference to the *whole Series* of the *Levitical* Oblations.

Ther. Thus interpreted, I must acknowledge, the Book of *Levitical* Ceremonies is *significant* and *edifying*. Whereas, abstracted from this evangelical Improvement,

† He styles the legal Oblations, and indeed the whole Service of the *Jewish* Sanctuary, *The Example and Shadow of heavenly Things*; or of *CHRIST JESUS*, and *evangelical* Worship, and *spiritual* Blessings, Heb. viii. 5.—*Ἰμωδίσματα*, *the Pattern*: somewhat like the Strokes, penciled out upon a Piece of fine Linen; which present You with the Figure of Sprigs, of Leaves, and of Flowers; but have not yet received their splendid Colours, their curious Shades, and beautiful Inrichments, from the Labours of the Needle.—*Σκία*, *A shadowy Representation*; which gives You some dim and imperfect Idea of the Body; but not the fine Features, not the distinguishing Air, none of those living Graces, which adorn the real Person—Yet, both the Pattern and the Shadow lead our Minds to something *nobler* than themselves. The Pattern, to that which *completes* it; the Shadow, to that which *occasions* it.

ment, nothing can be more *empty* and *jejune*. I once thought, that, to peruse those obsolete Canons, was like sitting down to an Entertainment of *dry Bones*. But, if such be their Import, they may yield *Marrow* and *Fatness* to the attentive Mind.

Due Care, however, should be taken, not to suppose a Type, where there is no *apparent* Foundation of Analogy in the Thing itself; or no *Hint* of this Nature given us by the unerring SPIRIT. Lest, instead of being *guided* by Truth, We are *bewildered* by Fancy. — And, when either or both these Handles present themselves, I think, We should beware of straining the Subject, beyond the Bounds of a *just* and *reasonable* Comparison. Lest, instead of *following* the Clue, We stretch it till it *breaks*. — If the first Caution is not observed, the Sense of Scripture will lie so deep, or be removed to such a Distance; that none but Persons of the most *acute* Discernment can find it, or none but Persons of the most *excursive* Imagination can reach it. If the second is not regarded, the Meaning of those divine Volumes will become so *vague* and *volatile*, that there will hardly remain any Possibility of ascertaining or fixing it.

Asp. As to the Expedience and Necessity of these cautionary Limitations, I have the Pleasure of agreeing intirely with my Friend. — Let our Fancy submit to the Reins of Judgment, otherwise her Excursions will be *wild* and *lawless*. Let our Zeal borrow the Eyes of Discretion, otherwise her Efforts will be *blind* and *extravagant*. And let all, thus tempered, thus regulated, be under the Influence of enlightening Grace. Then, to spiritualize the antient Scriptures, will be to convert the Stones of the Sanctuary into the Jewels of a Crown; and to fetch, not *Water* only, but *Milk* and *Honey* from the flinty Rock.

Then, how *pleasing* must it be, as well as *instructive*, to discover the blessed JESUS, in all the Institutions of the *Mosaic* Law! — To see his *Incarnation* prefigured by the Feast of *Tabernacles* *. When the *Israelites* were to relinquish their Houses, and lodge

* Levit. xxiii. 34, 40, 42.

lodge in Booths. Even as the Son of GOD left the Bosom of his Father, and the Seats of Bliss, to inhabit a Cottage of Clay, and sojourn in a Vale of Tears.—To see our spotless and divine Victim, typically slain at the joyful Solemnity of the *Passover*, and the anniversary Fast of *Expiation*.—To see his *Death*, that inestimable Ransom for our Souls, presented to our Faith in every *Morning* and *Evening Sacrifice* †: his *Intercession*, that prevailing Recommendation of our Prayers, most sweetly expressed by the rich *Incense*, which attended the sacred Rite.—To see the various Methods of *Purification*; some pointing at the *Fountain* ‡, opened for Sin and for Uncleanness in our REDEEMER's bleeding Heart; others referring to those sanctifying Operations of the SPIRIT, which act *as a Refiner's Fire* §, or *as Fuller's Sope*.—To see, in the *City of Refuge* ¶, that *perfect Security*, which CHRIST's meritorious Sufferings in our Stead, afford to every penitent and believing Sinner.

If it was so very affecting and so very encouraging to *Aeneas*, when He beheld the Story of the *Trojan* Heroes, pictured upon the Walls of the *Carthaginian* Temple ¶; what Satisfaction and Joy must arise in the Christian's Breast, when He perceives the *amiable Lineaments* of his everlasting Friend, *pourtrayed* in all the Peculiarities of the *Jewish* Worship, and in the most distinguishing Events of the *Jewish* History!—This must inexpressibly endear the Bible to his Affections. This spreads *Life* and *Glory* through every Page of that blessed Book.

Ther. How soon is this Walk finished! How imperceptibly has the Time stole away!—These *Garden-Gates* I always used to approach with a particular Complacency. They seemed to afford me a *welcome Retreat* from the Impertinence and Vanity of the World. Now, methinks, I enter them with Reluctance. Because, they are likely to put a Period to this agreeable Conversation.—However, as my *Aspasio* enters

† Exod. xxix. 38, 39.

‡ Numb. xxxi. 23. Isai. iv. 4.

§ Virg. *Æn.* I.

¶ Exod. xxix. 4. Psal. li. 7.

¶ Numb. xxxv. 11, 12.

DIALOGUE IV. 85

enters with me, I am reconciled, I am satisfied. It will be in his Power to restore the Pleasure, that must now be interrupted. And this is what I shall ere long request ; because I have not spoke my whole Mind upon the present Subject.

Asp. Whenever you think proper, *Theron*. This is, to me, a *favourite* Subject : and not to me only, but to incomparably better Judges.—The Man, who had been caught up into the third Heavens, and seen the Visions of GOD, determined to know *nothing* but *JESUS CHRIST* and Him *crucified* *.—At the *grandest* Assembly, that ever was convened on Earth, this furnished the *principal*, if not the *only* Topic of Conversation.—And in that World, where the Voice of Joy and Thanksgiving is perpetually heard, this constitutes the *Burden* of the Song ; *Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed Us to GOD by thy Blood* †.



DIALOGUE IV.

THERON.

I MUST now desire my *Aspasio* to inform me, *What* that grand Assembly was, (which He mentioned in the Close of our last Discourse) and where convened ?

Asp. Can't you guess, *Theron* ?—Was it in the Plains of *Thessaly* ; when *Xerxes* drew together the Forces of more than half the known World, and appeared at the Head of all the Potentates of the East ?—Was it in the *Roman* Forum ; when the Senators were assembled in their Robes, and the Barbarians took them for a Synod of Gods ?—No ; it was on the Mount of *Transfiguration*. Where the Son of the true

* 1 Cor. ii. 2.

† Rev. v. 9.

86 DIALOGUE IV.

true GOD, the LORD of eternal Glory, shone forth in some of his *celestial* and *native* Splendor, with Garments white as the Snow *, and a Countenance bright as the Sun. Where he conversed with two of his most *distinguished* Saints, just come down from the Regions of Bliss and Immortality: with *Moses* the great Deliverer of the Law, and with *Elijah* the resolute Restorer of its Honours. Where he was attended by three of his *principal* Ambassadors; who were to be the Reformers of Mankind, and the Lights of the World.

This, I think, is the most venerable and august Assembly, that the Annals of History have recorded.—And what was the *Topic* of *Conversation* amongst these illustrious Personages?—Not the Affairs of State, nor the Revolutions of Empire; not the curious Refinements of Literature, nor the wonderful Discoveries of Philosophy; but the *ignominious* and *bloody* Exit†, which the divine *JESUS* was soon to make at *Jerusalem*.—This Circumstance, methinks, should recommend the Subject to our frequent Discourse; even though it was less eminent, for intrinsic Dignity, and comfortable Import.

Talking in this manner, they arrive at the *Park*. Which, the Moment You enter, fills the View with its bold, enlarged, and magnificent Sweep.—It was diversified with level and rising Ground. Here, scooped into mimic Amphitheatres; with the *Deer* pendent on the

* *Mark* ix. 3. The Evangelist's Description is, like the Scene, remarkably bright: and the *Gradation* of his Images, is almost as worthy of Observation, as the memorable Fact.—The Garments were *white*—*exceeding* white—white *as the Snow*—whiter than any *Fuller* on Earth could make them—surpassing all the Works of *Art*, equalling the first and finest Productions of *Nature*.—Nay, so great was the Lustre, that it *glistered* (*εγχευετο σιλβοντα*) like the Lightning; and even dazzled the Sight.

† Does not this very delicately, yet very strongly intimate, That the Sufferings and Death of *CHRIST*, were the principal End of the *Mosaic* Institutions, and the principal Subject of the *Prophetic* Teachings? For is it not natural to suppose, that *Moses* and *Elijah* intended, when ministering on Earth, that very Thing, which their Conversation dwelt upon, when they descended from Heaven?

the little Summit, or shooting down the easy Precipice. There, raised into gentle Hillocks; some of which were *canopied* with a large, spreading, solitary Oak; others were *tufted* with a Cluster of tapering and verdant Elms. Two or three *Cascades*, gleaming from afar, as they poured along the grassy Slope, gave a pleasing Variation to the Prospect. While they startled the timorous unexperienced Fawns, with their foaming Current and watery Roar.—*Grandeur* and *Simplicity* seemed to be the Genius of the Place. Every Thing breathed an Air of noble Negligence, and artless Majesty.

In the Center of all, rose a curious *romantic Mount*.—Its Form was *exactly round*, somewhat like a Sugar-loaf, lopt off a little below the Point.—Not co-eval with Nature, but the Work of human Industry. Thrown up, 'tis supposed, in those perilous Times, when *Britain* was alarmed by foreign Invasions, or bled with intestine Wounds.—It was covered, all around, with Elder-shrubs: whose Ranks, gradually rising, and spreading Shade above Shade, composed a kind of *woody Theatre*: through which were struck two or three *spiral Walks*; leading, by a gentle Ascent, and under embowering Verdure, to the Summit.—At proper Intervals, and on every Side of the Hill, were formed little *Arborets*; with Apertures, cut through the Boughs, to admit a Prospect of the Country.—In one or other of these leafy Boxes, You command, at every Hour of the Day, either the Sun or the Shade.—All along the winding Avenues, and all around the beauteous Rests, sprung *Daffodils*, *Primroses*, and *Violets*: which, mingling with *Hyacinths* and *Cowslips*, composed many a charming Piece of *natural Mosaic*.

How agreeable, as they climb the circling Path, to reflect on the *bappy Change*, that has now taken Place! —Where steely *Helmets* gleamed, or brazen *Shields* clashed, the *Goldfinches* twitter their Loves, and display their painted Plumes. The Dens of Rapine, or the horrid Haunts of Bloodshed, are become the Retreats of calm Contemplation, and friendly Converse. —In yonder lower Spaces, where the armed Troops were:

were wont to patrol ; from whence they made Excursions, to ravage the Villages, or terrify the Swains ; the *Fallow-Deer* trip lightly, or the *full-headed Stags* stand at Bay.

From a small Eminence, but at a considerable Distance, gushed a couple of Springs. Which, rambling through a Grove, lost one another in the shady Labyrinth. Emerging, at length, from the Gloom, they approached nearer and nearer, and fell into Embraces at the Foot of this Hill. They rolled, in amicable Conjunction, along the pebbly Channel, that encircles its Basis ; and added their *sober Melody* to the *sprightly Warbling* of the Birds.—Flowing off in one common Stream, they formed the fine Pieces of Water, which beautified the Park. From thence, they stole into the Meadow, and widened into a *River*. There, enamoured as it were with each other, they glide by wealthy Towns, and sweep through flowery Vales ; regardless of the *blooming Toys*, that deck the one, and of the *noisy Crowds*, that throng the other.

So, said *Aspasio*, may *Theron* and his *Selina*, pleasing and pleased with each other, pass through the busy and the amusing Scenes of Life ; neither *captivated* by the one, nor *anxious* for the other. With such harmonious Agreement, and indissoluble Union, may they pursue the Course, marked out by Providence ; their Happiness *increasing*, and their Usefulness *enlarging*, as they draw nearer the Ocean of all Good. Then, parted by a gentle Stroke of Fate, like the Waters of some ample Stream *severed* by the Piers of an intervening Bridge, may they speedily *reunite* ! Reunite in consummate Bliss, and never be separated more !

Ther. I thank You. *Aspasio*, for your affectionate Compliment. Nor can I wish You, by way of Return, a greater Recompence, than the continual Exercise of such a *benevolent* Temper. For, to exercise Benevolence, is to enjoy the most refined and exalted Pleasure ; such as makes the nearest Approaches to the Felicity of the eternal Mind ; who, as the Scrip-

ture

ture most beautifully speaks, *has Pleasure in the Prosperity of his Servants.*

But while We are seated on this Mount, our Situation remind Us of (what You just now mentioned) the grand Conference relating to the Death of *CHRIST*:—A Business, which you have indeed accounted for; but in a Manner, that may be thought not the *most honourable* to the divine Attributes.

Asp. I have represented it, as a *Ransom* for our Souls, and a *Sacrifice* for our Sins. If You disapprove my Account, be pleased to favour me with your own.—For what Purpose, according to *your* Opinion, did that ever blessed Person die?

Ther. To confirm the *Truth* of his Doctrine, and leave Us a *Pattern* of the most perfect Resignation.

Asp. These are truly noble Ends; yet these, though noble, were not the *only*, were not the *principal* Designs of that great Event. For upon such a Supposition, where is the *Difference* between the Death of *CHRIST*, and the Death of the Martyrs? *They* confirmed the Truth of the Gospel. In *their* Sufferings was Goodness and Obedience; the same in *Quality*, though not in *Degree*.—Upon such a Supposition, what *Benefit* could the antient Patriarchs receive from the REDEEMER? Since None could be improved by the Example of his Patience, or the Pattern of his Obedience, till they were *actually exhibited*.—Or how could *CHRIST* be stiled, *The Lamb slain from the Foundation of the World**? The Advantages of whose Death, commenced from the very Beginning, as they will be prolonged even to the End of Time.

Not to depend on consequential Arguments, let Us hear the *express* Declaration of our divine Master Himself: *This is my Blood, which is shed*—for what? To give Credibility to my Gospel, or yield an Example of intire Resignation? Rather—for the *Remission of Sins*†. Will any One attempt to make the Remission of Sins, and the Proposal of a Pattern, or the Ratification of a Doctrine, *synonymous* Terms.—
They,

* Rev. xiii. 8.

† Matth. xxvi. 28.

They, who can *torture* and *transmute* the genuine Sense of Words, at this extraordinary Rate, may *metamorphose* any Expression into any Meaning.

If then We would consider our LORD's Death, in its *due Amplitude* ; We must consider it, both as a Pattern of Piety, and as a Ransom for Sinners. We must neither separate nor confound these very distinct, yet very consistent Effects.

Ther. Is it not inconsistent with the acknowledged Principles of Justice, That the *Innocent* should be punished, instead of the *Offender* ?

Asp. If the innocent Person has an *absolute* Power over his own Life ; *willingly* substitutes it in the Place of the Guilty ; and, by his vicarious Sufferings, fully answers all the Purposes of a *righteous* Government ;— In this Case, which was the Case with our LORD, I see not the least Repugnancy to the Rules of Justice.

The Bible, that authentic Transcript of the Counsels of Heaven, avows ; and by avowing, vindicates the Practice. *The LORD hath laid on Him the Iniquity of Us all* * : made all our Crimes to fall upon the unblameable

* *Isai. liii. 6. בַּפְּנֵי עָוֹן* *made to meet; or fall upon, in an hostile, vindictive Manner ; with a Design to take Vengeance, or inflict Death ; as an armed Man falls upon his Enemy, or a fierce Lion on the helpless Lamb. This is by far the most usual Signification of the Phrase.*

I could not observe, without Surprise and Sorrow, the late Attempt of a learned Writer, to interpret away the Force and Spirit of this Text. He says, “ the Word We translate *hath laid*, is “ the same that We render *meet*, *Exod. xxiii. 4. If Thou meet “ thine Enemies Ox or As going astray, thou shalt surely bring them “ back to Him again.* And the Meaning is, By Him the LORD “ *hath caused to meet*, and *stop the Iniquities* of Us all, wherein “ we have wandered from Him.”

Not to inquire, whether the *Language* be consonant to Grammar ; I shall only examine, whether the *Sense* is suitable to Scripture. According to this Gentleman's Idea, the Prophet's Doctrine is as follows ; “ Our Sins were running away, like a stray “ Sheep, or like a wandering Ox. But they were met by “ *CHRIST* ; who graciously turned them back, and restored “ them to their rightful Owner.”—To avoid this glaring Impropriety, our Author has added a kind of Salvo ; “ to turn *Us* back “ to Himself, who is the Shepherd of Souls.” But this is to de-

unblameable REDEEMER, and take that Vengeance of Him, which was due to Us.—*He suffered*, says the Apostle, *the Just for the Unjust* * ; *that*, by expiating our Guilt, *He might bring Us to GOD*—now, to his gracious Favour—hereafter to his blissful Presence.

You will permit me to add a Passage, from our common Favourite *Milton*. Because, it is no less beautiful in itself, than it is pertinent to the Occasion.—*Messiah*, pleading in behalf of fallen Men, thus addresses his Almighty FATHER ;

—————*Man, dead in Sins and lost,
Atonement for his Himself, or Offering meet
(Indebted and undone !) hath none to bring.
Behold me then ! Me for Him ! Life for Life
I offer. On me let thine Anger fall. ∴
Account me Man : I for his Sake will leave
Thy Bosom, and this Glory next to Thee
Freely put off ; and for Him lastly die
Well-pleas'd ; on me let Death wreak all his Rage †.*

Ther. The fine Imagination of a Poet, will hardly pass for a decisive Argument. When we are searching after Truth, We must attend to the *Dictates* of Reason, not follow the *Vagaries* of Fancy. And Reason, *Aspasio*, remonstrates against your Notion of a vicarious Sacrifice. Reason ! that primary Guide, and final Test, both in discovering and determining the Sense of Scripture.

Asp.

part from the Prophet's Subject ; who is speaking not of *Us*, but of *our Iniquities*. This is to depart from the Tenour of *his own* Explication : If He adheres to the Clue, which He borrows from the Book of *Exodus*, what I have represented, is the unavoidable Consequence.

See ! to what wretched Shifts, dishonourable to the Word of GOD, and even to the Art of Criticism, *They* must have recourse ! Who refuse to acknowledge, the *real Substitution* of *CHRIST* in our Stead, and the *proper Atonement* made by his Death.

* 1 Pet. iii. 18.

† *Milton*, B. III. 233.

Asp. Suppose You then, my dear *Theron*, that None are in possession of Reason, but the Pupils of *Socinus*, and the Zealots for *Deism*? Or, that none make use of Reason, in their religious Inquiries, but Men of this Mould?

*Wrong not the Christian, think not Reason yours ;
'Tis Reason our great Master holds so dear ;
'Tis Reason's injur'd Rights his Wrath resents ;
'Tis Reason's Voice obey'd his Glories crown.
Through Reason's Wounds alone thy Faith can die *.*

Poets, You see, are far from disclaiming Reason. Equally far is Christianity from discarding the *sober*, the *sanctified* Use of this noble Faculty. When Reason is under the Influence and Direction of the *divine* SPIRIT, We have the same high Opinion of Excellence, as You. And, when thus regulated, We have, I am persuaded, the Sanction of her Authority, for all our Sentiments.

Reason, as She operated in the Sages of the Heathen World, instead of rejecting, approved and adopted this very Scheme. Approved it, even under the Disadvantage of a *mutilated, disfigured*, and extremely *impaired* Form. The current Language of the Classic Authors, and almost every Historian of *Greece* and *Rome*, are Vouchers for the Truth of this Observation †.—As the *Gentiles* were unanimous in the Custom of offering Sacrifices, and equally unanimous in supposing their vicarious Nature, so also are the *Jewish* Writers.

Ther. What Man of Sense, pays any Regard to the *Jewish* Writers? *Legendary* they are, and *extravagant* to the last Degree. Dotards I might call them, rather than Writers.

Asp. They are, I believe, extravagant enough in their Comments upon Scripture. But they relate, with sufficient Exactness and Fidelity, the *prevailing Belief* of their Nation. In this Case, their Testimony is as unexceptionable ; as in the other, their Notions are chimerical.—Now, had it been a mistaken Belief, surely our blessed LORD, that *infallible* Judge, and *impartial* Reprover, would have testified his

* Night-Thoughts, N^o. IV.

† See the Note, in Dialogue III. pag. 76, 77.

his Disapprobation of it. Surely his Disciples, who were actuated by the *unerring* and *undaunted* Spirit of their Master, would have entered their Protest against it. Surely St. *Paul*, in his Epistle to that very People, and in his Treatise on that very Subject, would have set Himself to *rectify* such an Error; and have weeded out the Tares, before He sowed the good Seed. But there is not the least Hint of this Kind, in all the Discourses of our SAVIOUR, or in all the Writings of his Apostles.

They speak to a People, who were accustomed to look upon their Sacrifices, as piacular Oblations *, and a typical Expiation of Guilt. They speak of our REDEEMER's Crucifixion, and the Benefits of his Death, in the sacrificial Terms, that were of *current Use*, and *established Signification*. If therefore the popular Opinion was improper, their Manner of Expression and Address, must be calculated rather to authenticate Error, than to propagate Truth.--- So that, I think, even the *Silence* of the inspired Penmen on this Occasion; is but little inferior to a *loud Attestation*. Did they only say nothing *against* the Doctrine of Satisfaction by Sacrifice; it would, in effect, and Circumstances considered, be saying Abundance *for* it. ---But they are very copious and explicit upon the Point.

Ther. Where are they so copious? If You have such a Heap of their Allegations, it will be easy to pick out a few, and give Us a Specimen.

Asp. It is as easy, *Iheron*, as it is delightful.---*Messiah shall be cut off*, says the Prophet *Daniel*, *but not for Himself* †.---For whom then, and for What? *Isaiab* informs Us concerning both: *For the Transgression of my People was He stricken* ‡. ---Because, this is an Article of the last Importance, it is repeated, it is confirmed, it is explained, with the most remarkable Particularity: *He was wounded for our Transgressions; He was bruised for our Iniquities; the Chastisement of our Peace was upon Him,*

* This, I think, is incontestably proved by *Outram*, in his Treatise *De Sacrificiis*.

† Dan. ix. 26.

‡ Isai. liii. 8.

*Him, and with his Stripes We are healed**.---Our LORD himself asserts the same Truth in the very same Style; *I am the good Shepherd, and lay down my Life for the Sheep*†.---St. Paul, in a *Multitude* of Passages, set his Seal to this momentous Doctrine.---St. Peter maintains it, in very forcible Words; *Who his own Self bare our Sins in his own Body on the Tree* ‡.

The sacred Writers not only assert this capital Article, but use every Diversity of Speech, in order to give it the *fullest* Evidence, and the *strongest* Establishment. *He made Reconciliation for the Sins of the People* §. *JESUS CHRIST the Righteous is the Propitiation for our Sins* ||. *He loved Us, and washed Us from our Sins in his own Blood* **. *He was made Sin for Us, though He knew no Sin* ††.

Ther. No body makes any Objection to these Texts. But the Sense, the *true Sense* of such Phrases, is the Thing in Question.

Asp. What You call *the Question*, to me appears so plain, as not to want a Decision, or admit of a Doubt.

However, since You seem to demand a *critical Scrutiny*, it will not be thought pedantic, if I make an Observation or two upon the original Languages.---*The Chastisement of our Peace, מוסר שלמו* The Punishment necessary to obtain our Peace, *was inflicted upon Him*. The Prophet considers GOD, under the Character of a righteous Judge, insisting upon Satisfaction to his violated Law. Which being thoroughly made, his Justice acquiesces; He has no farther Demand; but is reconciled to the Offender. Thus *Peace is made by the Blood of the Cross* ‡‡.

He

* Isai. liii. 5.

† John x. 15.

‡ 1 Pet. ii. 24. Very forcible Words indeed. —Or—*αυτος—αμαρτιας ημων—εν τω σωματι αυτου*—He bare—*Himself* bare—*our Sins*—in *his own* Body. Particularly intended, One wou'd imagine, to make the Article of our LORD's vicarious Sufferings, *clear* beyond all Misapprehension, and *sure* beyond all Doubt.

§ Heb. ii. 17.

|| 1 John ii. 2.

** Rev. i. 5.

†† 2 Cor. v. 21.

‡‡ Col. i. 20.

He gave Himself ἀντιλῦτρον ὑπερ *, *A Ransom for All*. If this does not imply the Notion of *vicarious*, I very much question, whether Language itself can express it — Λύτρον, is a *Ransom*; which conveys a vicarious Sense, in its most common and authorized Acceptation. — Ἀντι, which is equivalent to *instead*, still more fully ascertains and strengthens the Idea — Ὑπερ, which is translated *for*, and denotes a Substitution of One in the Place of Another †; this added to all, renders the Expression as determinate and emphatical for the Purpose, as Words can possibly be.

Shall I argue from a more obvious Topic, which has no such Dependence on the precise Significancy of the Original? — *Surely*, says the Prophet: He speaks with Vehemence, as of an Affair that is very *weighty*; He speaks with Confidence, as of a Fact that is *very certain*: He hath borne our Grievs, and carried our Sorrows ‡. What can this mean, but He hath taken upon Himself *that* Affliction, and *those* Miseries, which properly belonged to Us?—Let us read on, and this Meaning will present itself, in the clearest View. *We did esteem Him stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted*: We took Him for a real Malefactor, and thought that He

* 1 Tim. ii. 6.

† Δεομεθα ὑπερ Χριστοῦ, *We beseech You in CHRIST's stead*. 1 Cor. v. 20.—ἵνα ὑπερ σου διακονῇ μοι, *That in thy stead He might have ministered unto me*. Philem. ver. 13. As I was considering the Force of this Argument, a certain four looking gloomy Person came in my way; and desired, I would introduce Him to Theron and Aspasio, as an Evidence for fixing the Signification of the Preposition ὑπερ, when spoken of the Death of CHRIST.—I must confess, I did not like his Appearance, at the first Sight; and do not know, that any body has made use of Him, on this Occasion. But St. John stood by, and said; “Introduce Him. “He prophesies in this Instance.”—Perhaps, the Reader is at a loss to guess, *Whom* I mean. To keep Him no longer in Silence, I mean Caiaphas the High Priest.—He bears the following Testimony; IT IS EXPEDIENT FOR US, THAT ONE MAN DIE FOR THE PEOPLE, AND THAT THE WHOLE NATION PERISH NOT.—Now, as to *perish* signifies, not only to die, but to die miserably; if One dies for all, that all may not die miserably, I cannot but think, He must die *INSTEAD* of All. See John xi. 50.

‡ Isai. liii. 4.

He was punished for *his own* Misconduct. In opposition to which injurious and false Surmise, it is added ; *But He was wounded for our Transgressions, He was bruised for our Iniquities.* — May I not here borrow the Prophet's Language, and say with an Air of certainty ? Surely ? this is the plainest Proof in the World, that our Sins were the meritorious Cause of *CHRIST*'s Sufferings. And if our Sins were the meritorious Cause of his Sufferings, our Guilt must be charged upon Him, and punished in Him.

The Apostle affirms, That *CHRIST* has delivered Us from the Curse of the Law*. How ? By taking our Place, and enduring what We deserved. Or, as He Himself speaks, to the same Effect, but in a much more emphatical Manner, *by being made a Curse for Us.* Does not this evidently denote both a Commutation of Persons, and a Translation of Punishment ? He suffered, who was innocent ; not *We*, who are guilty. — He also suffered *that very* Sentence, which the Law denounced on Us. For, it is written, *Cursed is every One that continueth not in all Things* † ; to this We were obnoxious. It is written again, *Cursed is every One that hangeth on a Tree* ‡ ; to this *CHRIST* submitted. And if *CHRIST* endured *that very* Curse, which We deserved : if, by this means, He delivered Us from all Malediction : either this must be suffering in *our Stead* || or else Nothing can be called by that Name.

Shall I descend lower still, and refer our Point to the Determination of *illiterate* Men ?---Ask any of

* Cal. iii. 13.

† Deut. xxvii. 26.

‡ Gal. iii. 13.

|| “ This, says Dr. *Scutb*, in his smart Manner, is spoke so plain and loud by the universal Voice of the whole Book of GOD, that Scripture must be *crucified* as well as *CHRIST*, to give any other tolerable Sense of the Expressions.” — And not Scripture only, but the common Import of Language. What says *Mexentius* ? When his Son, interposing in his Behalf, is slain by *Aeneas*.

———— *Pro me hostili paterer succedere Dextræ
Quem genui ? Tuane hæc Genitur per Vulnera serwor ?
Morte tuâ vivens ?*

Here,

of your Tenants, What Ideas arise in *their* Minds, upon the Perusal of the afore-mentioned Texts? --- I dare venture to foretel, that, artless and unimproved as their Understandings are, they will not *hesitate* for an Answer. They will neither complain of Obscurity, nor ask the Assistance of Learning. But will *immediately* discern in all these Passages, a gracious REDEEMER suffering in their Stead; and, by his bitter, but expiatory Passion, procuring the Pardon of all their Sins.---Nay farther; as they are not accustomed to the Finesses of Criticism, I apprehend, they will be at a loss to conceive, how it is *possible* to understand such Passages in *any other* Sense.

Say not, this is an improper Appeal; or these are *incompetent* Judges. The Scriptures were written for *their* Edification; not to exercise the Ingenuity of subtle Disputants, but to instruct the *meanest* of Mankind in the Way of Salvation. Therefore, on fundamental Articles, We may assuredly conclude, The Expression will be easy, and the Doctrine perspicuous: so that *He who runs may read, and the Way faring-Men, though Fools*, shall not err therein.*---And, though I am far from undervaluing the Aids of Literature, yet, upon those momentous Subjects, which are inseparably connected with our eternal Felicity, I cannot but re-

Here, the Father is *saved* by his Son's Wounds; *lives* by his Son's Death. How, and in what Manner? By a Substitution of One instead of the Other; by the Son's *suffering*, what must otherwise have *fallen* upon the Father.---Should the Socinian Interpreters try the same Experiment on these Lines of *Virgil*, which they make upon Passages of a parallel Signification in Scripture; is there a Critic in the whole World, that *could approve*, that *could endure*, such flagrant Violations of Grammar, Sense, and Taste?---Yet I believe, there is no sincere Christian, but would readily and gratefully say;

— *Pro me ultrici succedere Dextræ*
Dignasti. Tua CHRISTE DEUS per Vulnera serwor;
Morte tuâ vivens.

* Itai. xxxv. 8. The Word *Fools*, seems to denote Persons of *slow* Understanding, and *dull* Apprehension; as *Luke* xxiv. 25. Or else it signifies Those, who, for want of a cultivated Education and the Ornaments of Literature, are *accounted* Fools by the Sons of Science; as *1 Cor.* i. 27.

98 D I A L O G U E IV.

gard the *common Sense* of plain, serious, humble Christians, as the very *best* of Critics.

Ther. It has been said by a learned Critic, That vicarious Punishment or Suffering, gives us too low Ideas of the Son of GOD, as it sinks them to the Pain and Suffering of a Malefactor, the very meanest Idea We can have of them.

Asp. The Idea is plainly suggested by the Word of Prophecy, and supported by the Attestation of sacred History. In *that* it was foretold, and in *this* it is recorded, That *He was numbered with Transgressors* *. ---To this Purpose speaks St. Paul, though somewhat more cautiously than your Critic. He was made, not indeed *sinful* Flesh, but in the *Likeness* of sinful Flesh, and, though perfectly innocent, was left to endure the Vengeance due to the vilest Miscreant.

Yes, my dear *Theron* ; that glorious Person, whom the highest Angel adores, *suffered, as if He had been the Criminal, the Pain and Punishment, which We, or equivalent to that which We, the real Criminals, should have suffered.*---If, to consider this, gives Us a *low* Idea ; if to suffer this, was a *deep* Abasement ; how exceedingly *high*, and how immensely *grand*, is the Goodness and the Grace manifested therein ! The lower You draw the Arrow on the String, the loftier Flight it makes in the Sky. And the greater our LORD's Humiliation for Us, the more wonderful and adorable his Love to Us.

Ther. As there cannot be a vicarious Guilt, or as no One can be guilty in the Stead of Another, so there cannot be a vicarious Punishment, or no One can be punished instead of Another. Because Punishment, in its very Nature, connotes Guilt in the Person who bears it.

Asp. If you mean by Guilt, the *Consciousness* of having committed a Sin, and the internal *Defilement* consequent upon it, We never suppose *such* a vicarious Guilt. It is never affirmed that CHRIST was stung with the Remorse, or stained with the Pollution, of the adulterous *David*, the perfidious *Peter*, and the perse-

* Mai. liii. 12. Luke xxii. 37.

DIALOGUE IV. 99

persecuting *Saul*, But, that he was *treated* by the righteous GOD, *as if* He had perpetrated these, and all the Crimes of all Believers, either in the past or succeeding Ages.

If by Guilt You mean, The *Charge* of a criminal Action, and The *Obligation* to suffer Penalty, your Assertion is nothing more than begging the Question. It nakedly affirms the very Thing in Debate. And bare Affirmations, unsupported by Evidence are seldom admitted as decisive Proofs.---We, on the other Hand affirm, That all our criminal Actions were charged upon *CHRIST*; and that he suffered the Punishment which they deserved. The former of these, is not so properly called vicarious Guilt, as *real Guilt*, contracted by One, imputed to Another. The latter We readily allow to be *vicarious Punishment*, sustained in their Stead, whose Guilt was imputed.---For both these Points, We have the Authority of Truth itself, speaking in the Scriptures. *The LORD laid on Him the Iniquities of Us all*; here is the Imputation. *CHRIST has redeemed Us from the Course of the Law, being made a Curse for Us*; here is the vicarious Punishment. And You know, *to what Casuists* We submit the Interpretation of these Texts.---common Sense, and an honest Heart.

Ther. Is not this *shocking* to suppose? *horrid* to affirm? If Guilt was really imputed to *CHRIST*, then Punishment was his due---Justice might insist upon it---And He could not escape it.

Asp. To suppose this, is so far from shocking my Apprehension, that it appears, even on *your own* Principles, right and necessary.---*Right*, because Punishment, as You yourself have declared, always connotes Guilt; I would add, either contracted, or at least imputed. And indeed the Sufferings of *CHRIST* could not be of a *penal* Nature, unless He endured them as under a Charge of Guilt.---It is *necessary* to suppose this, otherwise how will You vindicate the Justice of GOD? He bid his Sword awake, and smite * the blessed *JESUS*. But shall the Judge of all the Earth *do wrong*?

F 2

Shall

Shall He smite, where there is nothing but Innocence? No Guilt, either personal or imputed! That be far from Him! The Thought be far from Us!

Whereas, upon this Supposition, it becomes a *just* and *righteous* Thing, that GOD should inflict, and that *CHRIST* should sustain, the most rigorous Punishment. And I do not know, but this might be the Cause of our LORD's Silence, when He was accused at *Pilate's* Bar and at *Herod's* Judgment-Seat. It is probable, He considered Himself as standing before a higher Tribunal; and responsible to eternal Justice, for the criminal Actions of all his People. In this Situation, and in this Capacity, clear himself of *personal* Demerit He could; clear himself of *imputed* Guilt He could not. *Therefore* He was dumb; He opened not his Mouth. For though, as the *Son* of the *most high* GOD, Glory and Immortality were his undoubted Right; yet, as the *Surety* for *sinful Men*, Tribulation and Death were his condign Portion.

And why should this be thought shocking? It is not the *least Derogation* to the transcendent Excellency of *CHRIST*. It casts not the *least Stain* on the unspotted Sanctity, either of his Nature, or his Life. --- To bear Sin, as a *voluntary* Surety, is infinitely different from committing it, as an *actual* Transgressor. To say, that *CHRIST* was punished for any Irregularity of *his own*, would be false, impious, and horrid. To say, that He was charged with *our* Guilt, and endured the Punishment due---in the plain and full Sense of the Word *due*---to our Sins; is so far from being injurious to his Dignity, that it pays the *proper* Honour to his *mediatorial* Undertaking. It pays Him the Honour of---the highest Obedience to his FATHER's Will---the deepest Humiliation of his own illustrious Person---and the most boundless Benevolence to Mankind.

Ther. GOD is Love, *Aspasio*, all Love. Whereas You would.---

Asp. I do not often interrupt my Friend's Discourse. But I cannot forbear interposing a Query, on this Occasion.---Is there then no *just Displeasure* in the

DEITY?

DEITY? What meaneth that solemn Denunciation of the supreme Lawgiver? *The Anger of the LORD shall smoke against that Man* *.——What meaneth that awful Declaration of the Apostle? *The Wrath of GOD is revealed from Heaven, upon all Ungodliness and Unrighteousness of Men* †.——Or, in what Sense are We to explain that alarming Interrogatory of the Prophet? *Who can stand before his Indignation? And who can abide in the Fierceness of his Anger* ‡?——Whence could those avenging Visitations proceed, which destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah with a Tempest of Fire ¶? Which swept away so many Thousands of the polluted Israelites with a raging Pestilence §? And consigned over so many Millions ¶ of rebellious Angels to Chains of Darkness?

Surely, *Theron*, if there be any determinate Signification in Language; if any Lesson to be learnt from the most tremendous Judgments; it is, That the LORD, though free from all the *Discomposure* of Passion, is nevertheless angry with the Wicked **; and will make impenitent Sinners feel the Effects of his wise and holy Indignation.

Ther. Does not your Doctrine represent the all-merciful GOD, as a *rigorous* Being? Who, when once displeased, will hardly be pacified? Whereas, the LORD himself declares by his Prophet; *Fury is not in me*.——Men of satyrical Wit would be apt to insinuate, That You had mistaken JEHOVAH for *Moloch*; and

F 3

was

* Deut. xxix. 20.

† Rom. i. 18.

‡ Nah. i. 6.

¶ Gen. xix. 24.

§ Num. xxv. 9.

¶ *Millions*——The Number of the fallen Angels is no where specified; and the Veil sits deep upon the spiritual World; so that We can see no farther, than Revelation has discovered. Yet, I think, there is sufficient Room to ground a *Conjecture*, upon the Reply which one of those execrable Apostates made to our LORD. *My Name is Legion*; a Word signifying a great Multitude, five or six Thousand. Therefore he adds, *for We are many*. If so many were employed in tempting and tormenting a single Person, what Armies, what Myriads of those invisible Enemies, must exist through universal Nature!——It is an awful Thought; and it should make Us fly to our divine Protector, and Almighty Deliverer. See Mark v. 9. and 2 Pet. ii. 4.

** Psal. vii. 11. Deut. ix. 8.

was erecting a Christian Church in the Valley of the Son of *Hinnom*.

Asp. We take our Representations of GOD, not from the vain Conjectures of Men, but from the Records of infallible Truth. There he is described, as a *righteous* GOD; a *jealous* † GOD; and, to Christ-less Sinners, a *consuming Fire* ‡. Though wonderfully condescending, yet transcendently majestic. Infomuch, that none of the fallen Race are admitted to approach his Throne, but only through the Intervention of a great MEDIATOR ||; and, without shedding of Blood, even the Blood of a Person higher than the Heavens, there is *no Remission* § for any of their Offences.

Yet in all this, there is not the least Tincture of *Fury*. Fury implies an immoderate Degree of Resentment, that will hearken to no Reasoning, and accede to no Terms. The Gospel Account proves, even to a Demonstration, that this has no Place in the divine Nature. So far from it that GOD, though highly provoked, has *provided* an Attonement—has made *Overtures* of Reconciliation to his disobedient Creatures—has even *befought* * a guilty World, to accept of Forgiveness. So that the Insinuations of your satyrical Gentlemen, are as egregiously mistaken, as they are shockingly worded.

You

† Exod. xx. 5.

‡ Heb. xii. 29.

|| John xiv. 6.

§ Heb. ix. 22. Heb. vii. 26.

* 2 Cor. v. 20. It was an Instance of singular Compassion in the blessed GOD, that, though offended with *Job's* Friends, He *admitted* of a Sacrifice, and *directed* them to an Intercessor; both typical of *CHRIST JESUS*. But what *unparalleled* Condescension, and *divinely* tender Mercies, are displayed in this Verse! *As though GOD did beseech You by Us: We pray You in CHRIST's stead, be ye reconciled to GOD.*—Did the Judge ever beseech a condemned Criminal, to accept of Pardon? Does the Creditor beseech a ruined Debtor, to receive an Acquittance in full? Yet our *Almighty* LORD, and our *eternal* Judge, not only vouchsafes to offer these Blessings, but invites Us—intreats Us—with the most *tender* and *repeated* Importunity solicits Us—not to reject them!

DIALOGUE IV. 103

You are a Man of *Sense*, *Theron*; and esteem that Character, far above the idle Reputation of a *Wit*. As such, let me ask You seriously; Is it not for the Honour of the divine Majesty, to exercise *Justice*, as well as *Mercy*? Always to pardon, and never to punish, would be *Tameness*, rather than *Benignity*; a Renunciation of Holiness, rather than a Display of Goodness. — Or, can it be right in Us, so extravagantly to magnify the *amiable*, as to depreciate, nay even annihilate, the *awful* Attributes of the DEITY? — This, says a Poet, is the Theology, not of Christians, but of Infidels?

*Who set at Odds Heaven's jarring Attributes,
And with one Excellence another wound;
Maim Heaven's Perfection, break its equal Beams,
Bid Mercy triumph over——GOD himself,
Undeified by their opprobrious Praise:
A GOD all Mercy is a GOD unjust *.*

Ther. But We have lately been told, that the pardoning Grace of the Lawgiver is not obstructed by any Demands of Law and Justice. For He can set them aside.

Asp. What! Set aside a Law, that is holy, righteous, and good! — Set aside a Justice, that is eternal, inflexible, and infinite! — *St. Paul* gives a very different Solution of this Difficulty. He tells Us — not that GOD *set aside* his Law and his Justice — but that He *set forth* the blessed JESUS for a Propitiation, through Faith in his Blood: with this express Design, that He might declare his Righteousness †; might demonstrate, not only his Clemency, but his Justice; even that vindictive Justice, whose essential Character and principal Office is, to punish Sin.

This seems to be the Import of the Word *Righteousness*, in the present Connexion. And, I think, more than seems, if We consult the following Verse: To declare, I say, at this Time his Righteousness; that

F 4

He

* Night-Thoughts, No. IV. † Rom. iii. 25.

He might be just *, evidence Himself to be strictly and inviolably righteous, in the Administration of his Government; even while He is *the* all-forgiving gracious *Justifier* of the Sinner *that believeth in JESUS*.

—According to this Plan, *Mercy and Truth meet together, Righteousness and Peace kiss each other* †: all the Attributes harmonize; every Attribute is glorified; and not one superceded, no, nor so much as clouded.

Ther. If some are verging to one Extreme, are not you inclining to the other Our Ears tingle, and our Blood runs chill, at the very Thoughts of so *severe* a Vengeance, executed on an Object so *worthy* and *illustrious*.—Besides, how can We suppose, that the beneficent CREATOR and PRESERVER of Men, should take *Pleasure* in the Sufferings of the most unblameable Person, that ever existed? Especially, since He himself has made this tender Declaration; *I will have Mercy, and not Sacrifice* ‡.

Asp. A tender Declaration indeed it is: signifying, that GOD is better pleased with the Duties of Humanity and Charity, than with the most costly and pompous Train of Sacrifices. Nay that he will even *dispense* with the Observance of *His own* ceremonial Institutions, when they interfere with our Exercise of Beneficence *One to another*. Thus resigning (so admirable is his Goodness!) the Services due to Himself, for the Benefit and Comfort of his Creatures.—But all this has no Sort of Relation to the Sacrifice of CHRIST: which was the most noble, and the most acceptable Oblation, ever made to the King of Heaven.

We are assured by a Prophet, That *it pleased the LORD*

* Rom. iii. 26. *That He might be just, and the Justifier of the Ungodly.* The Attribute of Justice *must* be preserved inviolate. And inviolate it is preserved, if there was a real Infliction of Punishment on our SAVIOUR. Nothing else can thoroughly clear up this great Evangelical Paradox.

† Psal. lxxxv. 10.

‡ Matt. ix. 13.

DIALOGUE IV. 105

LORD to bruise his holy Child *JESUS*. GOD not only gave up his Son to Sufferings, but gave Him up with a divine Complacency *.—In like manner, the blessed *JESUS* addressed Himself to the dreadful Task, not only without Reluctance, but with the utmost Alacrity †. *I delight to do thy Will*, was the Language of his Soul.—Should You ask; How could the SON take Pleasure in undergoing, or the FATHER in inflicting, such amazing Sorrows? No otherwise, than upon Account of those grand and everlasting Advantages, which were to result from them.

A severe Vengeance, You say, such as makes our Ears to tingle.—This is the very Thing intended, to *awaken* and *alarm* presumptuous Offenders. That they “may hear, and fear, and do no more wickedly.” It is such a Method of dispensing Grace, as secures the utmost Reverence to the divine Commands. Strikes

* *Divine Complacency*.—This is the Idea included in the original Word, *צפח* Isai. liii. 10. It corresponds with the Phrase, used by the Voice from Heaven, *ευδοκῆσαι*, Matt. iii. 17. Or it may be very exactly translated by St. Paul’s beautiful Expression, *ευαρίσεται*, Heb. xiii. 16.—And therefore the great JEHOVAH is said to smell a sweet Savour, or a *Savour of Rest* *ריח ניחוח* in those Sacrifices, which prefigured the crucified *JESUS*, Gen. viii. 21.

† *Utmost Alacrity*.—There is no *Inconsistency* between this Assertion, and our LORD’s Supplication; *Father, if it be possible, let this Cup pass from me: nevertheless, not my Will, but thine be done*. Such a deprecatory Request, put up with so much Earnestness, yet with so much submission, only shews the *extreme Severity* of our REDEEMER’s Anguish, and the *prodigious Weight* of his Woes. And this indeed it shews, beyond the Power of Description.—His ardent Love to Mankind, and his fervent Zeal for his FATHER’s Glory, made Him *desire* these Sufferings. His invincible Resolution and unequalled Magnanimity, emboldened Him not to decline, but to *meet* them. Yet they were so great, so terrible, that his Nature, being *human*, could not but *recoil* a little, and be *startled* at their Approach; and, had it not been *divine* also, must inevitably have *sunk* under the Load.

the deepest Terror, even while it cherishes the brightest Hope — strikes the *deepest Terror*, on every persevering Sinner — cherishes the *brightest Hope*, in every penitent Transgressor.

Ther. If one of my Servants had affronted or injured me ; I should, upon his *submissive Acknowledgment*, forgive his Fault, and not insist upon Satisfaction for the Wrong. Will You make the Father of Compassions, *more inexorable* in his Nature, *more rigid* in his Demands, than a human Master ?

Asp. When You have a Servant, that owes his Being to your Power ; that has received innumerable Benefits from your Bounty ; yet has offered You innumerable Affronts, all attended with the most aggravating Circumstances, and all in *Defiance* of the *most righteous* Threatenings. — When You are possessed of infinite Majesty, and unspotted Sanctity ; when Truth inviolable, and Justice inflexible, are essential to your Character. — Then, *Theron*, the Parallel will hold Good ; and *Your* Conduct shall be a Pattern for the Procedure of J E H O V A H.

Till then, You and I must be willing to forgive, because G O D has made it our *bounden* Duty ; and because We have *incomparably more* to be forgiven by the Judge of the World, than We can possibly remit to our Fellow-creatures. — In the mean Time, You will allow the great G O D, who is *glorious in Holiness*, to communicate his heavenly Favours, in a Manner becoming Himself. On such *august* and *honourable* Terms, as shall maintain the Rights of his universal Government, and manifest the Glory of his adorable Attributes.

Ther. Might not G O D have cancelled our Transgressions, and received fallen Men into his Favour, without any Propitiation ? — To deny this, would be to limit the HOLY ONE of *Israel* ; and impose Conditions on that uncontrollable Sovereign, *Who giveth not Account of any of his Matters*.

Asp. We need not embarrass Ourselves, by entering upon Inquiries, which may seem to lie beyond the Limits of human Understanding. Enough for Us to
know,

know, that this Propitiation was *absolutely necessary* with regard to the first Covenant. For as GOD had solemnly declared, *In the Day thou eatest thereof, dying thou shalt die* ; his Truth and Justice stood engaged to make the Threatening good. And no second *Adam* could restore the first, but by taking this Curse upon Himself.

*Die Man, or Justice must ; unless for Him
Some Other able, and as willing, pay
The rigid Satisfaction, Death for Death*.*

Therefore the divine JESUS, who lay in the Bosom of the FATHER, and knew the Counsels of Heaven, says, *The Son of Man MUST be lifted up* † on the Cross. There was a *Necessity* for his Crucifixion. Because, this was *stipulated* in the Covenant of Peace, made between the FATHER and the SON.—Because it was expressly *foretold* by the ancient Prophets (and the Scripture cannot be broken) that the REDEEMER *should be cut off out of the Land of the Living*.—Because a Variety of Types, and a Multitude of Sacrifices, *prefigured* his Death : one of the Types, pointed out the very *Manner* of his Suffering ; and *all* the Sacrifices, detached from their Dependency on this great Oblation, would have been *beggarly*

* Milton, B. III. 210.

† *John* iii. 14. *Δει τον, &c.* The same Expression is used *Luke* xxiv. 26.—Perfectly conformable to this leading Truth, is the current Language both of the Law and of the Gospel. Under the Law, GOD himself says ; *I have sworn, that the Iniquity of the House of Eli shall not be purged with Sacrifice or Offering for ever* ; that is, the Guilt shall never be expiated, *1 Sam.* iii. 14. Under the Gospel, the Apostle declares ; *If we sin wilfully, by a final Apostacy from CHRIST, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for Sins* : they are, to such Persons, and in such Circumstances, absolutely irremissible. *Heb.* x. 26.—Which Phrases are evidently connected with, and founded on, this grand Doctrine ; That the appointed, the *only* way of obtaining Pardon from the righteous GOD, is, by the Intervention of an expiatory Sacrifice.

beggarly Elements,—mere unavailing empty Ceremonies.

I apprehend, it is no Limitation of the great GOD, to suppose Him incapable of acting otherwise, than in *perfect* and *perpetual* Consistency with Himself.—Neither is it any Infringement on his absolute Sovereignty, that He cannot but order all Affairs *for the Honour* of his Justice, his Fidelity, and each of his exalted Perfections.—This is the very Thing, which the sacred Writers express, in their plain but strong Language; *GOD who cannot lie* *: *He cannot deny Himself* †.

Ther. GOD is often said to *forgive* our Sins; particularly, in that sublime Passage where He proclaims his Name to *Moses*. *The LORD, the LORD GOD, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, abundant in Goodness and Truth; keeping Mercy for Thousands, forgiving Iniquity, Transgression, and Sin*. Now, Pardon is a *free* Thing. Freeness is implied in the very Nature of Forgiveness. Take away the former, and You destroy the latter.—If an *Equivalent* be given, Pardon is no longer Pardon, but a *Purchase*, Forgiveness ceases to be an Act of Grace, and becomes the Payment of a Debt.

App. The Text You quote is truly sublime, and equally comfortable. But You forget to mention one Article of very great Moment, which closes and completes the glorious Character, Which seems added on purpose, to prevent any *wrong Apprehensions*, of the DEITY, and to guard against all *Abuse* of the Doctrine. *He will in no wise clear the Guilty* ‡.—
G O D

* Tit. i. 2.

† 2 Tim. ii. 13.

‡ *He will in no wise clear the Guilty* Exod. xxxiv. 7. This Text is not without its Difficulty, especially in the Original.—*Steuchus* interprets the Words, *Et innocens non erit sine Piaculo*: He shall not be acquitted without a *piacular* Sacrifice.—I think, they may be translated, with a little more Propriety and Exactness, thus; *Pardoning Iniquity, Transgression, and Sin*, וְנָקָה לֹא נָקָה though

DIALOGUE IV. 109

GOD will not, on *any Consideration* whatever, absolve the obstinate, persevering, irreclaimable Offender: neither will He acquit any of the guilty Race, *absolutely, unconditionally*, or without such a Satisfaction, as may repair the Honour of his injured Law.

We have Redemption through his Blood, says the Apostle, *even the Forgiveness of our Sins* *. It is Forgiveness, You see, though bought with a Price. It is Remission, though procured by Blood.—It is free, with regard to that *sovereign* Being, who pardons. For, He was under no Obligation to *admit* of a propitiatory Sacrifice; but might, without any Diminution of his Dignity, have left all Mankind to perish in their Sins.—It is free, with regard to the *obnoxious* Creatures, who are pardoned. For, it is vouchsafed, without any Satisfaction demanded at *their* Hands, or any Penalty inflicted on *their* Persons.—It is in this respect also free; that an Interest in the great Atonement is granted to Us, without the least Merit, or any *deserving* Qualifications of our own.

In all this, GOD is not only merciful, but most tenderly and immensely merciful. And will any One calumniate this adorable Method of exercising Mercy? Because Provision is also made for the Glory of GOD's Truth, GOD's Holiness, and supreme Authority?

Ther.

though not with Impunity; or rather, though He will by no means let it go unpunished, meaning *Sin*: which is the immediate *Antecedent*; is expressed in the three preceding Words; and may very properly be referred to in this Clause. Then the Sense will be, as follows; "Though GOD pardons Sin, yet it shall not go unpunished. He will certainly inflict his righteous Vengeance, and "exercise his punitive Justice, though not on the Sinner, whom "He spares; yet on the SURETY, whom He has provided."—In the same manner Cocceius renders the Passage, *Et non excens Impunitatem*; and expounds it much to the same Purpose.—We have this very Word in the same remarkable Construction, *Jer. xix. 11. וְנָקָה לֹא אֲנָקָה* which is translated, and *I will not leave thee altogether unpunished.*

* Eph. i. 7.

110 DIALOGUE IV.

Ther. Does not your Notion of a propitiatory Sacrifice, derogate from the Goodness of the Almighty FATHER; and transfer all our Obligations to the incarnate SON?

Asp. Is there not Goodness, in *allowing* a Substitute to suffer in our Stead?—Is there not still greater Goodness, in *providing* a Substitute for Us, without any Solicitation on our Part?—Is there not the very highest Exertion of Goodness, in appointing a *dear*, an *only*, an *incomparably* excellent SON for the Purpose?—This marvelous Scheme, far, very far from obscuring, most illustriously displays, the superabundant Loving-kindness of the FATHER.

GOD *so loved the World*, apostate and polluted as it was—*How* did He love it? To a Degree, unutterable by any Tongue; inconceivable by any Imagination; and only to be expressed by the infinitely precious Effects. *Loved it So, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting Life* *. And does this derogate from the Goodness of the Almighty FATHER, to give, not barely Pardon and Life, but give them through the Hands, nay, through the Wounds, the Agonies, the Death of his divinest, dearest SON?

Such Privileges, vouchsafed on any Terms, must challenge the devoutest Acknowledgments. But, when attended with this *additional* Demonstration of Favour, they are enough to *inflame* Us with Gratitude, and *transport* Us with Admiration. They not only manifest, but *commend* † the divine Love; shew it to the greatest

* John iii. 16.

† Rom. v. 8. *Ζυνισμοι*. It seems to be an Image taken from the Practice of *Tradesmen*. Who, in shewing their Goods, point out their Excellencies; and set, in the clearest Light, whatever may bespeak their Worth, or recommend them to the Purchaser.—Perhaps, it may allude to the Custom of sending, with some favourite and worthy Person, *recommendatory Letters*. In which his good Qualities are described; and every thing is mentioned, that may embellish his Character, and render his Presence acceptable. In this Sense St. Paul uses those nearly related Words, *συμφανειν, συστατικαι*, 2 Cor. iii. 1.

D I A L O G U E IV. 111

greatest Advantage, in the highest Perfection, with every Circumstance of Recommendation and Endearment.—By this means, blessed G O D, Thou hast unspeakably enhanced thy Benefits! Thou hast rendered them, though invaluable in *themselves*, exceedingly more so, by the *Manner* of conferring them!

Ther. Again in your Elevations, *Aspasio*?—The World, You know, is grown very *rational* and *inquisitive*; will admit nothing but upon clear Evidence, and full Conviction. We expect in all religious Inquiries, not the Flights of Fancy, or Flourishes of Rhetoric, but a Sobriety of Reason and Solidity of Argument.

Asp. The World, rational as it is, seems, by the Taste of the present Age, no Enemy to *Works of Fancy*. The World, therefore, may not be displeased with an affecting Story. And a Story suitable to the Occasion, just occurs to my Mind. Such as may serve to *shadow forth*, though very faintly, the surpassing Benignity and Grace of our crucified L O R D.

An *Asiatic* Queen, departing this Life, left behind Her three accomplished Sons; all arrived to Years of Maturity.—The young Princes were at Strife, who should pay the *highest Respect* to their royal Mother's Memory. To give scope for their generous Contention, they agreed to meet at the Place of her Interment; and there present the most honourable Gift, they knew how to devise, or were able to procure.—The *Eldest* came, and exhibited a sumptuous Monument; consisting of the richest Materials, and ornamented with the most exquisite Workmanship.—The *Second* ransacked all the Beauties of the blooming Creation; and offered a Garland of such admirable Colours, and delightful Odours, as had never been known before.—The *Youngest* appeared, without any pompous Preparation; having only a crystal Basin in one Hand, and a silver Bodkin in the other. As soon as he approached the Tomb, He threw open his Breast; pierced a Vein, that lay opposite to his Heart; received the Blood in the transparent Vase; and,

and, with an Air of affectionate Reverence, placed it on the beloved Parent's Monument.—The Spectators, struck with the Sight, burst into a Shout of general Applause; and immediately gave the Preference to this last Oblation.

If it was reckoned such a singular Expression of Love, to expend a *few* of those precious Drops, for the Honour of a *Parent*; O! how matchless! how ineffable was the Love of *JESUS*, in pouring out *all* his vital Blood, for the Salvation of *Enemies*!

Ther. My greatest Objection is still to come.—If *CHRIST* suffered in our Stead; He must suffer *that very* Punishment, which was due to our Iniquities. This your orthodox Divines affirm to be incomparably worse than bodily Death; to be nothing less than the everlasting Displeasure of *GOD*.

Asp. The Punishment due to our Iniquities, was Shame, Death, and the divine Wrath.

As for *Shame*—Was ever Shame, like that Shame, which our despised *REDEEMER* bore? — *Born* in a Stable, and laid in a Manger.—When an *Infant*, exiled from his own Country, and a Vagabond in the Earth.—When engaged in the Discharge of his *Ministry*, accused of the most flagitious Crimes, and branded with the blackest Names.—When brought to his *Exit*, apprehended as a Thief; condemned as a Malefactor; nay, the vilest of Malefactors, a Robber and Murderer, is preferred before Him.—His Executioners poured Contempt upon all his venerable Offices. As a *King*, they ridiculed Him, by putting a Mock-Sceptre into his Hand; and crowning Him with ragged Thorns*, instead of a royal Diadem. They villified his *prophetic* Character, by hood-winking his Eyes; striking his blessed Head;

* To have crowned the blessed *JESUS* with *Straw*, would have been a vile Insult, and treating Him like an ambitious Madman. But to crown Him with *keen, pungent, lacerating* Thorns, was adding Cruelty to their Insults; unheard of Barbarity to the most contemptuous Mockery. *Matt.* xxvii. 29.

DIALOGUE IV. 113

Head; and then asking, in cruel Derision, *Who it was that smote Him* *. They cast Reproach upon his *priestly* Undertaking, when they sharpened their Tongues with malicious Irony, and shot out those bitter Words; *He saved Others, Himself He cannot save* †. — To render his Infamy as *public*, as it was *shocking*, they hung Him on a Tree and exposed Him, defiled as He was with Spitting, and disfigured with Wounds, to the gazing Eyes and contumelious Scoffs of numberless Spectators.

If You doubt, whether *CHRIST* sustained the *Wrath* of *GOD*, let Us follow Him to the Garden of *Gethsemane*. A Scene, which I would always recollect, when I walk along the *fertile Vale*, or expatiate amidst the *flowery Garden* ‡, or enjoy the Delights of any *rural Retirement*. — He had no Remorse, to alarm his spotless Conscience; yet *Fearfulness and Trembling came upon Him*. No Violence was offered to his sacred Person; yet *a horrible Dread overwhelmed Him*. — 'Twas Night, cold Night; and though our divine *MASTER* lay prostrate upon the Earth, amidst the Fall of chilling Dews, He *sweat* — sweat *Blood* — sweat great Drops of Blood, running down in reeking Streams to the Ground. — He was anointed with the Oil of Gladness above his Fellows §. Yet so insupportable was his Affliction, that He could not forbear crying out, *My Soul is sorrowful — exceeding sorrowful — sorrowful even unto Death* ¶! — What Cause, what adequate Cause, can be assigned for this amazing Anguish? None but the Wrath of his Almighty *FATHER*. Who was now become an inexorable Judge; treated Him no longer as the Son of his Love, but as the Surety for numberless Millions of guilty Creatures.

Ther.

* Scornfully insinuating, that his sacred prophetic Office was fit for nothing, but to serve such despicable Purposes. *Matt.* xxvi. 68.

† *Matt.* xxvii. 42.

‡ Alluding to the Evangelist's Description of *Gethsemane*, who represents it as a *Garden*; and to the Etymology of the Hebrew, which signifies a *fat* or fruitful *Vally*, גֵּתֵשֶׁמֶן. *John* xviii. 1. *Matt.* xxvi. 36.

§ *Psal.* xlv. 7.

§ *Matt.* xxvi. 38.

114 DIALOGUE IV.

Ther. Was it possible, that the innocent and holy JESUS, the *dearly beloved* SON of GOD, should be an Object of his FATHER's *Wrath*?

Asp. It was not only possible, but unavoidable and necessary. *Unavoidable*, with respect to the divine Holiness; *necessary*, for the Procurement of our Redemption.—Sin was charged upon CHRIST; all the Sins of all Believers, in all Ages and Places of the World. And was it possible that the *infinitely righteous* GOD should behold such a Deluge of Iniquities, without expressing his Displeasure? Or could the LORD JESUS be punished, *truly* punished for them, without any painful Sensation of their horrid Evil, and of that tremendous Indignation which they deserved?

If this was not the Case, who can maintain the *Dignity* of his Conduct, during the Agony in the Garden? —Was there no pouring out of the divine Displeasure? Then his Behaviour in that Hour of Trial, was not equal to the Intrepidity of the three *Hebrew* Youths; who continued calm, and without the least Perturbation, while the Furnace was heated into seven-fold Rage*. —But if He was *making his Soul an Offering for Sin*, it is easy to account for the prodigious Consternation. It is not to be wondered, that his Heart, though endued with invincible Fortitude, should become like *melting Wax*. For, who knoweth the Power of that Wrath, at which the Pillars of Heaven tremble †?

Ah! *Theron*; the Vinegar and the Gall, which they gave Him to drink, were not half *so bitter*, as the Cup of his FATHER's Wrath. Yet, for our sake, He drank it off to the very Dregs.—The Nails, that pierced his Hands, and the Spear, that cleft his Heart; were not half *so sharp*, as the Frowns of his eternal FATHER's Countenance. Which, for our Consolation, He patiently submitted to bear.—He was rent with Wounds, and racked with Pain; his Bones were dislocated, and his Nerves convulsed: a thousand thorny Daggers were planted in his Temples, and

* Dan. iii. 17, 18, 19.

† Job xxvi. 11.

DIALOGUE IV. 115

and Life flowed out at ten thousand gushing Veins. Yet this, all this was *gentle*, was *lenient*, in comparison of those inexpressible Agonies, which penetrated his *very Soul*. The former, fetched not a single Complaint from his Mouth: the latter, wrung from his breaking Heart that passionate Exclamation; *My GOD! My GOD! why hast thou forsaken me?*—Astonishing Words! Surely, a *Distress*, beyond all Imagination grievous †, uttered them. Surely, the *Vengeance*, not of Men, but of Heaven itself extorted them. Every Syllable of which speaks, what the mourning Prophet describes; *Is it nothing to You, all Ye that pass by? Behold and see! if there be any Sorrow like unto my Sorrow, wherewith the LORD hath afflicted me, in the Day of his fierce Anger* *.

Here, now, is *our whole Punishment* endured; the Shame of the Cross, and the Sorrows of Death; the Suspension of the ALMIGHTY's Favour, and the terrible Sensations of his Wrath.

Ther. Be it so. Yet all this amounts to no more, than Part of Payment. For, these Sufferings were transient;

† To heighten our Idea of this Distress, the Evangelists make use of the *most forcible Words*—*ἤξατο ἐκθαμβησάσας*, He was seized with the *most alarming Astonishment*—*ἀδυνατών*, He was overwhelmed with *insupportable Dejection*—*περικλυτός*, He was *besieged* on all Sides, as it were, with an Army of *invading Sorrows*—He *wrestled*, amidst strong Cries and Tears, not only with the Malice of Men, and Rage of Devils, but with the infinitely more dreaded Indignation of GOD: He wrestled even unto an *Agony of Spirit*, *ἐν αγωνίᾳ*. All these Circumstances of Horror and Anguish, constitute what a celebrated Poet very justly styles,

A Weight of Woe, more than ten Worlds could bear!

The Critic, probably, will admire the Propriety and Beauty of this Line. Which, composed of nothing but Monosyllables, and clogged with the frequent Repetition of a cumbrous Consonant, makes the Sound remarkably apposite to the Sense.—May We all be *sacred Critics*! Have, not only a *refined Taste*, to relish such Elegancies of Composition, but an *awakened Heart*, to feel the Energy of such important Truths!

* Lam. i. 12.

116 DIALOGUE IV.

transient; *temporary* only, not *eternal*. Therefore, the main Circumstance, the most bitter Ingredient, was wanting.

Asp. In the *Estimate* of Divine Justice, and in point of penal *Satisfaction*, they were equivalent to our endless Punishment. — Had our LORD's Sufferings been the Sufferings of a mere Man, or of the most exalted Angel, I acknowledge, they could have bore no Proportion to our Demerit. But they were the Sufferings of *the Prince of Life*, and *the LORD of Glory*: before whom all Men are as Dust, and all Angels as Worms. — Let the immense Dignity of the REDEEMER's Person, be weighed against the everlasting Duration of our Punishment, and it will *counter-balance*, if not *preponderate*. His Infinitude is surely parallel to *their* Eternity.

It was *IMMANUEL*, the incarnate GOD, who *purchased the Church*, and redeemed Sinners, *with his own Blood* †. The divine Nature of our SAVIOUR communicated its *ennobling* Influence to every Tear He shed, to every Sigh He heaved, and every Pang He felt. This renders his Sufferings a *perfect*, as the last Circumstance We remarked, renders them a *proper* Satisfaction. And though *the Wood of Lebanon was not sufficient to burn*, nor all the Beasts thereof sufficient for a *Burnt Offering* ‡; this Sacrifice fully answers the Exigence of the Case. — This Sacrifice sends up an ever-acceptable Odour to the Skies, and diffuses its sweet Perfume through all Generations: such as appeases Heaven, and revives the World.

Yes, *Theron*, You must give me leave to repeat the delightful Truth; it was *the great GOD*, even our Saviour *JESUS CHRIST*, who gave Himself for Us ||. His Sacrifice therefore must be *inconceivably meritorious*. O! that Sinners, the *vilest* of Sinners, knew its all-sufficient Efficacy! They would no longer be holden in the Bonds of Iniquity, by that destructive Suggestion of the Devil, *There is no Hope* *.

Ther.

† Acts xx. 28.

‡ Isai. xl. 16.

|| Tit. ii. 13, 14.

* Jer. ii. 25.

DIALOGUE IV. 117

Ther. What valuable End could such vicarious Sufferings accomplish? Suppose GOD absolutely inexorable, and they must be *insufficient*. Suppose Him divinely merciful, and they are *needless*.

Asp. The Difficulty You propose, I think, has been obviated already. So that I have no Occasion to solve your Dilemma, but only to answer your Query. These Sufferings—as a *Punishment*, gave ample Satisfaction to the divine violated Law.—As a *Sacrifice*, they perfectly reconciled us to our offended GOD.—As a *Price*, they redeemed Us from every Evil, and purchased for Us a Title to all Good.

This is a Subject of the most distinguished Importance. Let not my *Theron* imagine, I would abuse his Patience, if I dwell a Moment longer on the favourite Topic.—I might enumerate many Ends, all *magnificent* and *gracious*, accomplished by this wonderful Expedient. I content myself with specifying a few. But those, such as bring the highest *Glory* to GOD—administer the most solid *Comfort* to Man—and most effectually promote the Interests of *Piety*.

In this We have a Manifestation of the most awful Justice, and at the same Time a Display of unbounded Goodness.—*Awful Justice*; in that the great and terrible GOD, though determined to exercise Mercy, would exercise it only in such a Manner, as might vindicate the Authority of his Law; might testify the Purity of his Nature; and declare the inviolable Faithfulness of his Word.—*Unbounded Goodness*; in that He with-held not his SON, his only SON, but freely gave Him up for Us all. Gave up “the Brightness of his Glory,” to be covered with Infamy; gave up “the beloved of his Soul,” to expire in Agonies; on purpose to obtain Honour and Immortality for apostate Men.—The *Torments* inflicted on all the *Damned* in Hell, are not so fearful a Monument of GOD’s Justice, as those dying Agonies of the LORD *JESUS CHRIST*. Nor could a *thousand Worlds*, conferred on Mankind, have been such an Act of superabundant Munificence, as that Gift of his ever blessed SON.

Look

118 DIALOGUE IV.

Look We for *Power* and *Wisdom*?—To sustain the Humanity of *CHRIST*, under all the barbarous Indignities of Men, under the more envenomed Rage of Devils, and the far more insupportable Curse of the divine Law: to conquer Sin and Death and Hell, by a Person *crucified in Weakness*, and bleeding out his Life on the torturing Rack, and ignominious Gibbet: to expiate, by *one Act* and *one Offering*, the innumerable Millions of Crimes, committed by all his People, from the Beginning to the End of Time: was not this *Power*? matchless *Power*? astonishing *Power*?—And as for *Wisdom*, how admirable was the Contrivance, which could harmonize the *seemingly opposite* Claims of Mercy and of Justice! and not only *satisfy* each, but *magnify* both!—Had Punishment been executed in *all its Rigour*, on the Sinner's Person, Mercy had lost her amiable Honours. Had the Sinner been restored to Favour, without *any Penalties* sustained either by Himself or his Surety, Justice had been set aside as an insignificant Attribute. Whereas, by our LORD's vicarious and expiatory Sufferings, both are manifested, and both are exalted. Therefore the Scripture affirms, that GOD hath not only exercised, but *abounded in Wisdom and Prudence*—nay, hath abounded in *all Wisdom and Prudence**, by this Instance of marvelous and triumphant Grace. Which is, at once, so honourable to Himself, and so advantageous to his People.

Ther. Advantageous to his People—I am glad, You are come to this Point. This is what I want to have cleared up. I am for those Doctrines, which glorify GOD, by doing Good to Man. Give *me* the Religion whose Aspect is benign, and whose Agency is beneficial. Not like a *Meteor*, to dazzle Us with a vain Glitter. Not like a *Comet*, to terrify us with a formidable Glare. But like yonder *Sun*, whose Beams shed Light, and Life, and Joy all round.

Asp. If this be what You seek, and what You prize; the *Christian* Religion, this Doctrine in particular, will answer your warmest Expectations, and challenge
your

* Eph. i. 8.

DIALOGUE IV. 119

your highest Esteem. For it is rich with Benefits of the most needful, the most desirable, and most exalted Kind.

The first and grand Blessing is *Pardon of Sins*. — Pardon, not of small Sins only, but of the most aggravated, the most horrid, the most enormous. Be they flaming as Scarlet, be they foul as the Dunghil, be they black as Hell itself; yet they shall be as the spotless Wool, or as the Virgin Snows *; they shall “ be, as “ though they had never been.” — Pardon, not of a few, but of *all* Sins. Be they numerous as the Stars of Heaven, numerous as the Hairs of our Head, numerous as the Sands upon the Sea-shore, *the Blood of JESUS CHRIST cleanseth from them ALL* †.

Hereby We have *Victory over Death*, and *Admittance into eternal Life*. — For thus saith the holy Apostle, concerning the poor Sojourners in Clay; *Seeing therefore the Children were Partakers of Flesh and Blood, He also partook of the same; that by undergoing Death, He might destroy Him who had the Power of Death, that is the Devil; and deliver those, who, through Fear of Death, were all their Life-time subject to Bondage* ‡. — And thus saith the venerable Elder, concerning the glorified Saints in Light; *These are they who came out of great Tribulation; and they have washed their Robes, and made them white in the Blood of the Lamb: therefore are they before the Throne* §.

If the *Philistines* rejoiced, when *Samson*, the Destroyer of their Country, was delivered into their Hands; how much greater Reason have We to rejoice, since the blessed *JESUS* has vanquished our last Enemy! Has made Death the Minister of endless Life, and the Grave a Gate to eternal Glory! — If *Joseph* had Cause to be glad, when his Prison-Garments were taken from Him; when He was brought into the Palace of *Pharaoh*; and made to sit at the Right-hand of the King. Is it not an incomparably richer Blessing, to have our Robes washed in redeeming Blood, and our Souls cleansed from all Guilt? Is it not an incomparably

* *Isai. i. 18.*

† *1 John i. 7.*

‡ *Heb. ii. 14, 15.*

§ *Rev. vii. 14.*

120 DIALOGUE IV.

parably *higher Advancement*, to be admitted into the blissful Presence, and to possess the everlasting Kingdom of GOD?

To comprehend all in a Word—Hereby are procured, even for the most unworthy Creatures, all the *Benefits* of the *New Covenant*. Therefore, the Blood of *CHRIST* is styled by a Prophet, *The Blood of thy Covenant* †; by an Apostle, *The Blood of the everlasting Covenant* ‖; and our LORD himself says, *This is the new Covenant in my Blood**.—Is it a Privilege, to know GOD, the infinitely amiable Source of all Perfection? Is it a most valuable Endowment, to have his Laws put into our Minds, and written on our Hearts? Is it a Branch of real Felicity, to have our numberless Sins forgiven, and not one of our Iniquities remembered any more? Is it the Compendium of all Happiness, to have GOD for our Portion, and our exceeding great Reward? To be his peculiar Treasure, his loving and beloved People †.—Of all these We may say, They are *the Purchase* of IMMANUEL's Blood: and whoever is truly interested in the *One*, is unquestionably intitled to the *Other*.

Who then would refuse so *comfortable*—

Ther. Too comfortable, I should imagine, to be either *true* in itself, or *safe* in its Consequences. Must it not tend to *embolden* the Sinner in the Prosecution of his Vices? Who need scruple to transgress, or be very solicitous to repent; if an all-atoning Sacrifice has been offered, for every Kind, and every Degree of Wickedness?

Asp. Would You have Sinners *intimidated*? Nothing speaks such Terror to the Children of Disobedience, as the bitter Passion, and accursed Death of *CHRIST*.—All the rhetorical Aggravations of Sin, with regard to its loathsome Nature, and execrable Vileness—all the Severity of Vengeance, executed upon

† Zech. ix. 11.

‖ Heb. xiii. 20.

* Luke xxii. 20. The original Word *διασπεν* signifies either a *Testament*, or a *Covenant*.

† Heb. viii. 10, 11, 12.

u
a
B
A
n
m
b
da

fo
th
fe
th
is
ac
cif
and
nel
dee
mar
the
thor
effe
nab
as a
Dea
tle;
not
indu
with
quish
live
If
Princ
urge
as thi
How
bour
merci

Vo

DIALOGUE IV. 121

upon rebellious Angels, or wicked Men—all, all are *weak* and *inexpressive*, compared with the *dreadful Emphasis* of this great Transaction. For, if the LORD Almighty spared not *his own* SON, when Guilt was, not found in Him, but only imputed to Him; how much less shall He spare *incorrigible* Offenders, who both habitually commit, and obstinately persist in, their daring Impieties?

If, by Repentance, You mean an *ingenuous Sorrow* for our Transgressions; nothing is so likely to break the stony, or melt the icy Heart, as these doleful Effects of Sin.—Whose Indignation does not rise against the infamous Wretch, that betrayed his LORD? Who is not ready to detest those envenomed Tongues, that accused Him; and those barbarous Hands, that crucified Him? How then can We choose but lament, and grieve, and mourn, when Conscience bears witness; That *our Sins* were the principal Actors in this deepest of Tragedies? That *We, even We*, by our manifold Crimes, were the *Betrayers and Murderers* of the Prince of Life!—If, by Repentance, You mean a *thorough Renunciation* of all Iniquity; no Motive is so effectual, to divorce the Affections from every abominable Idol, and divert the Feet from every evil Way, as an attentive Consideration of our REDEEMER's Death. With this agrees the Reasoning of the Apostle; *He himself bare our Sins in his own Body on the Tree*; not that *We* should be emboldened to repeat them, but induced and enabled to forsake them; that, charmed with such unutterably tender Mercy, We might relinquish our darling Lusts; and, *being dead unto Sin, might live unto Righteousness* *.

If You would have *Benevolence*, your favourite Principle take place and operate; it is impossible to urge so *endearing* a Persuasive to universal Good-will, as this *Kindness and Love of GOD our SAVIOUR* †. —How can we indulge the Sallies of Resentment, or harbour the Seeds of Animosity; when the meek, the merciful, the infinitely gracious REDEEMER, laid

* 1 Pet. ii. 24.

† Tit. iii. 4.

down his Life for his *bitterest Enemies*? How can We treat with Contempt or Indifference, even the *meanest* of *Mankind*; since our divine Master gave his all-glorious Person, for vile Wretches and miserable Sinners?—Never was there so *winning* a Call to disinterested Charity, as the amiable Example of *CHRIST*. Never so *binding* a Cement of brotherly Love, as the Blood of the crucified *JESUS*.

In short; would You have People possessed of every heavenly Virtue, and animated to the Practice of every good Work? Nothing administers so powerful an Incitement to them all, as a *lively* and *appropriating* Sense of this wonderful Grace. Set home by the *HOLY GHOST* *, it produces such a warm Gratitude in the Heart, as is far more operative, than the most *awful* Threatenings, or the most *cogent* Reasonings.—So that, quite contrary to your Suspicions, the native Tendency of this excellent Doctrine, is, to suppress Ungodliness, and promote Piety.

Observe, how the present calm Evening, yonder mild declining Sun, and these soft balmy Breezes; have unlocked the flowery Prisons, and detached a *Profusion* of *Odours* through the Air: have inspirited the little Songsters of the Grove, and fetched *lavish Harmony* from their Throats. So sweetly will a true Belief in *JESUS CHRIST* and Him crucified, draw forth all the Powers of the Soul, in Acts of *ready* and *cheerful* Obedience.—He is therefore said, not only to justify, but also to *sanctify the People with his Blood* †.

Let Us consider the Death of *CHRIST*, in this its *full Grandeur* and *extensive Efficacy*; and We shall discern the admirable Propriety of the Apostle's Remark:

It

* The Reader will give me Leave, on this Occasion, to subjoin the noble Doxology of our Church. Which when thus applied, may be an excellent Means, both of expressing our Gratitude, and of quickening our Devotion.—*Glory be to the FATHER*; for providing this all-sufficient Atonement, and giving his SON to save a ruined World.—*Glory be to the SON*; for humbling Himself to the Death of the Cross, and obtaining eternal Redemption for Sinners.—*Glory be to the HOLY GHOST*; for testifying of *CHRIST* in our Hearts, and appropriating this great Salvation to our Souls.

† Heb. .iii. 12.

DIALOGUE IV. 123

It became Him ; for whom are all Things, and by whom are all Things, in bringing many Sons unto Glory, to make the Captain of their Salvation perfect through Sufferings.*

IT BECAME ; as an *Act* of Sovereignty in GOD, it comported with the Dignity, and emblazoned (if I may so speak) the incomprehensible Majesty of his Perfections.—As an Execution of *Impartial Vengeance* on our Surety, it asserted the Rights of divine Government, and secured the utmost Veneration to the divine Law.—As an Emanation of *rich Indulgence* to Us, it redressed all our Misery, and retrieves our whole Happiness.—In *each* Respect, it spreads the brightest Lustre over all the Administrations of the blessed GOD ; and renders his very Justice, amiable and glorious even to Astonishment.—In *all* Respects, it is worthy of the most grateful and adoring Acceptance from sinful Man ; and such as will be had in everlasting Honour by the Choirs of Saints, and the Hosts of Angels.

Ther. I thank You, *Aspasio*. Your Arguments have not indeed converted me, but they have strengthened my Faith. I never was so unhappily mistaken, as to disbelieve the Satisfaction made by our *LORD JESUS CHRIST* ; made to divine Justice ; made for the Sins of the World. But, I now see more clearly its *Reasonableness* and *Importance* ; its cheering Aspect on the guilty Conscience, and its benign Influence on the *moral* Conduct.

Asp. I congratulate You, dear *Theron*, from my inmost Soul, on your thorough Conviction of this important Truth. May You have still more *extensive* and *generous* Views of the glorious Article ! And may every renewed View be more and more influential on your Heart !

Reviving, ravishing Thought ! To have HIM for our bleeding *Victim* ! HIM for our great *Propitiation* ! at whose Feet the Armies of Heaven bow, and the Saints in Light adore !—Reviving, ravishing Thought ! To have *all* our Punishment sustained, and the *whole*

* Heb. ii. 10.

Curse of the Law exhausted, so that Justice itself can demand no more! —Nay: to have such a *perfect* Ransom paid for our Redemption, as renders it, not *barely* an Act of favourable Indulgence, but of the *highest* Righteousness * also, to pardon, accept, and glorify the Believer!

Excuse me, *Theron*. My Affections are again upon the Soar. But I clip their Wings.—Only let me ask, is not this Doctrine the *grand Peculiarity* of the Gospel; by which it stands distinguished from every other Religion, professed in the World?—Is it not the *central Point*, in which all the Lines of Duty unite, and from which all the Rays of Consolation proceed?—Strike this Article from the Creed, and You reduce the “Mystery of Godliness” to a System of Ethics: You degrade the Christian Church into a School of Philosophy.—To deny the Expiation made by our REDEEMER’s Sacrifice, is to obscure the *brightest Manifestation* of divine Benignity, and to undermine the *principal Pillar* of practical Religion; is to make a desperate Shipwreck of our everlasting Interests; and to *dash* (such, I fear, it will be found, in the final Issue of Things) Ourselves to *Death*, on the very *Rock* of *Salvation*.

Ther. Now, I believe, it is Time to repair *Homewards*. And I hope, it will be no disagreeable Exchange, if We resign our Seat on the Mount, for a Place in the Dining-room.

Asp. Pray, let me inquire, as We walk along (for I was unwilling to interrupt our Discourse, merely to gratify my Curiosity) What may be the *Design* of yonder *Edifice*; which rises on a small Eminence, near the

* Therefore the Apostle says, *GOD is faithful and just to forgive Us our Sins*, 1 John i. 9. *Faithful*; because He had promised this Blessing, by the unanimous Voice of all his Prophets.—*Just*! Surely then He will *punish*! No; for this very Reason He will pardon.—This may seem strange: but, upon the evangelical Principles of Atonement and Redemption, it is undoubtedly true. Because, when the Debt is paid, or the Purchase made, it is the Part of *Equity* to cancel the Bond, and consign over the purchased Possession.

the public Road? It is neither a Tower, nor a Dwelling House; but looks like a stately Column, erected on purpose to beautify the Prospect.

Ther. It is a sort of monumental Pile. Erected, as the Story goes, on a very memorable Occasion.—Queen *Eleanor* accompanied King *Edward the First* to (what was called) the Holy War. In which He gained very signal Advantages over the Infidels, and acquired a large Share of Renown to Himself. After many gallant Exploits performed in the Field, a treacherous and desperate *Saracen*, demanding Admittance into his Chamber, under Pretence of private Business, wounded Him with an impoisoned Dagger. The Consequence of which, his Physicians declared, must be inevitable and speedy Death, unless the Poison was sucked out by some human Mouth. This might possibly preserve the royal Patient, but would be extremely dangerous to the Operator.

Dangerous as it was, his Queen claimed the Office; insisted upon it, as the Consort's Right; and executed it so *faithfully*, that she saved the King's Life, so *happily*, that she lost not her own.—After this, She returned to *England*, lived many Years, and bore several Children. But, sooner or later, Royalty itself must pay the Debt to Nature. Dying, on a Journey to *Scotland*, She was brought back to the last and long Home of our *English* Monarchs*.—Where-ever her Corpse rested, in the Way to its Interment, a Structure † (such as You now behold) was raised: in order to *perpetuate the Memory of her conjugal Affection*.

Asp. And should not our Hearts be a Monument of *Gratitude* to the blessed *JESUS*? Who drew the deadly

* *Westminster Abby.*

† One of these Structures stands on the high Road, near *Nor-thampton*. It is surrounded with a large Flight of Steps, at the Bottom; and ornamented, towards the Top, with four female Statues, in full Proportion. A *Latin* Inscription informs the Traveller, concerning its Occasion and Design;

*In perpetuam Reginae Eleanoræ
Conjugalis Amoris Memoriam.*

126 D I A L O G U E IV.

Venom, not from our Veins, but from the *immortal* Part of our Nature ; and not at the Hazard, but at the Loss, the *certain* and *unavoidable* Loss of his precious Life.—He opened his Breast, opened his very Soul, to the *keenest* Arrows of vindictive Justice ; that transfixing Him, they might drop short of Us. “ The Poison whereof drank up *his* Spirits*,” that the Balm of Peace might refresh *ours*.

O my *Theron* ! Let our *Memories* be the Tablet, to record this unexampled Instance of Compassion and Goodness.—Let our *Affections* dwell upon the tragical the delightful History ; till they melt into Contrition, and are inflamed with Love.—If we want an *Inscription*, let Us make use of those noble Lines, which, in the finest Climax imaginable, describe the Magnificence and Grace of this astonishing Transaction.

———— Survey the wondrous Cure,
And at each Step let higher Wonder rise.
Pardon for infinite Offence !—And Pardon
Through Means that speak its Value infinite !
A Pardon bought with Blood !—With Blood divine !—
With Blood divine of H I M, I made my Foe ! —
Persisted to provoke !—Though woo’d and aw’d,
Blest and chastis’d, a flagrant Rebel still !—
Nor I alone ! A rebel Universe !
My Species up in Arms !—Not one exempt !—
Yet for the foulest of the Foul, He dies † !

* Job vi. 4.

† Night-Thoughts, No. IV.



D I A L O G U E V.

A S P A S I O having some Letters of Importance to answer, as soon as the Cloth was taken away, retired from Table.—His epistolary Engagements being dispatched, he inquired for *Theron*. The Servants informed Him, that their Master walked into the Garden.—A very little Search found Him, seated on an airy Mount, and sheltered by an *elegant Arbour*.

Strong and substantial Plants of *Liburnum* formed the Shell; while the slender and flexile Shoots of *Syringa* filled up the Interstices.—Was it to *compliment*, as well as to *accommodate* their worthy Guests, that they interwove the luxuriant Foliage? Was it to represent those tender but close Attachments, which had *united* their Affections, and *blended* their Interests?—I will not too positively ascribe such a Design to the Disposition of the Branches. They composed, however, by their twining Embraces, no inexpressive Emblem, both of the *Endearments* and the *Advantages* of Friendship. They composed a Canopy, of the freshest Verdure, and of the thickest Texture, So thick, that it entirely excluded the sultry Ray; and shed both a cool Refreshment, and an amusive Gloom: while every unsheltered Tract, glared with Light, or fainted with Heat.

You enter by an easy Ascent of Steps, lined with Turf, and fenced with a Balustrade of sloping Bay-Trees.—The Roof was a fine *Concave*, peculiarly elevated and stately. Not embossed with Sculpture; not mantled over with Fret-work; not encrusted with splendid Fresco; but far more delicately adorned

with the Syringa's *silver Tufts*, and the Liburnum's *flowering Gold*. Whose large and lovely Clusters, gracefully pendent from the leafy Dome; disclosing their Sweets to the delighted Bee; and gently waving to the balmy Breath of Spring; gave the utmost Enrichment to the charming Bower.

Facing the Entrance, lay a spacious grassy Walk; terminated by an octangular Bason, with a curious *Jet d'Eau* playing in the Center. The Waters, spinning from the lower Orifices, were attenuated into innumerable little Threads; which dispersed themselves in an horizontal Direction, and returned to the Reservoir in a drizzling Shower. Those, which issued from the higher Tubes, and larger Apertures either sprung perpendicularly, or spouted obliquely; and formed, as they fell, several lofty Arches of liquid Crystal; all *glittering* on the Eye, and *cooling* to the Air.

Parallel to the Walk ran a *Parterre*; planted with an Assemblage of Flowers, that advanced, one above another, in regular Gradations of Height, of Dignity, and of Beauty.—First, a Row of *Daisies*; gay as the Smile of Youth, and fair as the Virgin-Snows.—Next, a Range of *Crocuses*; like a long Stripe of yellow Sattin, quilted with Threads, or diversified with Sprigs of Green.—A superior Order of *Ranunculuses*, each resembling the Cap of an Earl's Coronet, replenished the third Story with full-blown Tufts of glossy Scarlet.—Beyond this, a more elevated Line of *Tulips**, raised their flourished Heads, and opened their enameled

* Here is, it must be confessed, some little Deviation from the general Laws of the Season; some *Anacronism* in the Annals of the Parterre. The Flowers *united* in this Representation, do not, according to the *usual* Process of Nature, make their Appearance *together*. However, as by the Oeconomy of a skilful Gardener, they *may* be thus associated; I hope, the Possibility of the Thing, will screen my flowery Productions from the Blasts of Censure!—Or, may I not shelter my blooming Assembly, under the Remark of a *masterly Critic*? Which is as *pertinent* to the Case, as if it had been written on purpose for our Vindication; and so perfectly

enameled Cups ; not bedecked with a single Tint only, but glowing with an intermingled Variety of almost every radiant Hue.—Above all arose, that noble Ornament of a royal Escutcheon, the *Flower-de-Luce* ; bright with ethereal Blue, and grand with imperial Purple. Which formed, by its graceful Projections, a Cornish or a Capital of more than *Corinthian* Richness ; and imparted the most consummate Beauty to the blooming Colonnade.

The Whole, viewed from the Arbour, looked like a *Rainbow*, painted upon the Ground. And wanted nothing to rival that resplendent Arch, only the Boldness of its Sweep, and the Advantage of its ornamental Curve.

To this agreeable Recess *Theron* had withdrawn Himself. Here He sat musing and thoughtful ; with his Eye fixed upon a Cut, representing some *magnificent*

G 5

perfectly *elegant*, that it must adorn every Work, which quotes it ; and delight every Person, who reads it.

“ A Painter of Nature is not obliged to attend Her in her slow Advances, which she makes from one Season to another ; or to observe her Conduct in the successive Production of Plants and Flowers. He may draw into his Description all the Beauties of the Spring and Autumn ; and make the whole Year contribute something to render it more agreeable. His Rose-Trees, Woodbines, and Jessamines may flourish together ; and his Beds be covered at the same Time with Lilies, Violets, and Amaranthuses. His Soil is not restrained to any particular Set of Plants, but is proper either for Oaks or Myrtles, and adapts itself to the Product of every Climate.—Oranges may grow wild in it ; Myrth may be met with in every Hedge ; and if He thinks it proper to have a Grove of Spices, He can quickly command Sun enough to raise it. His Concerts of Birds may be as full harmonious, and his Woods as thick and gloomy, as He pleases. He is at no more Expence in a long Villa, than a short one ; and can as easily throw his Cascades from a Precipice of half a Mile high, as from one of twenty Yards. He has his Choice of the Winds, and can turn the Course of his Rivers, in all the Variety of *Mæanders*, that are most delightful to the Reader’s Imagination. In a Word ; He has the Modelling of Nature in his own Hands, and may give Her what Charms He pleases, provided He does not reform her too much, and run into Absurdities by endeavouring to excel.”

Spect. Vol. VI. No 418.

scant Ruins. — Wholly intent upon his Speculation, He never perceived the Approach of *Aspasio*; till He had reached the Summit of the Mount, and was ready to take a Seat by his Side.

Asp. Lost, *Iberon!* quite lost in Thought! And unaffected with all these amiable Objects; insensible amidst this Profusion of Beauties; which, from every Quarter make their Court to your Senses! — Methinks, the snarling *Stoic* in his Tub, could hardly put on a greater Severity of Aspect, than my polite Philosopher in his blooming *Eden*.

Ther. Ah! my dear Friend, these flowery Toys which embellish the Garden, are familiar to my Eye, and therefore *cheap* in my Esteem. I behold them frequently; and, for that Reason, feel but little of the pleasing surprize, which they may possibly awaken in a Stranger. — Something like this We all experience, with regard to Events infinitely *more worthy* our admiring Notice. Else, why ~~are~~ We not struck with a Mixture of Amazement, Veneration, and Gratitude, at the grand machinery and magnificent Productions of Nature?

That the Hand of the ALMIGHTY should wheel round the vast terrestrial Globe, with such prodigious *Rapidity*, and exact *Punctuality*; on purpose to produce the regular Vicissitudes of Day and Night; on purpose to bring on the orderly Succession of Seed-Time and Harvest! — We *wonder*, when we read of the *Israelites*, sojourning forty Years in the Desert, marching backwards and forwards over its burning Sands; and find neither their Clothes *waxing old** by so long a Use, nor their Feet *swelling*† with such painful Journies. Yet we feel no *grateful Surprise*, when We enjoy the Benefits of the Air, which clothes the Earth as it were with a Garment; and has neither contracted any *noxious* Taint, through the extensive Revolution of almost six thousand Years; nor suffered any *Diminution* of its natural Force, though exercised in a Series of unremitted Activity, ever since the elementary Operations began.

This

* Deut. viii. 4.

† Neh. ix. 21.

This Draught in my Hand, shews Us the *Instability* of the grandest, *most laboured* Monuments of human Art: They are soon swept away, among the other feeble Attempts of Mortality: or remain only, as You see Here, in shattered Ruins; Memorials of the vain and powerless Ambition of the Builders. — How strange then, that a Structure, incomparably more tender and delicate, should be preserved to *old Age*, and *hoary Hairs*! That the bodily Machine, which is so exquisite in its Frame, so complicated in its Parts, and performs so many Thousands* of Motions every Moment, should continue *unimpaired*, yet act without Intermission, so many Days, and Weeks, and Months, and Years. — How strange all this! Yet, because common, how seldom does it excite our *Praise*, or so much as engage our *Notice*!

A/p. Your Remarks are as just, as the Neglect of them is customary. — Unaccountable Supineness! Though *G O D doeth great Things*, worthy of all Observation; *yea, and Wonders without Number*: We yawn with Indolence, instead of being animated with Devotion, or transported with Delight. *Lo! He goeth before Us* in evident Manifestations of Wisdom and Power; yet, *We see Him not: He passeth on also*, and scatters unnumbered Blessings from his providential Hand; but *We perceive Him not* †.

This, though greatly culpable, is to be reckoned among the *smallest* Instances of our ungrateful Insensibility.

* *Thousands* — Not to mention the *spontaneous*, if We consider only the *mechanical* Motions, which are continually performed in the animal System — the digestive Action of the Stomach — the vermicular Agitation of the Bowels — the Progress of the Chyle through the lacteal Vessels — the many, many Operations of the secreting Glands — the Compression of the Lungs and all their little cellular Lodgments, by every Act of Respiration — above all, that grand Impetus, the Systole of the Heart; which, by every Constriction, darts the crimson Current through an innumerable Multitude of Arteries; and drives, at the same Instant of Time, the reffluent Blood through an innumerable Multitude of corresponding Veins — Such a View will oblige Us to acknowledge, that this Account is far from being extravagant: that it rather *diminishes*, than *exaggerates* the real Fact.

† Job ix. 10, 11.

sibility.—Are We not inattentive even to the Work of Redemption? That Work, which, according to the emphatical Declaration of Scripture, *exceeds in Glory**: is by far the noblest, the most marvelous of all *sublunary*, perhaps of all *divine*, Transactions. — Are We not shamefully unaffected, even with the Appearance of GOD in human Flesh: Though the King of Kings vouchsafes to exchange his Throne, for the Humiliation of a Servant, and the Death of a Malefactor: though He is pleased, by the Imputation of his active as well as passive Obedience, to become *the LORD our Righteousness*, yet:—

Ther. You are taking an effectual Way, *Alpasio*, to rouse me from my Reverie, and make me indeed like the snarling Philosopher. *Imputed Righteousness is a Scheme grossly frivolous and absurd; utterly insufficient to answer the End proposed; and, One would think, could never be depended on, where there is the least Degree of Understanding, and Capacity for Reasoning* †.

Alp.

* 2 Cor. iii. 9.

† The Reader will probably be disgusted, at this *Heat of Temper*, this *Asperity of Diction*, and both so *abruptly* introduced.—I have no Apology to make for my *Theron*. The Reader *has Reason* to be disgusted; has Reason to be chagrined. Only let me desire Him to remember, That this is the very Spirit, nay these are the *very Words*, of a celebrated Opposer of our Doctrine; not added, when he has *fully proved* the Absurdity of the Scheme; but assumed, even upon the very Entrance to his Discourse.

I have often wondered, that Disputants, especially on religious Subjects, should choose to deal in such *acrimonious and reproachful* Language. *Does the Wrath of Man work the Righteousness of GOD?* Or, is a passionate Invective the proper Means, either to conciliate our Affections, or convince our Judgment? — Why should We not *write* in the same genteel and obliging Strain, in which We *converse*? Were We to meet our Antagonist in a Friend's Parlour, and have a personal Conference on the Subject, our Speech would be kind, and our Remonstrances calm;—"I am sorry, Sir, that
 "You have espoused such Notions. They seem to me, extremely
 "wrong, and equally dangerous. I am apt to think, You have
 "not duly considered, either the little Ground, they have to support them; or the pernicious Consequences, that may attend
 "them."

Why should not our Controversies from the Press be carried on, with such a *candid and amicable* Strife? This would certainly

render

DIALOGUE V. 133

Asp. Who is warm now, *Theron*? May I not remind my Friend, that the *Resentful* is no more fitted to work Conviction than the *Rapturous*?—Perhaps, You have not duly considered this Subject; nor seen it in the proper Point of View. I have sometimes beheld a Ship of War, several Leagues off at Sea. It seemed to be a *dim cloudy* Something, hovering on the Skirts of the Horizon; contemptibly mean, and not worthy of a Moment's Regard.—But as the floating Citadel approached, the Masts arose: the Sails swelled out; its stately Form, and curious Proportions struck the Sight. It was no longer a shapeless Mass, or a Blot in the Prospect, but the *Master-Piece* of human Contrivance, and the *noblest* Spectacle in the World of Art. The Eye is never weary of viewing its Structure, nor the Mind in contemplating its Uses.

Who knows, *Theron*, but this sacred Scheme likewise, which You now look upon as a *confused Heap* of Errors, may very much improve, when more closely examined. May, at length, become a wise and benign Plan; admirably fitted to the Condition of our fallen Nature, and perfectly worthy of all Acceptation.

Ther. I know not what may happen, *Aspasio*. But there seems to be very little Probability of such a Change. For, though my last Opposition was a *mock Fight*: in my present Objections I am *very sincere*, and to this Doctrine I am a *real* Enemy.—The Notion of a substituted and vicarious Righteousness is absurd even to common Sense, and to the most natural and easy Reflections of Men.

Asp. It may not, my dear Friend, agree with our natural Apprehensions; nor fall in with the Plan, which *We* might have devised, for the Salvation of Mankind. But this is the Voice of Scripture, and a Maxim never to be forgotten; *G O D's Thoughts are*
not

render them, more pleasing to the Reader; more profitable to the Public; and much more likely to have the desired Effect upon our Opponent.—For my part, I admire the Humanity and Tenderness of the Poet's Resolution; even more than the Boldness of his Figures, or the Beauty of his Expression:

Tu Lapides loqueris, ego byssina Verba reponam.

134 DIALOGUE V.

not as our Thoughts, nor his Ways as our Ways *.—His Righteousness is like the strong Mountains, and his Judgments are like the great Deep †: the former immovable, the latter unfearchable.

Ther. The mention of Mountains, puts me in Mind of what I was reading Yesterday—the keen Irony, with which *Abimelech's* principal Officer chastised the blustering *Gaal*: *Thou seest the Shadow of the Mountains, as if they were Men* ‡. He, it is sarcastically intimated, was afraid, and my *Aspasio* seems to be fond, of Shadows.

Asp. Happy for your *Aspasio*, that Irony is no Argument. If a Jury was impanelled to try me and my Doctrine, I should certainly *except against* Irony. Generally speaking, He is neither a good Man, nor a true. And, if I remember right, You Yourself consented to set Him aside in this Debate. I shall therefore adapt my Reply, rather to what is solid, than what is smart.

This Notion, You say, is absurd to common Sense——A Saying, upon which I must beg Leave to put a Query. It was, I own, absolutely beyond the Power of common Sense, unassisted by divine Revelation, to discover this Truth.—I will grant farther, That this Blessing infinitely transcends, whatever common Sense has observed, in all her Converse with finite Things.—But, if I have any the least Acquaintance with common Sense, I am very sure, She *will not*, She *cannot* pronounce it an Absurdity. To this Judge I refer the Cause.

And to open the Cause a little, let me just observe, That GOD imputed our Sins to his SON. How else could the immaculate JESUS be punished, as the most inexcusable Transgressor? *Awake O Sword, against my Shepherd, and against the Man that is my Fellow, saith the LORD of Hosts* §. Is not this the Voice of a Judge, pronouncing the Sentence, and authorizing the Execution? Or rather, does it not describe the Action of Justice, turning the Sword from
Us,

* Isai. lv. 8.

† Psal. xxxvi. 6.

‡ Judg. ix. 36.

§ Zech. xiii. 7.

Us, and sheathing it in *CHRIST*? Who, if He was our Substitute with regard to *penal Suffering*, why may He not stand in the same Relation, with regard to *justifying Obedience*? There is the same Reason for the one, as for the other. Every Argument in favour of the former, is equally conclusive in Behalf of the latter.

Ther. I very freely grant, that *CHRIST JESUS* was punished in *our Stead*; that *his* Death is the Expiation of *our* Sin, and the Cause of our Security from penal Suffering. But this——

Asp. Will undeniably prove, that Sin was *imputed* to Him; otherwise He could not *truly* suffer in our Stead, nor be *justly* punished at all. “And Imputation is as reasonable and justifiable in *one Case*, as in the *other*; for they both stand upon one and the same Foot; and for that Reason, He who throws down one, throws down both.”—I should not have interrupted my *Theron*, only to introduce this Answer from an eminent Divine. Who adds, what should be very seriously considered; “And therefore, whoever rejects the Doctrine of the Imputation of our *SAVIOUR*’s *Righteousness* to Man, does, by so doing, reject the Imputation of Man’s *Sin* to our *SAVI-OUR*, and all the Consequences of it. Or, in other Words, He who rejects the Doctrine of the *Imputation*, does, by so doing, reject the Doctrine of the *Expiation* likewise §.”

Ther. I know nothing of this Divine; and, eminent as He is, can hardly take his *Ipse dixit* for a Decision.

Asp. I was in Hopes, You would pay the greater Regard to *his* Opinion, because He is not in the Number of the whimsical Fanatics.

Give me Leave to observe farther, That the Imputation of *CHRIST*’s Righteousness, bears an evident Analogy to another great Truth of *Christianity*. We did not personally commit *Adam*’s Sin, yet are We chargeable

chargeable with Guilt, and liable to Condemnation, on that —

Ther. How ! *We* chargeable with Guilt, and liable to Condemnation, on account of *Adam's* Transgression ! This Position I must deny ; I had almost said, I must abhor. None other could, in the Eye of Justice and Equity, be blameable for any Offence of our first Parents, but *they only*.

Asp. So says *Theron*, but what says *St. Paul* ? This may be the Voice of *natural* Reason, but what is the Language of *divine* Revelation ? *In whom*, that is in *Adam*, *all have sinned*.

Ther. The Words, if I remember right, are, *For that all have sinned*.

Asp. In the Margin, they are translated as I have repeated them. For this Interpretation I might contend, as not *in the least* incompatible with the original Phrase *, and as the *most precisely* suitable to the sacred Argument. But I wave this Advantage. Let the Words run into your Mould, and the Translation take your Form. They are equally decisive of the Point in Debate. — They assign the *Reason*, why Death came upon *all* Men ; *Infants* themselves not excepted : *For that all have sinned*. How ! Not in their own Person ; this was utterly impossible. But in that first grand Transgression of their federal Head. Which, as it could not be actually committed by them, must, according to the Tenour of the Apostle's Arguing, be imputed to them.

Ther. Pray, what do You mean by that crude, and to me unintelligible Phrase, *federal Head*.

Asp. I mean what the Apostle teaches, when He calls *CHRIST the second Man* †, and *the last Adam* ‡. — The *second* ! The *last* ! How ? Not in a numerical Sense. Not in Order of Time. But in this Respect

* ΕΦ' ὃ πάντες ἡμαρτον. Rom. v. 12. Not to mention the famous Distinction of *Epictetus*, τα εφ' ἡμῶν, nor the well-known Adagy of *Hesiod*, μετ' ὃν δ' ἐπὶ πάντων ἀρίστον. See Chap. iv. 18. v. 2. of this very Epistle, where the Preposition ἐπὶ is used in *Aspasio's* Sense.

† 1 Cor. xv. 47.

‡ 1 Cor. xv. 46.

spect—That, as *Adam* was a public Person, and acted in the Stead of all Mankind; so *CHRIST* was a public Person, and acted in Behalf of all his People—That, as *Adam* was the *first* general Representative of this Kind, *CHRIST* was the *second* and the *last*: there never was, and there never will be, any other—That, what they severally did, in this Capacity, was not intended to *terminate* in themselves, but to *affect* as many as they respectively represented.—This is *St. Paul's* Meaning, and this is the Foundation of the Doctrine of Imputation.

Ther. If You build it on no other Foundation, than *your own* particular Sense of the Apostle's Words, perhaps, it may prove a sandy and unstable Ground.

App. I build it upon mine, and I deduce it from yours, *Theron*.—But I am far from resting the whole Weight of the Cause, upon a *single* Text. It is established, again and again, in this same Chapter.—Neither do I wonder at the Prejudices, which You and Others may entertain against the Doctrine. It lies quite out of the Road of Reason's Researches: it is among *the wonderful Things of GOD's Law*. This the inspired Penman foresaw, and modelled his Discourse accordingly. Like some *skilful Engineer*, who, though He makes the whole Compass of his Fortification strong, yet bestows *peculiar* and *additional* Strength on those Parts, which He apprehends will be exposed to the fiercest Attack. So the wise, the divinely wise Apostle, has inculcated, and re-inculcated, this momentous Point: has enforced it with all the Assiduity of Zeal, and confirmed it by all the Energy of Expression—*If through the Offence of One, many be dead—The Judgment was by One to Condemnation—By one Man's Offence Death reigned by One—By the Offence of One, Judgment came upon all Men to Condemnation* †.—That there may remain no Possibility of mistaking his Meaning, or of eluding his Argument, He adds, *By ONE Man's Disobedience MANY were made Sinners* ‖.

Ther.

† Rom. v. 15, 16, 17, 18.

‖ Rom. v. 19.

138 DIALOGUE V.

Ther. Sin, I am told by a celebrated Expositor, sometimes signifies *Punishment*. He farther informs me, that We may be said to sin in *Adam*, not by the Imputation of his Disobedience to Us, but by becoming obnoxious to those Sufferings which were due to his Sin.

Asp. Then the Apostle's Reasoning will stand in this Form; *Death came upon all Men, for that all have sinned*; that is, Suffering came upon all Men, because all have suffered. A goodly Strain of Argumentation for an unerring Writer to use!—But surely *Gamaliel's* Pupil would disclaim, much more would *CHRIST's* Ambassador scorn, such weak and unmeaning Chicanery. He mentions Sin and its Punishment; but never hints, that they are intended to signify *one* and the *same* Thing. He all along maintains a *Distinction* between them; represents the former, as the Cause of the latter. *Judgment, Condemnation, Death* are owing to *Sin, Offence, Disobedience*. It is by the Imputation of *these*, that We become obnoxious to *those*.—This Account clears up the Equity of that providential Government, which executes the Sentence of Death, even on those Descendants of *Adam*, who have not *sinned* in their own Persons. It also illustrates the Procedure of that sovereign Grace, which treats as righteous, and entitles to Life, even those Believers in *JESUS*, who have not *obeyed* in their own Persons.—What says our Church? You have a great Veneration for the *Church of England, Theron*.

Ther. I have. But I fear, my *Assaso* has neither so honourable an Opinion of her Worship, nor so steady an Adherence to her Constitution. Otherwise, He would not so highly extol those *ambitious* and *canting* Hypocrites the *Puritans*. Who were the most inveterate Enemies of our excellent Establishment, and would have rejoiced in its utter Subversion.

Asp. As to the *Puritans*, You will do me the Justice to acknowledge, that I speak only of their *evangelical* Tenets, abstracted from all *political* Principles.—As to *myself*, your Fears are friendly, but I trust they are
ground-

groundless. I would only ask ; Who are to be deemed the most affectionate and faithful Sons of their sacred Mother ?——Those, I presume, who most *cordially embrace* her Doctrines, and most *dutifully submit* to her Precepts. By this Touchstone let my Fidelity be tried. And for an immediate Trial, be pleased to repeat her Ninth Article.

Ther. I cannot say, that I remember the particular Words of any, tho' I have often read, and very much approve them all.

Asp. I wish, You would commit to your Memory, four or five of the most distinguished *. They are a valuable Treasure, and contain the Quintessence of the Gospel.

These are the Words of the Ninth Article. “ Original Sin is the Fault and Corruption of every Man, that naturally is engendered of the Offspring of “ *Adam.*” It is the *Fault*, says the pious Bishop *Beveridge*, and therefore We are guilty of it. It is the *Corruption* also, and therefore We are defiled with it.—Our Homilies have recourse to no such Palliatives, and qualifying Interpretations, as my *Theron's* Expofitor uses. One of them affirms point-blank, that “ in *Adam* “ all Men sinned universally.” This seems to be a Paraphrase on the Text, whose Translation You lately controverted.—In what Sense our great *poetical Divine* understood the sacred Writer, is apparent from the following Words ; which are supposed to have been spoken by JEHOVAH himself ;

————— *Adam's Crime*
Makes guilty all his Sons †.

And from another Passage, where our rebellious Progenitor, bewailing his aggravated Misery, and the extensive Malignity of his Sin, declares,

————— *In me all*
Posterity stands curs'd †.

For

* Especially Article IX, X, XI, XII, XIII.

† Milton, B. III. 290. † B. X. 817.

For my own Part I must confess, That, if the Trans-
mission of original Depravity be granted, I know not
how the Imputation of *Adam's* destructive Apostacy
can be denied. If We had no Concern in the one,
how could We be justly punished with the other?—
I say *punished*. For, to lose the primitive Integrity of
our Nature, and inherit a depraved Disposition, is at
once a most deplorable Calamity, and a most terrible
Punishment.—Corruption transmitted, and Guilt im-
puted, seem to be Doctrines *indissolubly* connected. To
allow the former, and reject the latter, is, in my Ap-
prehension, to acknowledge the *Effect* without admit-
ting the *Cause*.

Ther. To make Us Parties in a Covenant, which We
did not agree to, can this be *equitable*? To ruin Us for
a Crime, which We never committed, can this be *mer-
ciful*? Surely, this is a flagrant Injustice, never to be
ascribed to the all-gracious GOD. A diabolical Bar-
barity, add Some, never to be mentioned without the
utmost Detestation.

Asp. I see no Cause for such a tragical Outcry of
Barbarity, nor indeed for any Complaint of Injustice.
Not to insist upon the Sovereignty of an all-creating
GOD, and his unquestionable Right to *do what He
will with his own*, I would only ask—Did He not
condescend to transact with Man, not on the Foot of
absolute uncontrollable *Authority*, but in the honour-
able and delightful way of a *Covenant*?—Were not
the *Terms* of this Covenant perfectly easy, and won-
derfully gracious? *Wonderfully gracious*: For, they pro-
posed a State of inconceivable and everlasting Felicity *
to Creatures, who were intitled to *no* Happiness; had
not the least Claim to *any* Good; no, not so much as
to the Privilege of *Existence*. *Perfectly easy*: For, what
was the Condition on Man's Part? Not any rigorous
Act of Duty, nor severe Course of Self-denial, but
the free Enjoyment of *Millions* of Blessings and Plea-
sures, with only the Prohibition of *one* pernicious In-
dulgence.—Here then is made, on one Hand, a
Promise of the most *glorious* Reward, that GOD him-
self

* Luke x. 28.

self could give: and nothing required, on the other, but the *smallest* Expression of Allegiance, that Man himself could wish. — And is this Injustice? Is this Barbarity?

Ther. All this was equitable enough, with regard to *Adam*: but why should *We* be condemned for his Violation of the Covenant? — Or how was such a Constitution of Things gracious, with respect to *Us*?

Asp. *Why condemned?* Because, *We* should have been Partakers of the Benefit and the Glory, if He had persevered in his Duty. To this, I presume, None would object. And if they *would not* to the one, they *ought not* to the other.

You ask farther; *How was such a Constitution of Things gracious, with respect to Us?* I answer; Because it was the *most likely* Means to secure the Happiness of *Us* and all Mankind. Was not *Adam*, of all other Persons, by far the best qualified to act as a general Head? He had a Perfection of Knowledge to discern his true Interest: a Perfection of Holiness, to capacitate him for Obedience: and a Perfection of Happiness, disposing him to Perseverance. As None could have more *more eminent* Qualifications, None could have *so many* Obligations. His own eternal Welfare was at stake: the Salvation of his Family, of his Country, of the World, was depending: the Lives, the Souls, the *everlasting All* of the whole human Race, were embarked on the single Bottom of his Fidelity. Therefore, the Felicity of every Individual, that should spring from his Loins, was a fresh Motive to Vigilance, an additional Engagement to Duty*. — As *his* Love to his Offspring was more refined, more exalted, more

* Should any Person imagine himself more capable of standing than *Adam*, who was endowed with all the Perfections of an innocent, holy, godlike Nature; I think, by this very Imagination, He begins to *fall*; fall into Pride. — Should any Person suppose, That, from a View to his own particular Salvation, He would have been faithful; when *Adam* was not engaged to Fidelity, from a Regard to his own and the Salvation of all his Posterity; He seems to be just as wise as the Mariner, who persuades Himself, That, though a *thousand* Anchors could not secure the Ship in a Storm, yet *one* might have done it effectually.

more godlike than ours, all these Considerations and Inducements must operate upon Him, in their fullest Scope, and with the strongest Energy.—What an Entrenchment was here, to keep out Disobedience, and ward off Ruin! An Entrenchment, *deep* as Hell; *high* as Heaven; *wide* as the whole Extent of the human Species.

Here then I may venture to throw the Gauntlet, and challenge the whole World. Let the most penetrating Mind devise a Scheme, so wisely and graciously calculated to *ascertain* the Success of a *probationary* State. If this be impracticable, then must every Mouth be stopped: No Tongue can have the least Reason to complain: I, for my Part, shall think myself obliged to admire the Benignity of my CREATOR's Conduct: and GOD may justly demand of all intelligent Creatures, *What could have been done more* for the Salvation of Mankind, *that I have not done* *.

Especially, when to all this We add, That the same ALMIGHTY Being, who appointed *Adam* to be our Representative in the first Covenant, without asking our *actual Consent*; appointed also *CHRIST* to be our Representative in the second Covenant, without staying for our *actual Solicitation*. When We take *this* into the Account, there remains not the least Shadow of Injustice; but Goodness, transcendent Goodness, shines forth with the brightest Lustre.

Ther. Goodness, *Aspasio*! This is surprising indeed. Why, if *Adam's* Transgression be laid to our Charge, We are *damnable* Creatures, the very Moment We exist; and are liable to the Torments of Hell, even on Account of *his* Disobedience. To term this Goodness, is the greatest of Paradoxes! To affirm it of the DEITY, is little less than Blasphemy!

Asp. Let Us be calm, my dear Friend, and consider the Case impartially. If it is not a real Truth, I shall be as willing to relinquish it, as yourself.

Is not Death, eternal Death, the Wages of every Sin? And if of every Sin, then doubtless of *original* Sin. Which is the *Fountain*, from whence all the Streams

DIALOGUE V. 143

Streams of actual Iniquity flow; or rather the *Abyss*, from whence all the Torrents pour.—That, which could not be pardoned, but by the Humiliation and Agonies of GOD's adorable SON, may reasonably be supposed to deserve the most dreadful Vengeance. And it is affirmed, by an Authority which You will not dispute, that “ For original as well as actual Sin, “ the Offering of *CHRIST* is a Propitiation and Satisfaction *.”

Does not St. *Paul* deliver it, as a Maxim in Divinity? That, by the Offence of One, Adam He undoubtedly means, *Judgment came upon all Men to Condemnation* †. The Import of the Words, together with the Connection of the Passage, lead Us to understand this of a Condemnation to eternal Misery.—*The Import of the Words*: for, they are doubled ‡, to make them peculiarly strong in their Signification: and each Word, within the Compass of this very Epistle, is used in that awful Latitude of Meaning §. *The Connection of the Passage*: because it stands opposed to that Justification which is unto Life. This, we are sure, includes the Idea of an everlasting Duration. And why should its tremendous Counterpart be less extensive?

This Sense is evidently patronized, and this Doctrine most peremptorily asserted, by our established Church. What says the Book of *Homilies*, when treating of the Miseries consequent upon the Fall? “ This so great “ and miserable a Plague, if it had only rested on *Adam*, who first offended, it had been much easier, “ and might the better have been borne. But it fell “ not only on Him, but also on his Posterity and Children for ever; so that the whole Brood of *Adam's* “ Race should sustain the self-same Fall and Punishment, which their Fore-father by his Offence most “ justly had deserved §.”—Left any should misapprehend the Design of our Reformers, and suppose the

* Article XXXI.

† Rom. v. 18.

‡ Κεῖμα εἰς τὸ κατακείμενα.

§ Rom. ii. 3. iii. 8. viii. 1.

§ Homily on the Nativity of *CHRIST*.

the Punishment to consist only of some bodily Suffering, or the Loss of Immortality, it is added in the same alarming Discourse; "Neither *Adam*, nor any " of his, had any Right or Interest at all in the Kingdom of Heaven; but were become plain Reprobates " and Castaways, being perpetually damned to the " everlasting Pains of Hell."

Lest You should imagine, this might be written under a Sally of *hasty* Zeal, or that it is to be reckoned among the *doting* Opinions of a credulous Antiquity; let me remind my Friend, That it is engrafted into the *Articles*. Those Articles, which were agreed upon by the Archbishops and Bishops of both Provinces; were consented to by the whole Clergy, and are, to *this Day*, the *national Standard* of our Belief. The Ninth Article, beginning with a Description of our depraved Nature, subjoins an Account of its proper Desert; "In every Person born into the World, it deserves GOD's Wrath and Damnation*."

Ther. How *miserable* then is Man!

Asp. In *Himself* He is miserable beyond Expression. But a *Conviction* of this Misery is the Beginning of all Happiness. *The Valley of Achor is a Door of Hope*†.

Ther. Explain Yourself, *Aspasio*. You seem to deal very much in the Incomprehensibles.

Asp. Such a Conviction would demonstrate the *absolute Insufficiency* of all human Attainments, and all human Endeavours, to procure Life and Salvation.—

For,

* I am surprised to see a learned Author attempting to *sheath* the *String* of this awful Denunciation: attempting to prove, that the Words "do not signify GOD's eternal Wrath, and the Damnation of Hell."—I shall take no Pains to confute what He is pleased to advance. I leave the Question in the Reader's own Breast. Let Him discover, if He can, a different Meaning in the Sentence. Unless he has a pretty shrewd Knack at *Sophistry*, I am persuaded, He will find it a difficult Matter to give *any other* tolerable Turn to the Passage.—Surely, it must be a great Reproach to our venerable Mother, if She delivers her Doctrine in Language so *fallacious*, as must necessarily mislead the Generality of her Sons: or in Terms so *abstruse*, as even a good Understanding cannot develop, without some Proficiency in critical Legerdemain.

† Hof. ii. 15. *Achor* signifies Trouble.

For, in case We could perform every Jot and Tittle of the divine Law ; offend in no Instance ; fall short in no Degree ; persevere to the very End ; yet this would be no more than our present bounden Duty. Not the least Pittance of Merit could arise from all this. Much less could this be sufficient to expiate original Guilt, or remove the dreadful Entail of the primitive all-destroying Sin.

This, therefore, would most effectually preclude every false Confidence ; and *sweep away*, at one Stroke, *every Refuge of Lies* *. It would lay Us under an immediate, a most indispensable, and a *happy Necessity*, of betaking ourselves to *CHRIST*.—I say *happy* Necessity ; because then We should know, by Experience, what each Part of our LORD's awful yet tender Declaration meaneth ; *O Israel ! thou hast destroyed thyself ; but in ME is thine Help* †.—We should then find, that as Sin and Misery *have abounded* through the first *Adam*, Mercy and Grace have *much more abounded* through the second. For, if We were ruined by a Crime which We committed not, We are recovered by a Righteousness which We performed not. A Righteousness, *infinitely surpassing* whatever We could have acquired ; even though our Nature had been transmitted to Us, free from any Depravity, and exempt from all Guilt.

Ther. In your Opinion then, and according to your Scheme, *Salve* and a *Regimen* are better than a good Constitution.

Asp. No, *Theron*, My Opinion is, that none can think Himself aggrieved, or have any Reason to complain, at that grand and beneficent Regulation, which suffers the *sickly* Taper to be obscured or extinguished, but sheds abroad the *boundless* and *majestic* Beams of Day. And if any Comparison be made between the most perfect human Obedience, and the everlasting divine Righteousness of *CHRIST*, it should be taken from the glimmering Taper and the meridian Sun.

* *Isai.* xxviii 17.

† *Hos.* xiii. 9.

146 DIALOGUE V.

Ther. I cannot persuade myself to admire such *mysterious* and *unaccountable* Notions. They must puzzle Some: will offend Others: but cannot edify Any.

Asp. This Point, That *We all died in Adam*; were undone by his Apostacy; cannot puzzle the simplest, if unprejudiced Mind. — Nor will it offend Any, but the proud Philosopher, or the self-righteous Moralist. — And I assure You, I should not mention it, much less insist upon it, did it not subserve, and in a very singular Manner, the Purposes of *Edification*. The Doctrine of a REDEEMER, obeying and dying in our Stead, is the very *Hinge* and *Center* of all evangelical Revelations: is the very *Life* and *Soul* of all evangelical Blessings. This Doctrine is not a little illustrated, and is greatly recommended by the Imputation of *Adam's Sin*.

Contraries, You know, cast Light upon, and set off each other. Winter and its severe Cold, makes Spring and its chearing Warmth, more sensibly perceived, and more highly pleasing. Such an Influence has the present Subject, with respect to the vicarious Obedience of our MEDIATOR. The more clearly We see the *Reality* of the former, the more thoroughly We shall discern the *Expediency*, the *Excellency*, the *Glory* of the latter. The more We are humbled under the One, the more We shall rejoice, exult, and triumph in the Other. — The Apostle draws a long Parallel, or rather forms a strong Contrast between them, in the fifth Chapter to the *Romans*. He speaks copiously of *Adam's Guilt*, imputed to all Mankind for Condemnation and Death: that He may speak the more acceptably, the more charmingly of *CHRIST's Righteousness*, imputed to all Believers for Justification and Life. In that *dark Ground*, He well knew, this fairest loveliest Flower of *Christianity*, appears with *peculiar Beauty*; indeed with all the Beauty of consummate Wisdom, and adorable Benignity.

Ther. It really seems to me a Thing *impossible*, that one Man's Righteousness should be made Another's. Can one Man live by the Soul of Another? Or be learned by the Learning of Another? — Good *Aspasio*,

so, never attempt to maintain such palpable Absurdities. They will expose *Christianity* to the Scorn of Infidels.

Asp. If Infidels scoff at this comfortable Truth, their Scoffing will be, like all their other Cavils, not the *Voice* of Reason, but the *Clamour* of Prejudice.

My Friend's Objection insinuates, what We never assert; That the *Essence* of this Righteousness is transferred. Which would doubtless be in Fact impossible as it is in Theory absurd.—But this We disavow, as strenuously as You can oppose. Our REDEEMER's Righteousness is made ours, not by *Infusion*, but by *Imputation*. The very Terms We use, may acquit Us from such a ridiculous Charge; as Imputation signifies, *A placing to the Account of One, what is done by Another*. Accordingly We believe, That the Essence of this Righteousness is *CHRIST's*, the Merit of it Ours: that *CHRIST* and *CHRIST* alone, wrought it out; but that working it out, in our Stead, *GOD* imputes it to Us; *GOD* accepts Us for it; accepts Us *as much, as if* We had, in our own Persons, performed it.

Ther. Not all your Refinements can reconcile me to this uncouth Notion.—The Practice is *unexampled*, and absolutely inconsistent with the Rules of *distributive* Justice.

Asp. Ah! my *Theron*, if We seek an Example of *GOD's* *unbounded* Goodness, amongst the *puny* Proceedings of Men; We shall be led into the most egregious Misapprehensions. To measure one of the Sparks on your Ring, and fancy We have taken the Dimension of the *Alps* or the *Andes*, would be, in comparison of this Error, a small Mistake. Since, between a brilliant Speck, and a Range of Mountains, there is *some* Proportion: but between human Beneficence, and this heavenly Bounty, there cannot possibly be *any*.—However, the all-condescending CREATOR has been pleased, so to dispense his infinitely rich Grace; that We may find, though nothing parallel, nothing correspondent, yet some *faint* Shadow of its *Manner*, among the Affairs of Mankind. Something, that may

give Us such an Idea of the stupendous Subject, as a *Glow-worm* would give of the Sun's Splendor, in case a Person had never beheld that magnificent Luminary. — This Remark I must intreat You to recollect, whenever I attempt to *elucidate* the Mysteries of the Gospel, by the Occurrences of common Life.

When your worthy Minister was disabled, by a Rheumatic Disorder, from attending on the Business of his Function, several of the neighbouring Clergy gave Him their Assistance. Was He not, by this *vicarious* Performance of his Office, *intitled* to all the Profits of his Living? — It seems therefore not so unexampled a Thing, for one Person to act in another's Stead. And when a Service is thus discharged by the *Proxy*, the Benefit may, according to the received Maxims of Mankind, accrue to the *Principal*. — Did not *Jehu's* Descendents, even to the fourth Generation*, reap the Advantage of their great Grandfather's Zeal? Does not the Duke of — enjoy the Honours and Rewards, won by the Sword of a victorious Ancestor? — And may not the whole World of Believers, with *equal*, with *far greater* Justice, receive Life and Salvation, on account of their all-deserving SAVIOUR? Especially, since He and They are one mystical Body; represented as such in Scripture, and considered as such by GOD.

No, say You: this is contrary to the Rules of *distributive* Justice. — What is your Idea of a *Surety*? How was the Affair stated, and how were Matters negotiated, with relation to your generous Acquaintance *Philander*? He, You know, was bound for an unfortunate Brother, who lately stepped aside.

Ther. The Debt, by his Brother's absconding, devolved upon *Philander*. He was responsible for all, and obliged to pay the whole Sum.

Asp. Was not his Payment *as satisfactory* to the Creditor, as if it had been paid in the Debtor's own Person, by the Debtor's own Hand?

Ther. Certainly.

Asp.

Asp. Was not the Debtor, by this vicarious Payment, released from all Fear of Prosecution, and *acquitted* from any future Demand on this Score?

Ther. He was.

Asp. Apply this Instance to the Redemption of Sinners by *JESUS CHRIST*: who is, in the sacred Writings, expressly styled *A Surety**.—If *Philander's* Act was deemed, in the Estimation of Law, the Act of his Brother; if the Deed of the former was imputed, in point of Advantage, intirely to the latter; why should not the same Effects take place, with regard to the divine Bondsman, and poor insolvent Sinners? Why should *that* be exploded in our Systems of Divinity, which is universally admitted in our Courts of Justice?

Ther. Obedience and Righteousness are, in the Nature of the Things themselves, personal Qualities, and *only* so. Every Man is that only (and can be nothing else) which He is in Himself.

Asp. Righteousness, as *dwelling in Us*, is undoubtedly a personal Quality; and Obedience, as *performed by Us*, comes under the same Denomination. But does this supersede the Necessity, or destroy the Existence of imputed Righteousness?—Your first Proposition is ambiguous. Let it speak distinctly; add *inherent* to your Righteousness; and the Sense becomes determinate, but the Argument falls to the Ground.

Every Man is that only, (and can be nothing else) which He is in Himself.—If I had never seen the Bible, I should have yielded my ready Assent to this Proposition. But, when I open the Old Testament, and find it written by the Prophet; *In the LORD shall all the House of Israel be justified*†. When I turn to the New Testament, and hear the Apostle saying; *Ye are complete in HIM, who is the Head of all Principalities and Powers*||. I cannot concur with *Theron*, without contradicting Revelation.—*Israel*, or the true Believer, is said to be justified; and the Foundation of this Blessing is declared to be, not in Himself, but in

* Heb. vii. 22.

† Isai. xlv. 25.

|| Coloss. ii. 10.

the LORD. The *Colossians* are said to be complete; which we are very certain, they were not in themselves; and are expressly assured, they were so in *CHRIST*. Hence it appears, quite contrary to my Friend's Assertion, that Sinners both *have* and *are* that in *CHRIST*, which they neither have nor are in themselves. They *have*, by Imputation, a *Righteousness* in *CHRIST*; they *are*, by this imputed Righteousness, complete before GOD.

I believe, your Mistake proceeds from neglecting to distinguish between *inherent* and *imputed*.—We never suppose, That a profane Person is devout, or an intemperate Person sober. This is *inherent* Righteousness.—But We maintain, That the Profane and Intemperate, being convinced of their Iniquity, and betaking themselves to the all-sufficient SAVIOUR for Redemption, are interested in the Merit both of his Life and of his Death. This is *imputed* Righteousness.—We farther affirm, That, though really abominable in Themselves, they are fully accepted by GOD, for his beloved SON's Sake. This is *Justification* through imputed Righteousness.

Neither is this any private, precarious, or unsupported Opinion: it is the clear and positive Declaration of Scripture. *He justifieth*, He absolves from Guilt, He regards as righteous, and treats as such—*Whom?* Upright, obedient, sinless Creatures? This were nothing extraordinary—No; but *he justifieth the Ungodly**, that believe in the LORD JESUS. Imputing, as the Ground of this Justification, *their* Trespases to Him, and *His* Righteousness to them.

Ther. I see no Occasion for such *nice* Distinctions, and *metaphysical* Subtilties, in plain popular Divinity. Hard Terms and abstruse Notions, may perplex the Head, but seldom improve the Heart.

Asp. Why then do You oblige Us to make Use of them? If some People *twist* and *entangle* the Reins, it behoves Others to clear them of the Embarrassment, and *replace* them in their due Order.—Many Writers,
either

* Rom. iv. 5.

either from an artful Design, or through a strange Inadvertence, have jumbled and confounded these two very different Ideas. Hence, they have started Objections to our Doctrine, which, the Moment You introduce this obvious Distinction, vanish into Air. They fall into a Mistake of their own, and then throw the Absurdity upon Others.

I am no more fond of hard Terms, and abstruse Notions, than my *Theron*. Neither can I think the Instance before Us so abstruse a Notion. I am very certain, You are capable of comprehending much higher and nicer Refinements. Therefore, I must once again intreat You to remember the very material Difference, between *inherent* and *imputed* Righteousness. The former expresses Sanctification; the latter denotes Justification. By *this*, We are restored to the Favour of GOD; by *that*, We are made meet for his heavenly Kingdom.—Let this Distinction, which is easy, which is scriptural, which is important, take place; and We may for the future dismiss, what You call, our metaphysical Subtilities. Our Disagreement will cease, and our Opinions tally.

Ther. I question that, *Aspasio*. There are other Difficulties to be got over, before I can digest so crude an Opinion.—If we are justified by the Righteousness of *CHRIST*, then the Righteousness which justifies Mankind is *already* wrought out.

Asp And this You take to be a most enormous Falshood. Whereas, I look upon it as a most delightful Truth.—The Righteousness, which justifies sinful Man, was *set on foot*; when GOD sent forth his SON from the Habitation of his Holiness and Glory, to be born of a Woman, and made subject to the Law.—It was *carried on*, through the whole Course of our SAVIOUR's Life; in which He always did such Things, as were pleasing to his heavenly FATHER.—It was *completed* at that ever memorable, that grand Period of Time, when the blessed *IMMANUEL* bowed his dying Head; and cried, with a strong triumphant Voice, IT IS FINISHED.

If the justifying Righteousness was to be wrought by *Ourselves*, We could never be truly and fully justified till Death; till our Warfare was accomplished, and our *last* Act of Obedience exerted.—But how uncomfortable is this Opinion! How miserable would it render our Lives! And how directly does it run counter to the Determination of the Apostle; *Ye ARE justified**!

Ther. Soothed then with this pleasing Surmise, may not the *Libertine* say to his Soul?—"Soul, take thine Ease in the most indolent Security. All my carnal Appetites, indulge Yourself without Restraint. Conscience, be under no Sollicitude to live soberly, righteously, and godlily. For the Work *is done*; *all done* to thine Hands. Thou art like some fortunate Heir, whose Parents have been successfully industrious; and have left nothing to exercise the Diligence of their surviving Son, but only to possess the Inheritance, and live on Labours not his own."

Asp. The *Libertine*, who only speculates or disputes, may indeed abuse the *Doctrine* of Grace. But the *Believer*, who feels the *Power* of Grace, will improve it to better Purposes. Where the former only *fluctuates* in the Understanding, such detestable Consequences may ensue. Where the latter *operates* on the Heart, it will always produce very different Effects.—Such a Person, from such a Faith, will be no more inclined to Inactivity or Licentiousness; than our busy humming Companions are inclined, by this bright Sun-shine and all those expanded Blossoms, to *sleep away* their Hours in the Hive. And You may as soon expect to see these Colonies of the Spring, swarming in *December*, clinging to an *Ice*, or dispersing themselves to gather Honey on the *Snow*; as to see a truly gracious Man, who *is dead to Sin, living any longer therein*†.—Whoever, therefore, so shamefully *perverts* so sweet and glorious a Doctrine, is a Witness against himself, that he has neither Lot nor Portion in the inestimable Privilege.

If

* 1 Cor. vi. 11.

† Rom. vi. 2.

DIALOGUE V. 153

If an Animal suck Poison from the most wholesome Herbs, We are sure from that infallible Indication, it is the vile Spider, or some envenomed Insect, not the valuable and industrious Bee.

Ther. Truly, *Aspasio*, I know not how to call that Doctrine sweet, much less can I recommend it as wholesome; which renders Repentance, personal Reformation, and inherent Rectitude *needleless*. And if your Tenet is once received, all these Duties may fairly be dismissed. So that if the Thing was possible, yet it would be *pernicious*.

Asp. The Prophet was of another Mind: *They shall look on Him whom they have pierced, and mourn* †. Sinners shall look, by Faith, to their crucified LORD: shall see Him fastened with Nails to the cursed Tree; see Him stabbed to the Heart by the bloody Spear. And *remembering*, that this was the Punishment due to their Provocations; *believing*, that by this Punishment, they are freed from all penal Sufferings, and *intitled* to all spiritual Blessings: they shall not be tempted to transgress, but incited to mourn; not play the Profligate, but act the Penitent.—The Apostle exactly agrees with the Prophet; and both are diametrically opposite to my Friend; *the Goodness*, the transcendent and amazing Goodness of GOD our SAVIOUR, instead of diverting from, *leadeth to Repentance* ||.

Far from obstructing, it powerfully promotes *personal Reformation*. For thus saith that all-wise Being, who intimately knows our Frame, and discerns what is most effectual to work upon our Minds; *The Grace of GOD, which bringeth Salvation, hath appeared; teaching Us, that denying all Ungodliness and worldly Lusts, We should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present evil World* ‡. Grace, You observe, even that gloriously free Grace, which bringeth Salvation to unworthy Creatures, is a Dissuasive of all Vice, and an Encouragement to every Virtue.

† Zech. xii. 10.

|| Rom. ii. 4.

‡ Tit. ii. 11, 12.

As to *inherent Rectitude*, how can that be rendered needless by imputed Righteousness? Is Health rendered insignificant by the Abundance of our Riches? Does Ease become superfluous, through the Beauty of our Apparel?—Holiness is the *Health* of our Souls, and the *Ease* of our Minds. Whereas, ungovernable Passions create keener Anguish, than a Brood of Vipers gnawing our Bosoms. Inordinate Desires are a more intolerable Nuisance, than Swarms of Locusts infesting our Abodes. To regulate *those*, and to restrain *these*, can never be needless, till Comfort and Sorrow change their Properties; till the diabolical Nature becomes equally desirable with the Divine.

Ther. The Believer, indeed, out of mere Generosity, *may* if He please, add Works of Righteousness of his own. But his main Interest is secure without them.

Asp. Rather, *Theron*, He *must* out of Duty, He *will* out of Gratitude, and from the new Disposition of his Nature He *cannot but*, add to his Faith Works of Righteousness.

How runs the heavenly *Edict*, in this Case made and provided? *I will, that they who have believed in GOD, be careful to maintain good Works* *.—How beats the *Pulse* of a believing Soul? You may feel it, in that truly generous Demand, made by the *Psalmist*: *What shall I render unto the LORD for all the Benefits, that He hath done unto me* †? A grateful Heart wants not the Goad, but is a Spur to itself.—How leans the *Bias* of his Nature? He is new born; created in *CHRIST JESUS* unto good Works ‡; his Delight is in the Law of the LORD ||. And whatever is our supreme Delight, We are sure to prosecute; and prosecute with Ardour. *We cannot but speak the Things which*

* *Tit.* iii. 8. The original Word *εργασαται* has a Beauty and an Energy, which, I believe it is impossible for our Language to preserve, by any literal Translation. It implies, That a Believer should not only be *exercised* in, but *eminent* for, all good Works: should *show* Others the Way, and *outstrip* them in the honourable Race: be both a *Pattern*, and a *Patron* of universal Godliness.

† *Psal.* cxvi. 11.

‡ *Eph.* ii. 10.

|| *Psal.* i. 2.

which we have seen and heard §, was the Profession of the Apostles; and, if applied to practical Godliness, is the Experience of the *Christian*.

Nor can his main Interest be secure without a holy Obedience. Because, the Judge of the World, at the Day of eternal Retribution, will declare to the Workers of Iniquity; *I never knew You; depart from me* *. Because Holiness, though not the Cause of our Admittance to the beatific Vision; is so necessary a Qualification, that *without it no Man shall see the LORD* †. Without it, there is no Access to Heaven, neither could there be any Enjoyment in Heaven.

Ther. Pray, recollect Yourself, *Aspasio*. According to the Tenour of your own Illustration, the Necessity of *personal* Obedience is evidently vacated. For, how can the Law demand a Debt of the Principal, which has been fully discharged by the Surety?

Asp. We are no longer under a Necessity of obeying the Law, *in order* to establish our Justification, or lay the Foundation for our final Acceptance. We are nevertheless engaged, by several other *indispensible* Obligations, to regulate our Conversation according to those sacred Precepts. Because——this is the most authentic Proof of our Love to the gracious REDEEMER; *If ye Love me, keep my Commandments* ‡.——This is an infallible Evidence of our Union with that exalted Head; *He that abideth in Me, and I in Him, the same bringeth forth much Fruit* ||.——This is the invariable and the most effectual Method, of adorning ¶ our Profession, and magnifying its divine Author;

§ *Cannot but*——This is an Expression used by the Apostles, *Acts* iv. 20. It describes the *genuine* and *habitual* Propensity of their *new* Nature. As the compassionate Bowels cannot but yearn at Spectacles of Misery: as the benevolent Heart cannot but dilate with Pleasure, at the Sight of a Brother's Happiness; so the new Creature in *CHRIST*, cannot but *desire* to glorify, and *delight* to obey——cannot but be *ambitious* (φιλοτιμωμεθα) to resemble, and *covet* to enjoy—the ever blessed GOD.

* Matt. vii. 23. † Heb. xii. 14. ‡ John xiv. 15.
|| John xv. 5.

§ Good Works are therefore stiled, καλα εργα, *graceful, ornamental, laudable* Works, Tit. iii. 8.

thor ; *Let your Light so shine before Men, that they may see your good Works, and glorify your Father, which is in Heaven* †.

*Do We then make void the Law, through Faith in the imputed Righteousness of our LORD?—*The Apostle shall reply. And He replies with a kind of zealous Abhorrence ; *GOD forbid!*—Not content to deny this false Insinuation, he maintains the very Reverse ; *Yea, We establish the Law* ‖. Considered as the original *Covenant of Life* ; We provide for its Honour, by the perfect Obedience of *CHRIST*. Considered as an invariable *Standard of Duty* ; We enforce its Observance, by the most rational, manly, § and endearing Motives.

Ther. Should We admit this Doctrine, Mankind could no longer be considered as in themselves, and solely in themselves *accountable* Creatures. Nor would the future Judgment be an *equitable* Distribution of Rewards and Punishments ; but only GOD's awful and uncontrollable Execution of his own arbitrary and irreversible Decrees.

Asp. I have never been accustomed to consider Mankind, under the Gospel Dispensation, as accountable *solely* in themselves. Because, in this comfortable and benign Scheme, a *MEDIATOR* intervenes ; undertakes to answer for his People ; and bears the *Chastisement of their Peace*.—Were We accountable solely in Ourselves, *CHRIST*, as our great High-Priest, would be set aside ; and his Sacrifice, as a Propitiation for Sin, be of none Effect.

Why may not the future Judgment, be an equitable Distribution of Rewards and Punishments ? If those, who reject the Atonement of the dying *JESUS*, and refuse to depend on his consummate Righteousness, are left to stand or fall, according to the Issue of their own Obedience. If Believers, on the other Hand, are accepted through their most meritorious *REDEEMER* ; but rewarded with higher or inferior Degrees of Felicity, in proportion to the Sanctity of their Nature, and Use-

† Matt. v. 16.

‖ Rom. iii. 31.

§ Hos. xi. 4.

Usefulness of their Lives.—I see nothing arbitrary in this Procedure, but an admirable Mixture of just Severity, and free Goodness—On those, who reject the Atonement, *just Severity*.—To those, who rely on their SAVIOUR, *free Goodness*.

Ther. The Obedience of *CHRIST* was *wholly* due for Himself; therefore could not merit for Another.

Asp. A bold Assertion this! Whoever can make it good, will undoubtedly overthrow my Opinion; and, at the same Time, destroy all my Hopes. But surely, *Theron*, it is not your real Sentiment.

Could it then be Matter of Duty in the eternal SON, to be born of a Woman, and in the LORD of Lords, to become the Servant of all? Could it be Matter of Duty in the KING of Glory, to embrace the Infamy of the Cross; and in the PRINCE of Life, to pour out his Soul unto Death?—If all this was Matter of Duty, the ever blessed *JESUS* (How shall I speak it? *Who can believe it?) was no better than an *unprofitable* Servant. For, *such* is the acknowledged Character of *every* One, who does no more than is his Duty to do *.

Ther. Not so fast, my Friend. Remember what the Scripture affirms. *CHRIST* is said to receive a *Commandment*, and be *subject* to the Law: Both which Expressions evidently imply Duty.

Asp. In order to accomplish our Redemption, the Son of GOD submitted Himself to the Authority of the Law, and became obedient to its Precepts. But, this was his own *spontaneous* Act; the Matter of his *free* Choice; to which He lay under no Manner of *Obligation*, till He engaged to be our Surety.

Being in the Form of GOD, He was Lord of the Law; and no more subject to its Commands, than obnoxious to its Curse. Nevertheless, *He took upon Him the Form of a Servant*; and *was made under the Law*. Wherefore? *That He might* obtain everlasting Life and Glory for himself? No; but that He might *redeem those who were under the Law* †. From which it appears, that both his Engagement and his Obedience were,

* Luke xvii. 10.

† Gal. iv. 5.

158 DIALOGUE V.

were, not for Himself, but for his People. Therefore the Prophet cries out with holy Exultation; *To Us a Child is born; to Us a Son is given*†! His incarnate State and human Nature, together with all that He did and suffered in both, were for Us: *those* assumed on our Account, *these* referred to our Advantage.

Let Us consider this, and be amazed, and be charmed.—The great universal LORD vouchsafes to pay universal Obedience! What *Condescension* was Here!—He vouchsafes to pay it, for Us Men, and for our Redemption! What *Goodness* was this!

Ther. Before We indulge the devotional Strain, We should take Care that our Devotion is founded on *rational* Principles. Otherwise it may prove like the Flash of a Sky-rocket, transient and momentary.

Asp. For this, I think, there is a solid Foundation in Reason, as well as Scripture. As soon as the Man *CHRIST JESUS* was united to the Second Person of the TRINITY, He must have, by virtue of that Union, an unquestionable Right to everlasting Life and Glory. Therefore, He could be under *no Necessity* of obeying, in order to procure either Honour or Happiness for *Himself*. But all that He performed, in conformity to the preceptive Part of the Law, He performed under the Character of a *public Person*: in the Place, and for the Benefit of his spiritual Seed. That they might be interested in it, and justified by it.

Ther. Be it so: the Believer is interested in *CHRIST's* Righteousness.—Pray is He interested in All, or only in Part?—If in *all*, then every Believer is equally righteous, and equally to be rewarded. Which is contrary to an allowed Maxim, That there will be different Allotments of Happiness in the heavenly World.—If in *Part* only, how will You ascertain the Degree? What Proportion belongs to this Person, and what to the other?—Either Way, your Scheme is inextricably embarrassed.

Asp.

† Isai. ix. 6. *Est præterea Empbasis singularis in Voce nobis. Significat id, quod omnes sentiunt, nostro Beno & Commodo natum esse hunc Puerum Imperatorem.* Vitringa in loc.

Asp. The Reply to my *Theron's* Inquiry is easy ; and the Embarrassment He mentions, is but imaginary.—Every true Believer is interested in *all CHRIST's* Righteousness ; in the *whole* Merit of his spotless Nature, of his perfect Obedience, and expiatory Death. Less than the Whole, would be unavailable. Whereas, the Whole renders Us *completely* justified.

You are a great Admirer of Anatomy, *Theron*, and must undoubtedly remember the very *peculiar* Structure of the Ear. Other Parts of the Body are progressive in their Growth. Their Bulk is proportioned to the infantile or manly Age. But the Organs of Hearing, I have been informed, are *precisely* of the *same* Size, in the feeble Infant, and the confirmed Adult.—Justification likewise, being absolutely necessary to a State of Acceptance with GOD, is, in every Stage of the *Christian* Course, and even in the first Dawn of sincere Faith, complete. With regard to the *Existence* of the Privilege, there is no Difference * in the Babes, the young Men, the Fathers in *CHRIST*. The *Perception*, the *Assurance*, the comfortable *Enjoyment* of the Mercy, may increase. But the Mercy itself is incapable of Augmentation.

The various Advances in Sanctification account for the *various Degrees* of future Glory. And not account for them only, but render them intirely reasonable ; and, according to our Apprehension of Things, unavoidable.—As to settling the *Proportion*, We may safely leave that to the SUPREME ARBITRATOR. He, who *meteth out the Heavens with a Span*, and *set-teth a Compass upon the Face of the Deep*, cannot be at a Loss to adjust this Particular.

Ther.

* To the same Purpose speaks one of our most celebrated Divines ; as great an Adept in sacred Literature, as Ages have produced.—“ All are justified *alike* : the *Truth* of Faith justifying, “ not the *Measure*. Justification therefore is the same in All “ that believe : though their Belief be in different Degrees. So, “ once in the Wilderness, all gathered not Manna in the same “ Measure ; yet, when all came to measure, they had all alike ; “ none above an Omer, none under.”

Lightfoot, Vol. II. p. 1052.

Ther. The Organs of Hearing, though not precisely, are very *nearly*, of the same Bulk, in the Babe and the Man. They acquire from advancing Years, scarce any Thing more than an Increase of Solidity. So that I make no Objection to your Illustration, but only to your Doctrine.

If *CHRIST* has done all, and we are intitled to his whole Merits only by believing; to be saved must be the *easiest* Thing in the World. Whereas, the Bible represents Christianity, as a sharp *Warfare*, a State of *Wrestling*, a Course of *Striving*.—In good Truth, *Aspasio*, You prophecy pleasing Things. Divinity is not your Profession; or else, I should number You among “the smooth, emollient, downy Doctors.” For, according to the Articles of your Creed, there is no more Difficulty in securing Heaven, than in rising from our Seat.

Assp. A *speculative* Assent to all the Principles of Religion, is, I acknowledge, a very easy Matter. It *may*, it *must* exist, whenever there is a tolerable Capacity for Reasoning, and a due Attention to Evidence.—This notional Faith forced its Way into the Breast of *Simon* the Sorcerer*; and extorted a Confession from the dying Lips of *Julian*† the Apostate. Irresistible as the Stroke of Lightning, terrible also as its fiery Glare, it flashes Conviction into the very Devils. Even those execrable Spirits *believe and tremble* ‡.

But

* Acts viii. 13.

† It is related in Ecclesiastical History, That, when the Emperor *Julian* was setting out upon his *Partbian* Expedition, He threatened to persecute the *Christians* with the utmost Severity, as soon as He returned victorious.—Upon this Occasion, *Libanius* the Rhetorician, with an insulting Air, asked one of them; *What the Carpenter's Son was doing, while such a Storm lung over his Followers?*—*The Carpenter's Son*, replied the Christian, *is making a Coffin for your Emperor*.—The Event proved the Answer to be *propbetic*. For, in an Engagement with the Enemy, the wretched Apostate was mortally wounded; and cried, with his expiring Breath, *Vicisti, O Galilæe! I am vanquished, O Galilean! Thy Right-band bath the Pre-eminence!*

‡ Jam. ii. 19.

DIALOGUE V. 161

But the Faith, which, far from resting in Speculation, exalts the Desires; regulates the Passions; and refines the whole Conversation—the Faith which, according to the expressive Language of Scripture; *purifies the Heart; overcomes the World; and sets the Affections on Things above*—this truly noble and triumphant Faith, is no such easy Acquisition. This is the Gift of an infinite Benefactor: the Work of a divine Agent. Called, therefore, by way of super-eminent Distinction, *Faith of the Operation of GOD* ||. Because GOD himself, by the effectual Working of his mighty Power, produces it in the human Soul.

The Exercise of this Faith, I would not compare to an active Gentleman, rising from his Seat; but rather to a *ship-wrecked* Mariner, labouring to gain some Place of Safety.—He espies a large *Rock*, that rears its Head above the boisterous Flood. To this He bears away, and to this He approaches: but, whirling Winds, and dashing Waves, drive Him back to an unhappy Distance.—Exerting all his Strength, He advances nearer still; and attempts to climb the desirable Eminence. When, a sweeping Surge interposes, and drenches him again in the rolling Deep.—By determined Efforts, He recovers the Space He had lost. Now, He fastens on the Cliff, and has almost escaped the Danger. But, there is such a Numbness in his Limbs, that He cannot maintain his Hold; and such an impetuous Swell in the Ocean, that He is once more dislodged, and plunged afresh into the raging Billows.—What can he do? His Life, his precious Life, is at stake. He must renew, still renew his Endeavours. And let Him not abandon Himself to Despair. The MASTER sees Him, amidst all his fruitless Toil. Let Him cry earnestly, *LORD, save me! I perish!* and HE, who commandeth the Winds and the Waves, will be sure to put forth his Hand, and rescue Him from the devouring Waters.

Such, my Friend, so *painful*, so *assiduous* are the Struggles of Faith; before it can rest, in peaceful Security, on the *Rock of Ages*, *CHRIST JESUS*.
Of

162 D I A L O G U E VI.

Of this You may, some Time or other, be assured, not only from my Lips, but from your own Experience.

Ther. What may happen in some future Period of Time, is beyond my Power to foresee. At present, I am apt to think, We must put a stop to the theological-Lecture. Don't you remember our Engagement with *Altinous*? And You will own, that Punctuality in performing our Promises, is at least a *moral* Virtue, if it be not a *Christian* Grace.



D I A L O G U E VI.

ASPASIO's Affairs called Him to *London*. He staid in Town a few Days: but as soon as Business was finished, he quitted the City, and hastened to his Friend's *Country-Seat*.—Upon his Arrival, He found some agreeable Company, that came on purpose to spend the Evening with the Family. This Incident prevented the immediate Prosecution of their Subject.—As the next Morning proved misty, and unfit for walking abroad, *Theron* invited *Aspasio* to pass an Hour in his *Study*.

It was situate at the Extremity of a large Gallery: which, while it conducted the Feet to a Repository of Learning, interposed between the Ear, and all the Disturbance of domestic Affairs. So that You are accommodated with every Thing, that may regale a studious Mind; and incommoded with nothing, that may interrupt a sedate Attention.—*Aspasio* readily consented to the Proposal; but desired, first, to take a Turn in this beautiful *Oblong*, and divert Himself with the Decorations of the Place.

Asp.

DIALOGUE VI. 163

Asp. A very short Survey, *Theron*, is sufficient to discover the Correctness of your Judgment, and the true Delicacy of your Taste.—Here, are no *impertinent* and *frivolous* Exhibitions of romantic Tales, or poetic Stories. Here, are no *indecent* Pieces of Imagery, that tend to corrupt a chaste, or inflame a wanton Fancy.—On the contrary, I am presented with a Collection of Maps, accurately drawn by the most able Hands; and several remarkable Transactions of Antiquity, most eloquently told in the Language of the Pencil.—You have happily hit that grand Point, which the Gentleman of Refinement, as well as the Author of Genius should ever keep in View—The Union of the *Beneficial* with the *Delightful* *.

Ther. Indeed, my *Aspasio*, I have often been disappointed, sometimes even shocked, in the Gardens, the Porticos, and the Walks of some modern *Virtuosi*. Their Pourtraits and Statues are little else, but an Assemblage of elaborate Trifles. *Ixion* stretched upon the Wheel, or *Phaeton* precipitated from the Chariot. *Apollo* stringing his Lyre, or *Jupiter* (I beg his supreme Highness's Pardon, for not giving Him the Precedence in my Catalogue) bestriding his Eagle, and balancing his Bolts.—Pray, where is the Advantage of being introduced to this *fabulous* Tribe of Gentry? What noble Idea can they awaken, or what valuable Impression leave upon the Mind? The best We can say of such Performances, is, That they are Limning and Sculpture expensively thrown away.

This celebrated Trumpery, One can bear with, however. But, when the Painting and Sculpture, instead of cultivating Virtue, and improving our Morals, are calculated to be the very *Bane* of both—will You call *this* an elegant Entertainment? No: 'tis a Nuisance. 'Tis a Pest.—In the *Statues*, I grant, every Dimple sinks, and every Muscle swells, with the exactest Propriety. The Countenance is animated with Life, and the Limbs are ready to start into Motion.—The *Picture*, I am sensible, is as highly finished as the Effigy. The Distributions of Light and
Shade

• Omne tulit Punctum, qui miscuit Utile Dulci.

HOR.

Shade most artfully adjusted. The Diminutions of the Perspective true to a Nicety. Nor can any Thing exceed the easy Flow of the Robe, unless it be the graceful Attitude, and almost speaking Aspect, of the principal Figure.—But, is this *masterly* Execution an Equivalent for the most *malignant* Effects? For fully-ing the Purity of my Fancy, and poisoning the Powers of my Imagination?

Is it an Indication of the Owner's *judicious* Taste, to prefer Regularity of Features in the hammered Block, before orderly and harmonious Affections in his own Breast? Does it bespeak a *refined* Disposition, or a *benevolent* Temper, to be so extravagantly enamoured with the Touches of a lascivious Pencil; as to expose them in the most frequented Passages, and obtrude them on every unwary Guest?—Surely, this can create no very advantageous Opinion of a Gentleman's *intellectual* Discernment. Much less can it raise an amiable Idea of his *moral* Character*. On such Occasions, I am strongly tempted to suspect, That real Honour is a Stranger, where common Decency† is wanting.

As for the Artist, One can hardly forbear execrating his hateful Folly, who could *prostitute* such fine Talents to such infamous Purposes.—Detested be the Chizzel! that teaches, tho' with inimitable Dexterity, the cold obdurate Marble to inkindle dissolute Affections.—Abhorred be the Pencil! that makes no other Use of the most lovely Colours, than to pollute the Canvass, and insnare the Spectator.

It is argued, I know, that many of those Pieces are the completest Models extant.—An *everlasting Reproach*
this

* 'Tis Pity, but the Advice of *Cicero*, that great Master of elegant Taste, and polite Manners, was received as a *Standard* of Regulation, by all our Connoisseurs in the fine Arts. *In primis provideat, ne Ornamenta Aedium atque Hortorum Vitium aliquod indicent inesse Moribus. De Offic.*

† A Gentleman, observing some gross Indelicacies of this Kind, at the Seat of a Person of Distinction, very acutely (and, I believe, too justly) said;

His Paintings are the Gibbet of his Name.

this to the Art: but no Apology for the Performances. Since, the more nicely they are executed, the more mischievous † is their Influence. It strikes the surer, and sinks the deeper. It dresses Destruction gay, and paves with Beauty the Way to Ruin.

It is my chief Ambition, *Aspasio*, to have all my Decorations so circumstanced, that the Beholder may learn some *valuable Lesson* in Morality, or be reminded of some *important Event* in History: may find, even in the Scenes of his Amusement, something to establish his Virtue, or enlarge his Knowledge.

I frequently entertain my eldest Son, who is reading the *Greek* and *Latin* Historians, with an Explanation of my principal Drawings. That he may behold
in

† I hope it will not be thought improper; I wish, it was intirely needless; to animadvert upon a Practice, which is not only a Reproach to our *Christian Profession*, but an Insult upon *National Decorum*. The Practice of exposing to public View, and offering to public Sale, such shameful *Prints*; as are fitted only to awaken licentious Desires, and cherish the most profligate Dispositions.

Such Spectacles are a Species of the *rankest* Poison. And can the Poison be less pernicious, because it is received at the Eye, instead of passing through the Lips? Because it tends *more immediately* to debauch the Morals, and *but remotely* to destroy the Constitution?—No Wonder, so many of our Youths are corrupted, and so many Robberies committed; while such Scenes of pictured Lewdness, are suffered to inflame them with Lust, and habituate them to Impudence.

Another very *indecent* Custom has unaccountably stole its Way, into several Performances of Genius and Elegance. The Custom, I mean, of representing the *Muses*, the *Graces*, and other *romantic* Personages, in the Form of beautiful Ladies, partly, if not, intirely, naked.—'Tis true, here are no loose Adventures; no immodest Gestures; nay more, the Artist expresses *his own*, and consults *your* Modesty, by presenting you with a Position in Profile, by the Intervention of a Foliage, or the Lappet of a Robe.—But let me ask the ingenious Operator, If he would choose to introduce his Wife or his Daughter, in *such* a Manner, to public Company?—Is He startled at the Question? Is He shocked at the Thought? Then, let Him reflect, and let Others consider, Whether *that* can be graceful or allowable in a Picture, which would be brutal and unsufferable in common Life?

Socrates (who, before his Application to Philosophy, practised as a *Statuary*) could not but blush at this Abuse of his Art. And, being to form a Representation of the *Graces*, he represented them properly *habited*.

in Colouring, what He has perused in Narrative.— At this Instant, the Youth happened to make his Appearance; paying his Respects to *Aspasio*, and dutifully saluting his Father.—It just recurs to my Memory, said *Theron*, that some necessary Affairs of the Family, require my Attendance for a few Minutes. Will You excuse my Absence, good *Aspasio*; and permit my Son to supply my Place?

You will very much oblige me, by leaving me such a Companion.—And come, my dear Sir, addressing Himself to *Eugenio*, as I know You are a Lover of Learning, what think You of diverting Ourselves with these agreeable Books? Which give Us their instructive Lessons, not in puzzling Languages, but in pleasing Colours.—*Eugenio* spoke his Consent, and expressed his Modesty, by a becoming Blush. While *Aspasio* proceeded—

Asp. This is a striking Picture indeed! Hills piled on Hills form a most astonishing Prospect. What *horrible Magnificence* reigns amidst those wild and shaggy Rocks! Nature seems to have designed them for the Boundaries of the World. Yet those daring Troops are attempting to pass the prodigious Barrier. Who are they, *Eugenio*, and whom shall We call their Leader?

Eug. This, Sir, is the famous *Hannibal*, heading and encouraging his Army in the Passage of the *Alps*. The Sons of *Africa* seem to shiver with Cold, as they traverse those frozen Regions, and march among the Clouds.

Asp. 'Tis the very same. Some, You observe, climb, with excessive Toil, the steep and craggy Cliffs. Others, with far greater Difficulty, descend through dreadful Declivities of Ice; exposed all the while, to the Arrows of the Mountaineers.—Some, endeavouring to avoid the Showers of Steel, slip with their Feet, and tumble headlong down the vast projecting Promontories. See from what a Height they are falling! Carriages and their Drivers, the Horse and his Rider! And at what a Distance still, from the stony Abyss below! Some lie, with closed Eye-lids, and ghastly Features, dashed to Death at the very Bottom. Others, writhing

writhing with the Torture of mangled Limbs, and broken Bones, lift up an agonizing Look to their Comrades.—Their Comrades, insensible of a Brother's Misery, and wholly intent upon their own Preservation, hang frightfully suspended on the Edges of the Precipice. The Precipice seems to totter as they cling; and the alarmed Spectator expects, every Moment, a hideous Downfall.—Are You not startled at the View, *Eugenio*, and in pain for the hardy Adventurers?

Eug. I am, Sir. And I wonder, how they will extricate themselves from these perilous Circumstances. I have read in *Livy*, that they cut their Way through the Rocks, after they had softened them with *Vinegar*. But is this probable? How could they procure a sufficient Quantity, amidst those desolate Mountains?

Asp. I believe, their *Resolution* and their *Perseverance*, were the Vinegar. These open a Road through Rocks. These, under the Conduct of Prudence, and the Favour of Heaven*, surmount all Obstacles. Influenced by these, the Survivors press boldly on; and are deter-

* Under the *Favour of Heaven*—I cannot but wish, that the Relator of *Lord Anson's Voyage round the World*, had anticipated *Aspasio's* Remark. Had made some grateful Acknowledgments to an interposing PROVIDENCE, in that masculine, nervous, noble Narrative.—A Narrative of such signal Deliverances, so critically timed, and so surprisingly circumstanced; as, in the Course of one Expedition, are scarcely to be paralleled.

I am persuaded, it would have been no Disparagement of the great Commander, and his gallant Officers; to have it thankfully recognized, on some very unexpected, yet most advantageous Turn of Affairs, THIS HATH GOD DONE!—Neither could it have detracted from the Merit of the brave Sailors, to have confessed, on many hazardous Emergencies; That all their Resolution, all their Address, and the Exertion of their utmost Abilities, had been only *lost Labour*, without the remarkable Co-operation of divine Goodness. And I am apprehensive, that it must considerably diminish the Delight of many Readers, to observe the blessed Author of all these Mercies, passed by unnoticed, unacknowledged, and without any Share of the Praise.

The Sarcastm on Pope *Adrian* and his Exploits, I fear, would be too proper on this Occasion, *Hic DEUS nihil fecit*.

determined to vanquish the Horrors of Nature, as a Prelude to their Victory over the Forces of *Rome*. These, I hope, will be the constant Companions of my *Eugenio's* youthful Studies; and will enable Him also to conquer the Difficulties, that lie in his Way to Learning.

What is our next Draught? At each End we have a Group of living Figures. All the intermediate Space is an extensive Tract of Land, diversified only by rapid Rivers, horrid Desarts, and mountainous Ridges; with here and there a few savage Natives, in uncouth Dresses, and formidable Arms.—It is more like a *Map*, than a *Picture*. And the most remarkable Beauty is, the *aerial Perspective*. Which puts a very agreeable Cheat upon our Eyes; causing Us to behold, on an Ell of Canvass, the Space of many Hundreds of Miles.

Eug. This represents *The Retreat of the ten Thousand Greeks*. First We behold them in the Plains of *Media*; at an immense Distance from their native Country; without Guides; without Provision; and what is the most desperate Calamity of all, deprived of their ablest Officers by Treachery and Murder.—Well may they look dejected. How have I pitied them, as I read their Story! Abhorred the Perfidy of their Enemies, and wished them all Success in their hazardous Enterprize!

Asp. Don't you perceive their drooping Spirits begin to revive, and some Gleam of Hope diffuses itself through their Countenances, while they listen to the eloquent *Xenophon*? Who stands conspicuous in the Midst, haranguing his Soldiers, and rousing their Courage. But, Ah! what a vast Extent of unknown Climes must they traverse, with a numerous and victorious Army, harassing them in Flank, or hanging upon their Rear! What Fatigues must they sustain, what Hardships endure, before they arrive at their wished for Home!—*Home!* Fired by the enchanting Name, and animated by their brave philosophic Leader, they resolve to push their Way through all the Extremes of Peril and pain. To scatter, with their little

little Band, the incircling Millions of *Barbarians*, is the smallest of their Achievements. They cross Rivers, they scale Rocks, whose slippery Banks, and craggy Summits, are lined with opposing Nations. They wade through Deserts of Snow; and pass over inhospitable Mountains, the far more dreaded Abodes of *Desolation*, *Drought*, and *Famine*. They encounter the Keanness of the Northern Storm, and all the Rigour of the most malignant Seasons.—As some of these Articles are incapable of being expressed by the Pencil, the Artist remits Us to the Historian; and has contented Himself, with marking out the most distinguished Stages of this memorable Expedition. Only We view the courageous Itinerants, once again, on a pretty lofty Eminence. There they appear, not with their former Dejection, but in all the Transports of Joy.

Eug. This, Sir, is the Mountain *Tecqua*. From whence they had the first View of the Sea, and the first Dawn of Safety. There they embrace one another, and extol their Commanders, especially the noble *Xenophon*: Whose History gives me great Delight, and his manly yet benign Aspect strangely attracts my Esteem. Methinks, under such a General, I could have been willing to take my Share, in all the Toil, and all the Hazards of the Expedition.

Asp. Would my *Eugenio*? Then I will list Him under a Captain, unspeakably more accomplished and beneficent. Young as You are, You shall, from this Hour, commence a Soldier and a Traveler. A *Soldier*, to fight against Sin, and every Temptation. A *Traveler*, to pass through the Wilderness of this World, unto the Land of everlasting Rest.—Though your Enemies may be numerous, and your Journey tedious, yet faint not, neither be discouraged. The LORD of Heaven is your Guide, and Heaven itself shall be your exceeding great Reward. When You arrive at those happy Abodes, your Delight will infinitely surpass, all that the *Grecians* felt on *Tecqua*; when their ravished Eyes beheld, and their Tongues with Extasy shouted, *The Sea! The Sea!*

The Scene of yonder Picture, I would venture to affirm, lies among the antient *Jews*.

Eug. How can you tell this, Sir, at such a Distance?

Asp. By the Fringes annexed to their Garments.—**GOD** Almighty commanded all the *Jews*, to observe this Peculiarity in their Habit*. That, their very Clothes, being different from the Apparel of their *Heathen* Neighbours, might admonish them not to be conformed to their idolatrous Worship, and licentious Manners.—This, as well as every other divine Command, our **LORD JESUS CHRIST** most exactly obeyed. Therefore, We are told by the evangelical Historian, That the diseased Woman, *who touched but the Hem of his Garment, was restored to Health.* Hem it is, in our *English* Bibles. But, if You consult, as I hope you often will, that most excellent of all Books, the *Greek* Testament; You will find, that the original Word might more properly be rendered *Fringe*†.—However, let Us pass from the Drapery to the Design.

Eug. Here, We see *David* in one of the most threatening Exigencies of his whole Life. *Saul*, more like a Blood-Hound than a King, pursues the best of Sons, and the most valuable of Subjects. He has extended the Wings of his very superior Army, in order to surround ‡ the injured Hero, and his Handful of Associates.

Asp.

* One would wonder, how the *Jews* can so *tenaciously* adhere to their Law, and yet so *apparently* neglect its Precepts. Where are the Sons of *Abraham*, that observe this express and positive Command of **JEHOVAH**? Though *this* indeed *might* be obeyed, yet many of the *Mosaical* Injunctions are rendered, and by *Providence* itself, absolutely impracticable. Is not this therefore a most incontestible Proof—a Proof, not invented by the Arts of Sophistry, but written by the Finger of the **ALMIGHTY** himself—that the *legal* Ordinances are abolished, in order to make way for a *better* Dispensation? When the Avenues are become inaccessible, the House untenantable, and the principal Apartments *irreparably* decayed; is not this the most cogent Admonition to the Inhabitants, that they betake themselves to some new and more commodious Residence?—See Numb. xv. 38.

† Matt. ix. 20. *Κρασπεδον*.

‡ To this, or some such Incident, may be applied a Passage of the *Psalms*, which, in our Translation, is very obscure; has scarce any

DIALOGUE VI. 171

Asp. This is the most *animated*, and, I think, the most *masterly* Performance, that has hitherto come under our Notice.—Consternation and Doubt agitate their Looks. Shall they surrender themselves, as so many tame Victims, to a Tyrant's Fury? Or, shall they cut their Way to Safety, through the Hearts of Countrymen, Friends, and Brothers? Dreadful Dilemma!—While they are debating, the Pursuers are closing upon them. A few, a few Minutes more, must decide their Fate.—But who is the Person that intervenes, just at this *critical* Juncture?

Eug. It is a Messenger from the principal Inhabitants of *Judea*. He comes breathless and trembling, Amazement in his Face, and Dust upon his Head. *An Invasion!* He cries—*An Invasion!*—*The Philistines have poured themselves upon our Frontiers!*—*The Philistines are over-running the Land!*

Asp. Upon the Receipt of this News, See! what Vexation reddens in the disappointed Monarch's Af-

fect; or if any, a very unjustifiable one. *Wherefore should I fear in the Days of Evil, when the Wickedness of my Heels compasseth me round about?* Psalm xlix. 5.—*Wherefore?* The Reason is very apparent. When Wickedness cleaves to our Heels, or attends our Goings, it raises an Army of Terrors. It unsheaths the Sword of divine Vengeance, and levels at our guilty Heads every Threatning in the Book of GOD.

Surely then another Translation should be given to the Words, and a different Turn to the Sense! And another Translation the Words will bear; a different Sense the Connection demands. *Wherefore should I fear, when Wickedness compasseth me about at my Heels?* This is a fine spirited Interrogation. This implies a great and noble Truth. From this also the Verse appears, not only with Propriety, but with Beauty.—*When Wickedness*, or the malicious Attempts of wicked Men—*compass me about*, surround me, threaten me on every Side,—*nay*, when they are *at my very Heels*, just upon the Point to seize, overwhelm, and crush me; so that the Danger seems both *inevitable* and *imminent*.—Yet *even* then, having GOD's almighty Power and inviolable Faithfulness for my Protection, *wherefore should I be alarmed?* Alarmed! No; confiding in such a Safeguard, I will bid Defiance to my Enemies, and bid Adieu to my Fears.

* This Event is related, 1 Sam. xxiii. 25, &c. And it is one of the most extraordinary Instances of a divine Interposal, at the very Crisis of Need, that any History has recorded.

pest! What Anger lightens in his Eye! At the same Time, what pale Reflections on his Country's Danger, mingle themselves with the fiery Passions, and almost quench the Flame inkindling in his Cheeks. Shall the Vulture relinquish his Prey, even when it lies fluttering under his Talons? Galling Thought! But his Kingdom is at stake. If he does not immediately advance to repel the Enemy, his All, his All is lost. Burning therefore with Indignation, yet chilled with Fear, He turns, hasty though reluctant, away *. — Are You not charmed, *Eugenio*, with this Description of *tumultuous* and *contrary* Passions? Which afford the finest Subject for historic Painting, and are so happily expressed in this Piece.

Eug. Indeed, Sir, I am *shocked*, rather than charmed. The very Looks of that revengeful Monarch fill me with Horror. What must He suffer in his Mind, who discovers such Rage and Anguish in his Features! I would not have his furious Temper, for all his royal Power.

Asp. Then, my dear *Eugenio*, You must endeavour to suppress every Emotion of Envy and Malevolence. You must cherish a cordial Good-will to all Men; and learn to rejoice in *their* Excellencies and Happiness, as well as in *your own*. Envy is the Worm that gnaws, Envy is the Fury that embroils his wretched Heart. And an Author, with whom You will ere long be acquainted, has assured Us;

Invidia Siculi non invenere Tyranni

Tormentum majus.

Hor.

The next is a kind of *Night-piece*. Stars are in the Sky, and the new Moon rides on the Skirts of the Hemisphere. Which affords just Light enough to distinguish Objects.—This is a perfect Contrast to the foregoing. We see no Conflict of jarring Passions. But the principal Person appears *calm* and *composed*, as the Night that surrounds Him. He stands on the Bank of
a River,

* ————— *Εκων ἀντιοριγε Συνα.*

Thus *Homer* expresses the Contrariety of Passions, that frequently operate, at the same Time, in the same Breast.

a River, thoughtful and attentive, as though he was pondering or executing some important Project.

Eug. This is *Cyrus the Great*. He stands upon the Banks of the *Euphrates*; not far from *Babylon*. He points with his Sceptre, and is giving Directions to his Army. Their Orders are, to pass through the Channel of the River, (which is drained of its Water) in order to surprise the City.

Asp. This is a Prince of very superior Dignity. The honoured Instrument of executing JEHOVAH's Counsels. He was foretold by the Prophet *Isaiab*, and even mentioned by Name*, more than two hundred Years before his Birth. Let Us wish Him Prosperity. For He goes to humble the Pride of *Babylon*, and release the Captivity of *Israel*.—See! with what regular Movements, and what calm Alacrity, his Troops advance. Silence seems to escort them; while, under Covert of the Shades, and with Providence at their Head, they march along a Road, never before trodden by the Foot of Man.—The Soldiers of the Garrison, have abandoned their Station on the Wall, to join in the dissolute Indulgence of this fatal Night. The Inhabitants, like many a heedless Sinner, are lulled in Security, even on the very Brink of Ruin.

Eug. Why are those *brazen Gates*, which lead to the River, placed in such a distinguished Point of View? They strike my Eye more, I think, than all the Monuments of Art and Grandeur, which adorn that superb City.—And let me farther ask, Whether the Painter has not offended against Probability, in suffering them to stand wide open? On the Approach of so formidable an Adversary, I should expect to have found them shut with all possible Security.

Asp. In this Particular, the Painter has shewed his Judgment, and not forgotten his Piety. GOD had devoted that haughty and oppressive Metropolis to Destruction. And You will perceive, from this Circumstance, how wonderfully He *over-rules* all Events, for the Accomplishment of his sacred Purposes. Had those

* Isai. xlv. 28. xlv. 1.

ponderous Gates been shut*, the City had continued impregnable, and the whole Enterprize been defeated. But, through some accidental Forgetfulness, occasioned by the Disorders of this riotous Solemnity, or rather by a very *signal Interposition* of divine Vengeance, they are left open, and afford an easy Entrance to Slaughter and Death. Which rush upon the unhappy Creatures, all sunk in Sleep, or over-charged with Wine, as a concealed Snare, in some dreadful unexpected Moment springs up, and inextricably entangles the unwary Bird.—Was I to inscribe this Picture with a Motto, I would choose the Apostle's Admonition, BE SOBER: BE VIGILANT.

Who is this, with his Length of Hair † flowing upon his Shoulders; with such Amplitude of Personage, such

* See this very momentous, though seemingly inconsiderable Circumstance, finely illustrated by Mr. Rollin, and compared with a remarkable Prophecy in *Isaiab. Antient Hist.* Vol. II. p. 144, 153.—A Work, in which the most *entertaining* and *instructive* Events of Antiquity, are regularly digested; elegantly related; and stripped of those minuter Incidents, which make the Story move slow, and are apt to fatigue the Attention.—Concise, but judicious Observations are interspersed. Which may teach young Minds, to form a right Judgment of Things: and not be misled by the *Plausibility* of popular Notions, or the *Partiality* of prejudiced Historians.—Many very distinguished *Predictions* of Scripture, are explained and confirmed by correspondent Facts, from the most authentic Memoirs of classical Literature. Indeed, a perpetual Regard to the Elucidation and Honour of the *sacred Oracles*, runs through and ennobles the whole Performance.—Which Method, if not strictly conformable to the Rules of Historical Composition, is a *Transgression* of them greatly to their *Advantage*. It may be said to resemble the *golden Branch*, celebrated by *Virgil*, and plucked by his Hero. Whose Growth, though a Departure from the usual Laws of Vegetation, was far from depreciating the Value of the Tree.

Though I admire the Whole, I am charmed with the *Conclusion*. It is, I think, peculiarly pertinent, and inimitably grand. Has a Dignity, an Elevation, a Majesty, which, somewhat like the Kingdom it describes, is quite unequalled, and little less than stupendous;

Παντοθεν αργυρεῖ, χρυσεὺν δ' ἐπέθηκε κορώνην.

† I believe, it was not customary with the *Romans*, especially their Warriors, to have long flowing Hair. This therefore might
seem

such Magnificence of Mien, and noble Plainness of Habit?

Eug. This, Sir, is my favourite Piece.—My Father sometimes shews me the Heads of the Philosophers: but there is something so uninviting and severe in *Socrates* and *Diogenes*, that I could never much admire them.—But this, Sir, is *Scipio*; the Thunderbolt of War, as *Virgil* calls Him. Here is something so lovely and graceful, as well as grand and majestic, that I am never weary of looking on Him.

Asp. He appears with a Lady of distinguished Beauty in his Hand.

Eug. This is the captive Princess; who had been taken in War; who was set apart for the General's Prize; but whom He is now restoring to her espoused Husband.

Asp. You are right, *Eugenio*.—He has just led in his lovely Captive, attended by her Husband and Parents, amidst a full Assembly of *Romans* and *Celtiberians*; the Victors and the Vanquished. His modest Eyes, You observe, are rather turned from, than gazing upon, the blooming Virgin.—Cannot You suppose, how the Spectators must be affected, upon the Opening of this extraordinary Scene? Every One beholds, the Hero with Admiration, the Lady with Delight. Every Bosom is big with Expectation, or in Pain for the Event. After a short Pause, He addresses Himself to the Lover, in Words to this Effect.—“ I am no Stranger to your
“ Interest in this fine Woman. The Fortune of War
“ has put her intirely into my Power. The Circum-
“ stances of my Youth cannot render me insensible to
“ so engaging a Person. But with Us *Romans*, Ho-
“ nour and Generosity have a more prevailing In-
“ fluence, than transitory Pleasures. Take your Bride;

seem an Offence against what the *Italians* call *il Costume*, if the Painter was not supported by the Authority of *Livy*. Who, in his descriptive Picture of *Scipio*, gives Us the following Touches; *Species Corporis ampla ac magnifica. Præterquam quod suapte Natura multa Majestas inerat, adornabat promissa Cæsaries, Habitusque Corporis, non cultus Munditiis, sed virilis verè ac militaris.*

Lib. XXVIII. c. 35.

176 DIALOGUE VI.

“be happy in each Other; and when You look upon
 “this Gift, admire the *Romans*, be a Friend to *Rome*.”
 —Upon this He delivers Her (as You behold the Ac-
 tion here represented) to the enamoured Prince.

See! how the Crouds, that cluster and hang around,
 are struck with the beneficent Deed!—In the *Celtibe-
 rians*, We behold a Mixture of Veneration and Sur-
 prise. Their Looks are full of Meaning. Methinks,
 they are going to cry out; *Excellent Man!*—In the *Ro-
 mans*, We discern a conscious Superiority, and Exul-
 tation of Mind. Triumph is in their Features. As
 though they would say, *This wondrous Man is ours!*—
 In the *Lady*, We admire the accomplished and modest
 Fair; uniting all the Dignity of her Birth, with all the
 Delicacy of her Sex. What soft Confusion, and what
 tender Joy, appear in her Countenance! She is lost in
 Wonder, and at a Loss for Words. She speaks the
 Acknowledgments of her Heart, by the silent Elo-
 quence of a Tear; which steals down her glowing
 Cheek, to bedew the kind Hand, that has protected
 her Innocence, and is delivering Her to her Lord.—
Her Lord is under an apparent, and a graceful Struggle,
 of Love and Gratitude. He dotes upon his charming
 Princess, and He almost adores his generous Bene-
 factor. We can hardly tell, whether He is going to
 clasp the former in his Arms, or throw Himself at the
 Feet of the latter.—The *aged Parents* express their
 Transport in a different Manner. Their Knees are
 bent to the Earth; their Eyes are lifted up to Heaven;
 they implore, for their noble Guardian, every Blessing
 that the Gods can bestow.—*Scipio* Himself displays all
 the Magnanimity of the Conqueror, tempered with
 the Sedateness of the Philosopher, and softened with
 the Gentleness of the Friend. He gives Happiness,
 but He enjoys a greater. His Eyes sparkle with a sub-
 lime Delight; and He seems to anticipate the Applause,
 which this truly heroic Act will gain, in all Countries
 and in all Ages.

Eug. Is not this a greater Victory, than any that He
 had won, in the Field of Battle? And a nobler Tri-
 umph, than any that could be voted Him, by the ap-
 plauding

plauding Senate? Amiable *Scipio*! Might I be a *Roman* I would be no other than *Scipio*.

Asp. I wish You, my dear Sir, the Temperance and Generosity of *Scipio*. But from a better Motive than his. *He*, I fear, was too much swayed by a Spirit of Ambition, which *You* must endeavour to suppress, rather than cherish—A *Spirit of Ambition*, which pants after Distinction, and thirsts for Applause, is diametrically opposite to the Genius of the Gospel*.—It is a Lesson, which must infallibly be unlearned, if ever We become Possessors of Faith, or Partakers of *CHRIST*†.—It is a Root of Bitterness, which naturally produces Envy‡; that most odious, and (as You have just now seen) most self-tormenting of all Tempers.—It is a Habit of Mind, which generally renders Men Incendiaries in the Church, and Disturbers of its Tranquillity||.—It is therefore, more like an *enchanted Potion* that inebriates, than a *genuine Cordial* that animates.

Eug. From what Motive then would You encourage me, to be diligent in the Pursuit of Learning, and in the Cultivation of every Virtue?

Asp. Not, that You may acquire the poor, contemptible, perishing Honour, which cometh from Men—but, that You may *please* GOD, your Almighty CREATOR—that You may *glorify* CHRIST, your infinitely condescending REDEEMER—that You may Yourself attain, what is the true *Dignity* and only *Felicity* of your Nature; and may be serviceable to the *best Interests* of your Fellow-creatures—even their present Holiness, and their eternal Happiness.

These are the *grand* and *endearing* Encouragements, which our Holy Religion proposes. These will operate, I am bold to aver, with a much sweeter, and a far more sovereign Efficacy, than all the glittering Enticements which Ambition can devise. And, what is above all other Considerations weighty, these will be more likely, or rather these will be very certain, to receive the *divine Blessing*.

* Gal. v. 26.
|| 3 Joh. 9. 10.

† John v. 44.

‡ Gal. v. 26.

You told me, You was never weary of contemplating *Scipio*. For which Reason, I promise Myself, You will not be fatigued or displeased, though I have so long confined your Attention to this Pourtrait.—But have We no Hero of *Britain*, fit to join this illustrious Triumvirate from *Rome, Persia, and Judæa*?

Eug. The very next We meet, is one of our *English* Kings. But I cannot say, that I remember either his Name, or his Story.

Asp. How, my young Gentleman! Do You read the Annals of *other* Nations, and not acquaint Yourself with the Affairs of *your own* Country?—If I was in your Place, I would apply myself to the classical Writers by way of Study, and to some valuable *English* Historian by way of Amusement. Such an Amusement is infinitely preferable to *Novels* or *Romances*; and will not only relax your Attention, but enrich your Mind.

Eug. I thank You, good Sir, for your Admonition. And, if You please, I will now begin the Study, You recommend. Your Explanation of these Drawings, shall be the Rudiments of my Knowledge. And I shall think it a Happiness, to receive my first Instructions, from so able a Master.

Asp. It is Honour enough for *me, Eugenio*, to have given You the Hint. I only point out your Game, or spring the Covey; You shall be taught by a more expert Proficient, to make it your own. Yet, though Others may direct You with greater Skill, None will rejoice in your successful Pursuit, more sincerely than myself.

This is our renowned *Henry the Fifth*; as He appeared after the Victory of *Agincourt*. You see the gallant Conqueror clad in Steel, and recent from the Slaughter of the insulting Foe. He seems to breathe an heroic Ardour, which is sweetened and exalted by a lively Devotion.—He that, a little while ago, drove the Battle, like a Whirlwind, on the Legions of *France*; now, bends a suppliant Knee, and offers the eucharistic Hymn, to the LORD GOD of Hosts. No turbulent or disorderly Joy riots among the Soldiery. They express not the triumph of their Hearts, in frantic

tic Exultations, or drunken Revels; but in Acts of Thanksgiving to JEHOVAH. In an Attitude, that speaks the Psalmist's devout Acknowledgment; *Not unto Us, O LORD, not unto Us, but unto thy Name be the Glory.*

This last Instance informs my *Eugenio*, That *Prayer* is an honourable employ—has been practised by Persons of the most admired Endowments—is the surest Method of *obtaining Success*, in whatever Business We undertake: and of *enjoying Prosperity*, in whatever Circumstances We are placed.

The next Piece is different from all the preceding. In *those*, Armies with their Banners displayed, Ships of War riding at Anchor, battering Engines, and Instruments of Death, form the Perspective. In *this*, We have, all around, a lovely rural Landschape; expressive of Peace, and enriched with Plenty. Corn and Cattle in the Valleys; fruitful Vineyards on the Hills; and beautiful Gardens surrounding the Houses.—But who is that *graceful* and *august* Personage, seated on a stately Throne of Ivory and Gold?

Eug. This is *Solomon*, giving his first Audience to the Queen of *Sheba*. A large Train of her Attendants throng the Avenues of the Palace. Some leading foreign Animals: Some, bearing Vases and Caskets: All, arrayed in strange Apparel. The *Israelites* gaze upon their outlandish Visitants, their costly Presents, and peculiar Manners. Their Visitants are as much surpris'd at the Walls, the Towers, and especially the Temple of *Jerusalem*. But You, Sir, I apprehend, are most pleas'd with the venerable Person that fills the Throne.

Asp. Indeed I am; and so is his royal Guest.—You see, in her Habit, her Retinue, her Deportment, a rude unpolish'd Kind of Grandeur. But all in *Solomon* is so splendid, and at the same Time so elegant; displays such a Delicacy of Taste, and such a Magnificence of Spirit; that the *Sabæan* Queen is overwhelmed with Amazement, and transported with Delight. Her Looks speak that emphatical Acknowledgment, recorded by the sacred Historian; *It was a true Report, that I heard in my own Land, of thy Acts, and of thy Wisdom.*

adm. Howbeit, I believed not the Words, until I came, and mine Eyes had seen: and behold! the half was not told me: thy Wisdom and Prosperity exceed the Fame which I heard*.

The Dome is of Cedar, the Pillars of Marble, on which are supported Curtains of Embroidery.—The Pillars shine with the most glossy Polish, and swell upon the Eye with the boldest Projections. The Curtains, pendent in large and easy Folds, seem not adhesive to the Canvass, but waving in the Air. The Throne is so exquisitely contrived, so richly ornamented, and so highly finished, as shews the Painter had in his Eye that remarkable Observation of Scripture: *There was not the like made in any Kingdom.*

If the Monarch was absent, We should desire no greater Entertainment, than to view the Beauties of the Apartment: but can hardly allow any Attention to the Edifice, when so graceful and so grand a Presence bespeaks our Regard. For I must own, there appears to me something peculiarly excellent in this Figure: a *Serenity* and *Dignity*, without any of that martial Air, which gives a Tincture of Ferocity to the Warrior: a *Sagacity* and *Penetration*, not to be equalled by the Wrinkles of Age, yet transparent through all the Bloom of Youth. Piety and Wisdom, the Love of GOD and the Grace of his SPIRIT, give an Elevation to the Mind; a secret Charm to the Countenance; and something more than mortal to the whole Man.—I am apt to suspect, *Eugenio*, that You yourself are ready to adopt a new Favourite. That You now prefer *Solomon* even to *Scipio*: and had rather be like the “Be-loved of the LORD,” than the Darling of *Rome*.

Eug. Every Thing in *Solomon* is so venerable and heavenly, that I am filled with Awe, rather than fired with Emulation. It is not for a Boy, to think of imitating such high Perfection!

Asp. Why not, my dear Sir? It was GOD who gave *Solomon* his superior Wisdom, and exalted Accomplishments. And GOD is the same Yesterday, to Day, and for ever: as willing to hear, and as able to help

* 1 Kings x. 6, 7.

help *You*, as he was to hear and bless his Servant *Solomon*.—Neither let your Youth be a Discouragement. *Out of the Mouths of very Babes and Sucklings, HE ordaineth Strength, and perfects Praise**. *Samuel* ministered in the Temple, when He was but a Child†. *Josiah*, while He was yet young, began to seek after the GOD of his Fathers‡. *Timothy* was acquainted with the Holy Scriptures from his earliest Years||. And *Solomon* himself was none of the oldest, when He was favoured with that extraordinary Vision, and made that admirable Choice at *Gibeon*§. A Passage of Scripture, which I dare say, You have read; which I would recommend to your attentive Consideration: and which, I hope, You will take for the model of your Conduct.—And if You, like that illustrious young Prince, desire a wise and understanding Heart, more than the Affluence of Wealth, or the Distinctions of Honour: if You seek *Wisdom as Silver, and search for Her as for hid Treasure: then shall You also understand the Fear of the LORD, and find the Knowledge of GOD***.

The next that occurs, presents Us with a View of the Sea; and a most tremendous View it is.

Eug. This is the Voyage related by the Evangelist; when our LORD sailed with his Disciples, and bid the Storm be still, and made the Ocean calm.

Asp. Then We may truly say, *A greater than Solomon is Here!*—Give me Leave to hint, upon this Occasion, that every Picture of *CHRIST* must necessarily depreciate his glorious Person. Therefore You will never think, that a few Rays beaming round his sacred Head, can properly distinguish the SON of GOD, or express the Grace of his Offices, and the Divinity of his Nature. It is not to display the Perfections of the LORD *JESUS Himself*, but only to give Us an Idea of one of his *Works*, that the Pencil has been employed on this grand Subject.

You will also remember, that it was not the main Ocean, but the Lake of *Tiberias*, on which they sailed.

However,

* Psal. viii. 2.

† 1 Sam. ii. 18.

‡ 2 Chron.

xxxiv. 3.

|| 2 Tim. iii. 15.

§ 1 Kings iii. 5, 6, &c.

** Prov. ii. 4, 5.

However, the Painter is at Liberty, to make his Sea as large as He pleases, and His *Storm* as terrible as He can. Accordingly, He has collected all the Horrors of a Tempest.—Lightnings fire the Arch above; and Thunders, could Thunders have been painted, would have rocked the Ground below. Those flaming Bolts have smitten a huge Promontory, and tore its rugged Brow. See! the rocky Fragment is tumbling, with impetuous Bound, from Cliff to Cliff.—The Waters, lashed by furious Winds, heave and tofs their tumultuous Billows. Here, they rise in rolling Ridges; there, they rage in devouring Whirls—Amidst these horrible Commotions, You behold a *Vessel* in all the Extremity of *Distress*. Straining under the Blast, battered and half overwhelmed by the Surge, She can no longer maintain the unequal Conflict; she yields to the resistless Flood; and begins, evidently begins to sink.—Perplexed, amazed, and at their Wit's End, the Disciples run to and fro. They shift the Tackling; lighten the Stowage; try every expedient; and find, to their inexpressible Astonishment, every expedient ineffectual.

We cast our Eye forward, and their divine MASTER appears, sedately rising from a gentle Slumber. He sees the Perplexity and Horror of his Companions, without the least Emotion of Alarm. He sees Destruction approaching, Heaven and Earth mingling, and instead of being dismayed, *enjoys* the elemental War.—What Composure in his Mien! What Dignity in his Attitude! What Majesty, sweetened with Compassion, in his Aspect! Such as could arise from no other Cause, but a conscious and undoubted Certainty, that not a Soul of the Crew should be lost; not a Hair of their Head perish; and that all this mighty Uproar of Nature, should end in a Demonstration of his *mightier* Power, and a Confirmation of his Disciples *Faith*.—He looks abroad into the mutinous Sky, and the turbulent Deep. He waves, with an authoritative Air, his sacred Hand; and adds the great commanding Word, PEACE: BE STILL.—Do you inquire after the Effect? Let *Milton* declare it;

*Confusion heard his Voice, and wild Uproar
Stood rul'd.*

This is expressed in another Draught. Where all is hushed: the tremendous Agitations cease, and the most profound Tranquillity takes Place. The Water is smooth as Glass; We have the Picture of a perfect *Calm*; and view those very Persons, who, a little while ago, were in the wildest Distraction, and in the very Jaws of Ruin, surrounding their LORD as Men alive from the Dead*. Their Consternation is turned into Wonder, and their Pangs of Fear into Extasies of Joy. They acknowledge the Omnipotence, and adore the Goodness of JESUS.

* The Circumstances of this Miracle, as related by the Evangelists, are truly wonderful, and to the last Degree picturesque.

Master! Master! We perish! How concise, how abrupt, and how ardent is this Exclamation! Therefore how strongly significant of imminent Danger, and of the utmost Distress! They have not Time to be explicit. A Moment's Delay may be fatal. What they utter is Conciseness itself, and all Rapidity.—This is Nature: this is the *genuine* Language of the Heart: this is true historic Painting. Every impartial Reader must admire this exquisitely just and fine Stroke, far beyond the diffuse and (I had almost said, *impertinently*) florid Speech, which *Virgil* puts into the Mouth of his Hero on a like Occasion *Æn.* I. 98.

Σιωπα, περιμωσο. What a Majesty in this Command! 'Tis admirable: 'tis inimitable: 'tis worthy of GOD.—I think, We may observe a peculiarly proper Word, addressed and adapted to each Element: the first enjoining a *Cessation* of the *Winds*, the second a *Quiescence* of the *Waves*: Silence in all that roared, Composure in all that raged. As though (to give a short Paraphrase on the grand Injunction) it had been said; Winds, *be hush'd*; Waves, *be calm*.

The *Effect* on the Disciples is described, with all the Force of Imagination, and all the Energy of Diction. To represent in Colours, what the evangelical Historian has left upon Record, would be a Subject fit for the immortal *Raphael*; and perhaps not to be equalled even by his masterly Pencil. *Διαν εκ περισσει εν εαυτοις εξισαντο κ' εθαυμαζον—εθαυμαζον, they were amazed—εξισαντο, they were transported with Amazement—διαν, to the very greatest Degree, εκ περισσει, exceeding all that Language can express. Mark vi. 51.*

E.g.

Eug. Well may they acknowledge his *Omnipotence*; since *Winds and Waves obey Him*. Great Reason have they to adore his *Goodness*, since He rescued them from the very Jaws of Death; that worst of Deaths, perishing in the stormy Deep.

Asp. If *JESUS CHRIST* had vouchsafed such a Deliverance to my *Eugenio*; What would He have thought, or how would He have been affected?

Eug. I should have thought myself *inexpressibly* obliged; and that I could never shew *sufficient* Gratitude to so great a Benefactor.

Asp. Assure yourself then, my dear Sir, that He has done infinitely more for You.—He has delivered You, not indeed from being swallowed up by the raging Billows, but from sinking into the Pit of everlasting Perdition.—He has not only rescued You from endless Destruction, but obtained eternal Life and heavenly Happiness for You.—This He has done, not by speaking a Word, or issuing a Command; but by bearing your Guilt, suffering your Punishment, and dying the Death, the most ignominious and tormenting Death, in your Stead.—Should You not then *unfeignedly* love HIM? *Study* to please HIM, and make it the reigning *endeavour* of your Life to glorify HIM?

Here, *Theron*, returned, and the young Student withdrew; after receiving some affectionate and encouraging Compliments from *Aspasio*. Who was going to enlarge upon the excellent Taste of his Friend; the instructive Stile of his Pictures; the good Sense and great Proficiency of his Son. But *Theron*, far from coveting the Praise, and fully satisfied with the Consciousness, of acting the becoming Part, prevented his Discourse, by stepping to a Pair of Glass Folding-Doors: which, thrown open, admitted them into the *Study*.

A Chimney-Piece of grey Marble, with plain, but bold and protuberant Mouldings, formed a very handsome Appearance.—In various little Niches, were fixed elegant *Busts*; and on the several Interstices, hung beautiful *Prints*; representing many of the most eminently learned Men, who were the Ornaments and Blessings,
both

DIALOGUE VI. 185

both of antient and modern Times. The Shelves, all around, were accommodated, not encumbered with Books. *Aspasio*, running over the letter'd Backs, observed a Collection of the most valuable Authors, in History, and Natural Philosophy, in Poetry and Divinity.

You will easily perceive, said *Theron*, that I am somewhat singular in furnishing my Study, as well as in ornamenting the Avenue. My Books are not for Shew, but Use; and claim a Regard, rather on Account of their Worth, than their Number.—An immense Multitude of Volumes, I have always thought, is more likely to embarrass the Attention, than to improve the Understanding. A *huge* Library seems to resemble a perplexing *Labyrinth*; and often bewilders the Mind, instead of leading it expeditiously to the Acquisition of Truth.

When People are eager to peruse a Multiplicity of Writings, it frequently happens, that in reading all, they digest none *. They taste some empty and transient Amusement, but collect no solid or lasting Advantage. Their Minds are somewhat like those capacious Looking-Glasses, which We have seen exposed in the most frequented and populous Streets of *London*. They receive all Manner of shadowy Images, but no substantial Impression. A thousand Figures *pass through* them, not one *abides* in them.

Our Books, replied *Aspasio*, as well as our Friends, should rather be *select* than *numerous*. For my Part, I would desire no more than two or three of the most correct and masterly Writers in any Science. These, a Person of moderate Capacity may be able to comprehend; and not comprehend only, but enrich his Memory

* The Author of *Night-Thoughts* has touched this Subject with great Judgment, and equal Sprightliness.

*Voracious Learning, often overfed,
Digests not into Sense the motley Meal.
This Forager on Other's Wisdom, leaves
Her native Form, her Reason quite untill'd.
With mixt Manure She surfeits the rank Soil,
Dung'd but not dress'd; and rich to Beggary.*

mory with the choicest Sentiments, and make the Substance of their Works his own. He will, by Repetition and familiar Converse, enter into their *Spirit*, and acquire their *Manner*. While a Rambler in reading, does little more than gratify his Fancy, without refining his Taste, or amending his Heart.

Upon this *Aspasio* turned Himself; and espied, in one Corner of the Apartment, the *celestial* and *terrestrial Globes*; in another, a large reflecting *Telescope*; and on the Top of a Buroe, one or two of the best *Microscopes*.

These Instruments, resumed *Theron*, have opened an inexhaustible Fund of the finest Entertainments*. They have furnished Us with *new Eyes*; and brought up, I may venture to say, a *new World* into our View. They give Us a Sight of Wonders, that may seem incredible to the incurious Vulgar, and were utterly unknown to the most inquisitive Sages of Antiquity. They charm the Eye with a Display of inimitable Beauties, where nothing worthy of Notice was expected. They throw the Mind into a pleasing Transport of Admiration; and from the meanest lowest Objects, raise the most *amiable* and *exalted* Ideas of the all-glorious CREATOR.

I have

* Gentlemen of Taste and Seriousness cannot, I think, have a nobler Piece of Furniture for their Studies, than the *Microscope* and the *Telescope*, the *Orrery* and the *Air-Pump*. This Apparatus would afford them a most delightful and improving Amusement in a solitary Hour.—It would also give them an Opportunity of entertaining their Company, in a truly elegant and very instructive Manner. It would open a fine and ample Field, for displaying the Glories of GOD the CREATOR, and of GOD the REDEEMER.—As the Discoveries made by these Instruments, are so *surprising* in themselves, and *new* to the Generality of Mankind, every edifying Hint deduced from *such* Observations, would come with a peculiar Recommendation.—This, I am sure, would be a Method of reducing to Practice, what the polite Historian has recorded of the politer *Scipio*; *Elegantissimo Intervalla Negotiorum Otio dispanxit*. Vell. Patern.—And, I believe, it might be a happy Means of tuning the Soul, to bear a Part in that immortal Hymn; *Worthy art Thou, O LORD, to receive Glory, and Honour, and Power; for Thou hast created all Things; and for thy Pleasure they now exist, and were at first created.*

Rev. iv. 11.

I have often regretted, that such rational and manly Gratifications should be almost universally supplanted, by the *fantastical* and *childish* Amusements in Vogue. Why should not the Contemplation of Nature's surprising Novelties, be as acceptable an Entertainment, as the stale Diversion of *Quadrille*; be as refined an Employ for a leisure Hour, as to count the Spots on a Pack of Cards?—The Ladies, I am very sure, might find brighter Colours, and more delicate Ornaments, in the Robes and Head-Dress of a common *Fly*; than ever they found amidst the Trinkets of a *Toy-Shop*. And was the fair Circle of Females once acquainted with the radiant Varnish and rich Studs, that enamel the Cover of a *Beetle's* Wing; I am apt to think, they would View with less Rapture, with more Indifference, perhaps, with a becoming Disdain, all the pretty Fancies of a *Beaux's* Wardrobe.

A few Days ago, when the accomplished *Manilia* favoured Us with a Visit, I shewed Her, through a magnifying Glass, the Sting of a Bee, the Scale of a Soal, the Wing of a Gnat, and some other *beautiful Minims* of Nature; together with the Powder, which adheres to our Finger, when We touch the Body of a Moth.—“ Surprising! cried the young Lady. What “ elegant Figures! What enchanting Finery*!—How “ perfect the Polish, and how high the Finishing, of “ that *little Weapon*!—This Piece of *defensive Armour*, “ how skilfully contrived, and how curiously wrought! “ Here, rising into little Ridges, like the Bosses of a “ Buckler; fitted to repel Injuries. There, scooped “ into little Cavities, designed, I suppose, to diminish “ its Weight; that the Coat of Mail may not incumber, even while it defends, the puny Wearer.— “ What I took to be a whitish despicable Rag, is the “ *neatest Fan*, I ever beheld. Mounted on Sticks † in- “ imitably

* ————— *Smallest Lineaments exact,
In all the Liveries deck'd of Summer's Pride,
With Spots of Gold and Purple, Azure and Green.*

Milton.

† These *Sticks*, are the little *Ribs*, which support, at proper Intervals, the fine transparent Membrane of the Wing.

“ imitably tapering and slender. Tinged with all the
 “ soft and lovely Colours of the most glossy Mother
 “ of Pearl.—But, what astonishes me more than all, is
 “ the View of that *coloured Dust*; which your Instru-
 “ ment has turned into a *Cluster of Feathers*. Every
 “ one wrought off with a Regularity and a Delicacy,
 “ that are beyond the Power of Description. The
 “ finest Stroke drawn by the *Italian Pen*, compar-
 “ ed with the extreme Minuteness of the Shaft, is
 “ broad and bulky as an Admiral’s Mast. A Speck of
 “ Leaf-Gold, could it be weighed against the exqui-
 “ site Attenuations of the Vane*, would be more
 “ substantial and ponderous than yonder marble Slab.

“ How nice, even to a Prodigy, must be the Me-
 “ chanism of the *animalcule* Race! I see Globules, I see
 “ Tides of Blood, rolling through Mæanders inex-
 “ pressibly finer, than the finest Hair.—Stranger still!
 “ I see whole Sholes of active Creatures, expatiating
 “ in a single Drop of Water†: taking their Pastime
 “ amidst such a scanty Canal, as unfratened and as
 “ much at large, as *Leviathan* in the Abysses of the
 “ Ocean.—A whole *Kingdom* of these Creatures,
 “ though collected into a Body, are quite undiscern-
 “ able by the naked Eye. What then must be the
 “ Size of every *Individual*? Yet in every Individual
 “ there is a complete *System* of Limbs; each endowed
 “ with spontaneous Motion; all assembled, yet not
 “ crouded, in a living *Atom*.—To reflect upon the
 “ Tex-

* *Vane* is the *feathery* Part of a Quill.

† In a single Drop of Water, Dr. *Hook* is said to have discovered with his *Microscope*, eight Millions two hundred and eighty thousand *Animalcules*.—This is mentioned, because it is the prevailing Philosophy of the Age. Though I must confess, that Mr. *Gautier* seems to have gone a considerable Way, towards giving it another Turn. As He has proved before a learned Assembly at *Paris*, That the *Vermiculæ* of *Leuwenhoeck*, and the living *Moleculæ* of Mr. *de Buffon*, were only Balls of Air agitated by the fermenting of the Seed. If so, it is not impossible, but Dr. *Hook*’s *Animalcula* may be nothing more than *Balls of Air*, agitated by the fermenting of the Pepper.

Be this as it will, the young Lady’s Remarks on the Wonders of *Mechanism* in the *animalcule* Creation, I believe will never be controverted.

“ T
 “ co
 “ R
 “ y
 “ A
 “ in
 “ ca
 “ ha
 “ I
 “ F
 A
 belie
 rable
 nilia
 down
 Crea
 Pecu
 duct
 majo
 meat
 prisi
 new
 turn
 on t
 other
 T
 of th
 Face
 Tub
 Sigh
 Satur
 our S
 Satel
 nifice
 Worl
 the B
 Ferul

* T
 † T

“ Texture of Vessels, and the Operations of Organs, so
 “ complex, so numerous, yet so inconceivably mi-
 “ nute ; how it awakens Admiration ! Fills me with
 “ Reverence of the ALMIGHTY MAKER ! and
 “ yields a Pleasure, infinitely superior to all the modish
 “ Amusements of our Sex !—Your Discoveries of *Life*
 “ in *Miniature*, have given me a Disgust of, what is
 “ called *High Life*, and its solemn Fopperies. You
 “ have spoiled me, *Theron*, for a fashionable Trifler.
 “ I shall no longer relish the dull Oeconomy of the
 “ Fan, or the poor parade of the Snuff-Box.

Asp. Have You nothing to say of the *Telescope* ?—I believe it must be my Province to celebrate this admirable Invention ; and I wish I could do it, with *Manilia*’s brilliant Imagination.—If the *Microscope* leads Us downward, to the curious Secrets of the animalcule Creation ; the *Telescope* bears Us upward, to the grand Peculiarities of the starry Regions. The Eye, conducted by this wonderful Guide, visits a Variety of majestic Orbs, which would otherwise be lost in unmeasurable Tracts of *Æther*.—This, far more surprising than the Discoveries of *Columbus*, has found out new Colonies of Worlds, in every Quarter of the nocturnal Skies. This has placed a glittering Crescent, on the Brow of one * of the Planets ; and has given others a most stately Train of *Attendants* †.

Tell me, *Theron*, could You discern the full Choir of the Constellations, or distinguish the variegated Face of the Moon, without the Aid of your *telescope* Tube ? Could You, with your unassisted Eye, get a Sight of *Jupiter*’s Satellites, or procure a Glimpse of *Saturn*’s Ring ?—Without that supplementary Aid to our Sight, they are quite imperceptible ; though the Satellites of the former, are incomparably more magnificent, than the *Retinue* of all the Monarch’s in the World ; and compared with the Ring of the latter, all the *Bridges* on ten thousand Rivers ; are less than the Ferule of your Cane.

As

* The Planet *Venus*.

† The Satellites of *Jupiter* and *Saturn*.

As the *Telescope* to the Eye, so is *Revelation* to the Understanding. It discovers Truths, which, exclusive of such a Discovery, had been for ever hid from the most sagacious Minds.—'Tis strange to the unlearned Observer, that this ponderous Globe of Earth and Seas, should wheel its rapid Circuit round the Sun. But the *Telescope* has rendered this Fact clear to a Demonstration.—'Tis strange likewise to our natural Apprehensions, that We should die in *Adam*, and be undone by our first Parent's Disobedience. Nor less so, that We should be made alive in *CHRIST*, and derive our Recovery from his *imputed* Righteousness. But Revelation makes this Doctrine as certain, as it is comfortable.

Ther. Does Revelation make it certain?—This is a Point not yet established, but taken for granted. I rather apprehend, that Revelation, in no Place maintains it, in many Places disavows it.—Since your Absence, *Aspasio*, I have spent some Time in searching the Scriptures, with a particular View to this Tenet. And I can find no such Expression in the whole Bible, as the Imputation of *CHRIST*'s Righteousness. If it was so leading an Article, as You represent; surely, it could not have been intirely forgotten by the *inspired* Writers, nor utterly excluded from *their* Body of Divinity.

Asp. The very identical Expression may not occur, and yet the Doctrine be abundantly taught. I believe, You never met with the Word *Resurrection*, in any Part of the *Pentateuch*; nor ever read the Phrase *Satisfaction*, in all the New Testament. Yet our LORD fully proved the Truth of the *former*, from the Writings of *Moses*; and You Yourself have acknowledged the *latter*, to be the unanimous Sense of the Apostles and Evangelists.

In the Epistle to the *Romans*, We have express and repeated mention of a Righteousness imputed. *What* or *whose* Righteousness, can be the Subject of this Assertion?—Not the Righteousness of *Angels*. They are a superior Class of Beings, and have no such intimate Connection with our Nature.—Not the Righteousness of eminent *Saints*. This is the exploded Error of
of

of Popery ; and furnishes the *Romish* Zealots with that Chimera of Arrogance and Folly, Works of Superelevation.—Not any Righteousness of our own : for, it is positively declared, to be *without Works** ; in which no Works of our own have any Concurrence, or the least Share.—What other Righteousness then can be meant, but the Righteousness of our great SUBSTITUTE, SURETY, and SAVIOUR ? Who took our Nature ; discharged our Debt ; and is therefore stiled, *JEHOVAH our Righteousness* †.

Ther. This is contrary to the whole Tenour of the sacred Instructions. What says the Prophet ? *When the wicked Man turneth away from his Wickedness that He hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, He shall save his Soul alive* ‡.—Here, that greatest of Blessings, the Salvation of the Soul, is ascribed to a *Departure from Evil*, and a *Perseverance in Good* : to a real Alteration in a Man's *own* Temper and Conduct, not to any fanciful Application of some transmissive Righteousness from another.

Asp. The Text, I imagine relates to a *temporal* Preservation, rather than a spiritual and eternal Salvation.—However, taking it in your own Sense, I would ask ; Is there no Wickedness, but Riot and Debauchery, Profaneness and Injustice ?—*Unbelief*, though it be not so much as noticed in our Systems of Ethics, is, in the Volume of Revelation, declared a *capital Crime*. Our LORD, speaking of the HOLY SPIRIT, mentions it as a signal Part of his Office, That *He shall convince the World of Sin*.—Of what Sin ? Scandalous Violations of moral Rectitude ? This were a needless Employ. The Light of Reason is sufficient to evince such a Charge ; and the Court of Conscience is erected, to pass the deserved Sentence.—Of Sin, adds the HEAVENLY TEACHER, *because they believe not on me* § : on my Death, as the Cause of their Forgiveness ; on my Righteousness, as the Ground of their Acceptance ; on my SPIRIT, as the powerful Principle of their Holiness.

Unbe-

* Rom. iv. 6.
§ John xvi. 9.

† Jer. xxiii. 6.

‡ Ezek. xviii. 27.

Unbelief treats GOD as a Liar; because, it rejects the Testimony, which He has bore concerning his beloved SON.—Unbelief tramples on the Blood of *CHRIST*, and is a most contemptuous Affront to all his saving Offices.—Unbelief would counteract the Operations of the *HOLY GHOST*; whose peculiar Work it is, to testify of *CHRIST*, and make manifest his Righteousness. Unbelief instigates (could We have thought it possible?) a Child of Dust, a Slave of Sin, to idolize Himself and his own Performances.—To say all in a Word; Unbelief is that *grand*, that *comprehensive* Sin, which scornfully rejects, or impiously renounces, the most glorious Method of Salvation, which Omniscience itself could devise.

A Sinner, therefore, never turns from his Wickedness; till He turns, by a true Faith to *JESUS CHRIST*. Till then, He is a Rebel against the *Gospel*. So flagrant a Rebel, that He stands particularly excepted, in the Act of Evangelical Indemnity. For, as *He that believeth on the SON, hath everlasting Life*; so, *He that believeth not, is condemned already, and the Wrath of GOD abideth on him**.

Ther. What are the *Psalmist's* Sentiments on this Subject? Does not He represent the Matter in a very different Light? *Thou LORD art merciful; for Thou rewardest every Man according to his, not Another's Works*†.

Asp. Noble Saying! May it be written upon our very Hearts!—GOD is merciful, and *therefore* rewardeth. From whence it appears, that what We call a *Reward*, is really an Act of *Mercy*, rather than of Justice. The *Wages* of Sin is Death; but the *Gift*

(says
* *John* iii. 18, 36. The Words are exceedingly emphatical, and no less awful.—Not barely He *shall* come into Condemnation, but He (that believeth not) *is* condemned already. Though ever so specious or refined in his outward Conversation, He lies under a Sentence of Death, and is the Object of divine Wrath.—Which not only will *visit* Him, but *abide* on Him. So that, wherever He may be, whatever He may do, the Displeasure of the tremendous *JEHOVAH* hangs over Him, like a dreadful destructive Sword; and, if He dies in such a Condition, will inevitably fall upon him, and cut him in Pieces eternally.

† *Psal.* lxxii. 12.

(says the Apostle, altering his Style, and making a most important Distinction) the *Gift* of GOD is eternal Life*.—The inspired Penman subjoins, not *for*, but *according to*, every Man's Works. His Works are the Measure, not the meritorious Cause. To merit is the sole Prerogative of the SAVIOUR. To Him it is owing, that our imperfect Services are honoured with any Acceptance; much more that they are recompensed with any Reward.

Ther. Does not this Exposition of yours, clash with that truly generous Acknowledgment of St. *Peter*? *In every Nation, He that feareth GOD, and worketh Righteousness, is accepted with Him*†. Here, it is undeniably evident, that Acceptance with our CREATOR, is founded on a Man's *own* Piety, and *personal* Integrity.

Asp. Rightly to understand this Text, We should inquire into the Circumstances of the History. The Apostle had been strongly and most unreasonably prejudiced in Favour of the *Jews*; imagining that the Salvation of *CHRIST*, like the Dispensation of *Moses*, must be confined to his Countrymen.—But now, having considered the Purport of his late heavenly Vision; having compared it with the angelic Message, delivered to *Cornelius*; and being made acquainted with the Character of that valuable Man; He breaks out into this truly catholic Declaration.—“ My Prejudices are
“ vanished. My Sentiments are enlarged. From the
“ Instance before me, it is *demonstrably* certain; that
“ GOD does not appropriate the Blessings of his
“ Covenant, to any particular Person, Family, or
“ People. *But, in every Nation, He that feareth Him,*
“ *and from a Principle of Religion in the Heart, work-*
“ *eth Righteousness in the Life, is accepted*; so accepted,
“ as to be an Object of the divine Favour, and an In-
“ heritor of eternal Happiness.”

This, I think, is the exact Meaning of the Place. And let it be recollected, that no One truly fears, or can possibly please GOD, without Faith‡. For which Reason, it seems necessary to suppose, that *Cornelius*,

* Rom. vi. 23.

† Acts x. 35.

‡ Heb. xi. 6.

though a Heathen by Birth, had believed through Grace.—Nay; it is evident from the Context, that he had heard of *JESUS CHRIST*; had some Acquaintance with the Design of his coming, and the Execution of his Office*; enough to be the Ground of a *real*, though perhaps an *infantile* Faith. The Business of the Apostle was, to lead this Convert into the *clear* Light, and *full* Privileges of the Gospel; to ratify and confirm his Title to them, by the sacred *Seal* of Baptism; and introduce Him, as the *First-Fruits* of the Gentiles, into the Christian Church.

So that nothing can be concluded from this Passage, but that the glad Tidings of *Christianity* are for *Jews*, for *Gentiles*, for all People—that Faith, even when weak, is productive of good Works—and, when sincerely improved, will certainly be increased; will go *from Strength to Strength*.

Ther. Does not our SAVIOUR, in describing the Process, and foretelling the Issue of the last decisive Tryal, assign a Kingdom to the Righteous? Assign it, in this precise View, as a proper Remuneration of *their* own good Works; Saying, in the most express Terms; *Come, ye blessed of my FATHER, inherit the Kingdom prepared for You, from the Foundation of the World: FOR I was an hungred, and Ye gave me Meat; FOR, &c. FOR, &c. †.*

Asp. Be pleased to take notice of the Expression. They are bidden to *inherit*: and what is freer than an Inheritance?—Observe also the *Reason* alledged, and compare it with the Rule of Judicature. *He that believeth*, saith the SUPREME JUDGE, *shall be saved*. This is the avowed, the invariable Standard, by which He proceeds, in administering everlasting Judgment. Accordingly, He confers eternal Life on the Righteous, as Persons intitled to this great Felicity, on the Foot of his own gracious Appointment. For

* See ver. 36, 37. Indeed it could hardly be otherwise; since *Cornelius* was settled at *Cæsarea*, the Residence of the *Lord-Lieutenant*; and Seat of the *Civil*, as *Jerusalem* was of the *Ecclesiastical* Government. In a Place of such general Resort, so very remarkable an Event could not but be known. Especially, as *Philip* the Evangelist had fixed his Abode in that City. See *Acts* viii. 40.

† *Matt.* xxv. 34.

D I A L O G U E VI. 195

For denotes, not the *Foundation*, but the *Evidence* of their Right. “ I acquit such a Person, says the Arbitrator in a judicial Claim; *for* the Witnesses depose, “ that the Debt is paid.” The Deposition, which answers to these righteous Acts, is the *Proof*, Payment of the Debt, which corresponds with *CHRIST*’s perfect Obedience, is the *Cause* * of the Discharge.—*For Ye have given*; Ye have abounded in all Instances of Duty to me, and Love to your Brethren; and thereby have manifested Yourselves true Believers.

It may be farther observed, That our LORD says not, Ye have done it to your Fellow-creatures, but to *these my Brethren* †. He commends not every *random* Act of Good-nature or Generosity, but such Kinds of Beneficence only, as carry the *Christian* Stamp; were exercised to a Disciple, *in the Name of a Disciple*. These most evidently proceed from Faith, and undeniably attest its Sincerity.

Ther. Are not these Distinctions more *subtle*, than *solid*?

Asp. To me they appear in no such Light. If You think otherwise, let Us appeal to those excellent Persons themselves. The Turn, the very remarkable Turn of their Sentiments, will fully decide our Question.—Do they lay *any Stress* upon their own religious Duties, and beneficent Deeds? Far from relying on them, farther still from pleading them, they bestow not a *single Thought* upon them. Having fixed their Hopes on the Rock of Ages, they forget these transient Bubbles ‡. They *wonder*, That their exalted MASTER should condescend, to make any honourable mention of such

* The Spring is come, says the Countryman; *for* the Orchard blooms, and the Black-Bird sings. The Blooming of the Trees, and the Melody of the Birds, were never supposed to *create*, only to *characterize*, the delightful Season. They are, not its *Cause*, but the *Proof* of its taking Place.

† Matt. xxv. 40.

‡ Bubbles they are, compared with the all-glorious Obedience of *CHRIST*; or considered in reference to the grand Affair of Justification before GOD.—But as Bubbles, or watery Vesicles inflated with Air, are the Means of exhibiting the beautiful Colours of the *Rainbow*; so these Services, though poor and defective, *bear Testimony* to the Existence of that precious Grace—*Faith*.

imperfect Services.—O! that We may be enabled, through the whole Course of our Lives, to follow the Example of their Piety; and, when We stand before the tremendous Tribunal, to imitate their Humility and Wisdom! *Their Humility*; in renouncing themselves, and disclaiming all Desert of their own. *Their Wisdom*; in reposing their whole Confidence on the Merits and Righteousness of their REDEEMER.

Ther. Our LORD makes no mention of this Doctrine, in his Sermon on the Mount. Whereas, if it had been so *very material*, He would at least have touched upon it, in that comprehensive Summary of true Religion.

Asp. Our LORD says not a Word, concerning the Sacrifice of his Death. Neither is there a Syllable, relating to his Intercession for Transgressors. But are these Articles of our *Faith* to be deemed fictitious or superfluous? Because, they are not expressly inculcated, in that admirable Treatise of *practical* Divinity.

However, upon a more attentive Examination, perhaps, We shall find the Point most strongly *implied*, though not distinctly *specified*; its Necessity demonstrated, though its Nature be not explained.—The illustrious TEACHER opened his Mouth, and with a peculiar Solemnity said; *Blessed are the Poor in Spirit* *. —But *Who* are they? Not the Persons, who sooth themselves with the flattering Conceit of the *Laodicean* Church; *I am rich* in Obedience, *and increased in spiritual Goods* †. Those rather, who see their Indigence; bewail their Guilt; and hunger and thirst after the justifying Merit of a REDEEMER. Who, from the very Bottom of an humbled Heart, confess; “LORD, “I am no more able to conform all my Conduct, to thy “most holy Law, than I am capable of atoning for my “innumerable Sins. *CHRIST* must be my Righteousness, as well as my Propitiation, or else I am irrecoverably undone.”

The inimitable PREACHER farther assures his Hearers; That, *unless their Righteousness exceed the Righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, they shall in no wise enter into the Kingdom of Heaven* ‡—How must *Christians*

* Matt. v. 3.

† Rev. iii. 17.

‡ Matt. v. 20.

stians exceed the *Pharisees*? Not only in being *sincere*; in having Respect unto *all* GOD's Commandments; but also in possessing a *complete* Righteousness. Such as the divine Holiness can, with Complacency, accept; and in which the divine Justice may, with Honour, acquiesce. Nor can this be any Thing less, than the perfect Obedience of the great MEDIATOR.—St. Paul's memorable Testimony, concerning his Attainments in the *Pharisaical*, and his Hopes in the *Christian* State *, afford the very best comment upon this important Declaration of our LORD.

Ther. The ORACLE of Heaven, You know, was once consulted upon that most momentous of all Questions; How a Person may ascertain his Title to Life and Immortality? And what is the Tenour of the sacred Rescript?—We are referred to the Ten Commandments; and, in the most explicit Terms, with the most peremptory Air, told; *This do, and thou shalt live* †.

Asp. That particular Person, if You please, was referred to the ten Commandments; not *We*, and Mankind in general.—Our LORD, in the preceding Verses, had been informing his Disciples; That they must *receive the Kingdom of GOD*, or the Grace of the Gospel, and the Blessings it proposes, *as a little Child*. And this can hardly signify, in Consequence of their own Doings.

Ther. That particular Person referred! not *We* and Mankind in general!—I don't understand your Meaning, *Aspasio*.

Asp. You will observe then, that our LORD's Reply was not an universal Direction, but an Answer *Ad Hominem*; adapted to the Application of the young Gentleman ‡.—Instead of asking; “How shall a *poor guilty*

* Phil. iii. 7, 8, 9.

† Mark x. 17. Luke x. 28. xviii. 18.

‡ It is delightful to observe the Wisdom of our LORD: how exactly this *divine Casuist* suits his Counsel to the various States of Mankind.—The Secure and Presumptuous He sends to the *Law*, that they may be *bumbled*. To the Contrite and Penitent He preaches the *Gospel*, that they may be *comforted*.—When the *Pharisee*, full of Self-conceit stands up and says, *What shall I do?* The

“ *guilty* Mortal, who is every Day offending, obtain Forgiveness from the righteous GOD?” Instead of saying; “ How shall I, who am not able to think a *good Thought*, make sure my Title to an eternal Weight of Glory?” Our Querist demands; *What good Things shall I do, that I may inherit eternal Life?* The Reply proceeds upon the Inquirer’s own Principles. If You expect Salvation upon such *legal* Terms, know, that your Obedience must be nothing less, than a *perfect* Conformity to the divine Law. Perform all its Precepts, in their utmost Extent, in their exactest Purity, and with an unremitted Perseverance, then— But alas! such Perfection is too high for fallen Creatures; they cannot attain unto it. Necessarily, therefore, must they drop all such Pretensions, and have recourse to some other Method of Justification.

Ther. Why did that “ WONDROUS COUNSELLOR,” if such was the Purport of his Answer, express Himself so obscurely? Why did He not divert his promising Scholar from this fruitless Attempt; and put Him in the right, the practicable Way of obtaining Salvation?

Ans. This He did, with the finest Address, and in the most skilful Manner.—Had our LORD plainly affirmed, “ You are worldly; You are covetous; your Riches are your GOD:” Such a Charge would, in all Probability, have been as confidently denied, as it was plainly urged. Therefore He brings this specious Hypocrite to a *Test* *, which could not be evaded, and which was sure to discover the Truth. A Test, which laid open the palpable and enormous Defects of his so much boasted Obedience. Which made it appear, that, instead of keeping *all* the Commandments, this vain Self-justiciary had not obeyed the very *first*. But, amidst all his towering Imaginations of Himself, had been, and at that very Instance was, a fordid groveling

Answer is, *Do all that is commanded.* When the broken-hearted Woman falls at his Feet, and speaks in Tears the Guilt of her Life, and the Anguish of her Soul; *thy Sins are forgiven*, is the gracious Reply.

* Luke xviii. 22.

ing Idolater : who preferred his transitory Possessions on Earth, to an incorruptible Inheritance in the Kingdom of Heaven*.—Could any Expedient be more suitable to the Case? Or better calculated to reduce Him, intoxicated as He was with Pride, to a sober humble Mind? To beat Him off from his false Foundation, *the Righteousness which is of the Law*; and lead Him to a Reliance on the promised, the expected, the present MESSIAH?

It puts me in mind of my Friend *Sagacio*'s Conduct. Which seems to have some Conformity with our LORD's Procedure; and may, possibly, tend to illustrate its Propriety.—Visiting one of his unlearned Neighbours, He found Him in company with a certain talkative Stranger; who was haranguing, at an *extravagant* Rate, on the Wonders of Astronomy.—*Sagacio* soon perceived, that the chief Furniture of this extraordinary Adept, lay in a little Acquaintance with the technical Terms, and somewhat more than a little Share of Assurance. How should He bring the self-plumed Sciolist to a little *Modesty* of Sentiment, and *Decorum* of Conversation? He took Leave to ask, "What the Word *Astronomy* might signify?" The Orator was struck dumb in a Moment. He had never informed Himself, it seems, that Astronomy related to the Order and Regulation of the Stars. This single Question taught our minute Philosopher, more effectually than twenty Lectures on the Subject. It taught Him his *own Ignorance*; and that He had the very Rudiments of his so much admired Science still to learn.

Ther. What will you say to those famous Passages in the Epistle of St. *James*? *By Works a Man is justified. Was not Abraham our Father justified by Works*†? Can any Words be plainer in their Meaning? Or, can any Meaning be more directly opposite to the whole Scope of your Argumentation?

Asp. This I would say, *Theron*.—The Passages You quote, when detached from the Context, may seem in-

* Luke xviii. 23.

† Jam. ii. 21, 24.

consistent with the Declarations of another Apostle. As a Limb, when *wrenched* from its natural Situation, appears with an Air of Disproportion. Whereas, reduce the dislocated Part, and it will recover the Symmetry of its Shape; it will harmonize exactly with the animal System.—Replace likewise these Assertions; consider them in *Connection* with the whole Paragraph; and they will be found, if not Unisons, yet perfect Concords, with the Strain of St. *Paul's* Teaching.

What is the Point, which St. *James* undertakes to illustrate?—To distinguish a genuine from an insincere Faith. *If a Man say, He hath Faith*; this is the boast of some hypocritical Professor. So that the Apostle is evidently dealing with a *Pretender* to the precious Gift: and therefore replies, *Shew me thy Faith*: Prove the Reality of thy Claim: Prove it to *me* and to the Church, to thy Fellow-creatures and Fellow-*christians*. If unproductive of righteous Works, We must pronounce it spurious, worthless, dead.

Having detected the *Counterfeit*, He proceeds to describe the *Sterling*. The grand Characteristic of which is, A Frame of Mind and a Course of Action, corresponding with the Doctrine believed. By this Touchstone the Faith of our renowned Progenitor was tried; and, being tried, was “found unto Praise, and Honour, and Glory.” *Was not Abraham our Father justified by Works?*—Justified! How? As to Acceptance with the SUPREME JUDGE? No: this was effected, long before the Patriarch offered up *Isaac*. But when He exercised that Heroic Act of Self-Denial, Resignation, and Obedience; then his Justification was evidenced, to all his Contemporaries, and to all Generations. *His Faith was made perfect* *; answered its proper End; and appeared to be of the true, the triumphant, the scriptural Kind; since it overcame the World, overcame Self, and regarded GOD as All in All.

Upon

* *Ετελειωθη*. In this Sense, I suppose, We are to understand St. *John's* Aphorism. *He that doth Righteousness, is righteous*: manifests the Truth of his Conversion, and justifies his Profession from all Suspicion of Insincerity. 1 *John* iii. 7.

Upon the whole ; St. *Paul* speaks concerning the Justification of our *Persons* ; St. *James* concerning the Justification of our *Faith**.—St. *Paul* describes the *Manner* of being justified, before the *all-seeing* GOD ; St. *James* points out the *Proof*† of a justified State, as it is visible to Men.—The former proceeds from the immaculate Righteousness of *CHRIST*, placed to our Account ; the latter consists in the Fruits of Righteousness, adorning our Life.—Rightly understood, therefore, these Passages are not in the least contradictory to the Epistles of St. *Paul*, or to the Scope of my Argumentation. But are a seasonable Caveat and a proper Preservative, against misunderstanding *those*, or perverting *this*.

Ther. I wish, you would read that concise, but judicious Abridgment of true Religion, comprised in the fifteenth *Psalms*. The sacred Penman sets out with this Inquiry ; LORD, *who shall dwell in thy Tabernacle, or who shall rest upon thy holy Hill ?* To this most interesting Query the following Verses are a full and satisfactory Answer. The whole of which turns upon the Discharge of moral Duties ; *walking uprightly, and working Righteousness*. Without a Syllable, or a single Hint, concerning the very superior Excellence of Faith, or the extreme Necessity of a vicarious Obedience.

* That the Expression used by St. *James*, signifies this *declarative* Justification, is plain from 1 Tim. iii. 16. Where the Apostle, speaking of our LORD *JESUS CHRIST*, says ; *εδικαιωθη, He was justified in or by the SPIRIT*: declared to be the true SON of GOD ; manifested on Earth, and recognized from Heaven, as the undoubted SAVIOUR of the World.

† A very little Reflection, I should imagine, must convince every unprejudiced Reader ; That St. *James* cannot possibly be stating the Method of Justification, before the infinitely righteous GOD. Because, He never so much as mentions the Death of *CHRIST*—*Who made his Soul an Offering for Sin—to whom give all the Prophets Witness, that whosoever believeth in Him, shall receive Remission of Sins—and besides whom, there is no other Name given under Heaven, whereby We can be saved*—Could an Apostle so absolutely forget his LORD ; and in a Case, where every other inspired Writer acknowledges Him ; nay, acknowledges Him to be ALL IN ALL ?

Asp. I have often read, and I well remember, that beautiful and instructive *Psalms*. And I beg leave to observe, once for all, with relation to such Passages of the Old Testament; That they suppose the Persons, whom they describe, to be convinced of their *natural Corruption*; to be humbled under a Sense of their *actual Guilt*; and to live in a conscientious Observance of the *expiatory Sacrifices*. All which had an invariable Reference to *CHRIST*, and derived their whole Virtue from his Mediation.

Would any of the *Jewish* Saints, think you, have dared to advance a Plea for eternal Blessedness, upon the Foot of their own Conformity to such *moral* Directions? Neglecting, at the same Time, the annual Ordinance of the Passover, the Sacrifices of the three great Festivals, or a believing Improvement of the daily Oblation.—By no means. They were, and they would acknowledge themselves, deplorably defective. They would plead the Promise of free Grace, and fly to the Blood, which *GOD* himself had appointed *to make an Atonement for their Souls*.—By such Sentiments, and such a Conduct, they reduced to practice the very Essence of our Doctrine: disavowing their own Deeds, however virtuous or religious; and trusting in the Strength of *Israel*, the *LORD* our *Righteousness*. Who alone fulfilled all the Precepts, contained in this excellent Formulary of Duty. Who has also the *Substance* of every purifying and every propitiatory Rite.

Ther. Has not the sacred Writer expressly said, at the Close of the *Psalms*? *Whoso doeth these Things, shall never fall.*

Asp. He has: And this, I apprehend, is his Meaning. —“Persons of such a Temper, and such a Practice, bear the Marks of *GOD*’s Children, and are meet for his Glory. Accordingly, they shall never fall, either into total Apostasy *HERE*, or final Condemnation *HEREAFTER*. They are now Heirs, and in due Time shall be Possessors, of his eternal Kingdom.”

But you will take Notice, that all these Duties and Qualifications, only *characterize*, not *constitute*, the Inheritor of Heaven.—You will likewise advert to another

other very remarkable Circumstance in his Character; *He setteth not by Himself, but is lowly in his own Eyes* *. Or, as the lively Original speaks, *He is base and vile in his own Sight*. So far from aspiring to *Self-justification*, that He absolutely renounces it; and falls down, in deep Abasement, at the Foot of infinitely rich Grace.

Ther. I cannot but think, it is the *current Doctrine* of Scripture, and I am sure, it is one of the *first Principles* which the Light of Nature teaches—That the most high GOD must necessarily love Righteousness, and take Pleasure in the Righteous.

Asp. If the Light of Nature was to publish a Gospel, I believe it would be formed upon your Plan. It would bestow Favour only on the *Innocent*, the *Virtuous*, and the *Holy*.—But the Gospel of *CHRIST* runs in a very different Strain. This brings Pardon for the *Condemned*, and Blessings for the *Accursed*. This is Health to the *Sick*, and Recovery to the *Ruined*. *The LORD hath anointed me*, saith its divine Author, *to preach good Tidings to the Meek*, who are humbled under a Sense of their Unworthiness.—*He hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted*, who are wounded with a Conviction of their undone State—to *proclaim Liberty to the Captives*, the wretched Captives of *Satan*; and the *Opening of the Prison to them that are bound*, bound in the Chains of Darkness, Sin, and Misery†.

As I am myself a most unworthy Sinner, You must not be displeased, if I espouse the Cause of those unhappy Creatures. Yet, though a Friend of Sinners, I am

* Psal. xv. 4. נְבוֹזָה בְּעֵינָי נִמְאָם. I cannot say, that I admire the Bible Translation of this Clause: *In whose Eyes the vile Person is contemptible*. Methinks, it does not favour of the tender and benign Spirit of our Religion, which teaches Us to *honour all Men*; to despise no one's *Person*, but only to abhor the *Wickedness* of the Wicked.

Should the Sense I have opposed, have its Weight; the Sense I have preferred, is incomparably *weightier*. If, to despise the Vile, is a religious Act; to think mean'y of Ourselves, is a much more advanced, and a far more difficult Instance of Religion. This is to copy the highest Pattern of human Excellence; who, notwithstanding his very superior Attainments, accounted *Himself less than the least of all Saints*; nay, *the very chiefest of Sinners*.

† Isai. lxi. 1.

am no Enemy to the Righteous. I intirely agree with my *Theron* in allowing, that the most High GOD necessarily loves Righteousness. Only I want to be informed, *Where* this admirable and lovely Quality is to be found?—Not among the *Gentiles*. They have swerved from the Dictates of natural Conscience.—Not among the *Jews*. They have broke the holy Commandment delivered on Mount *Sinai*.—Not among *Christians*. For, if GOD should enter into Judgment with Us, We could not answer Him one of a Thousand.—In the Kingdom of *Æthiopia*, or in the Country of the *Moors*, where will you find the *native Whites*?

The SON of GOD found none among the Race of *Adam*, that were intitled to the Character of Righteous. He who gave Himself a Ransom for All, makes no Application to such Persons*.—Why? Because he fully *disesteemed* personal Goodness? Or was unable to *distinguish* the Excellency of inherent Virtue?—No; but because he knew, that, amiable as these Qualifications are, they have no Existence in the human Heart; till the Sinner, reconciled by his Death, be sanctified also by his SPIRIT.

You remember, perhaps, that remarkable Answer, which the *Spartans* once returned to a threatening Embassy, from some of the neighbouring States. Nothing could be more concise; and, I think, nothing was ever more spirited and significant.

Ther. Those Neighbours gave them to understand by their Ambassadors; “That, if they entered their Territories, they would burn their Towns; make the Inhabitants Prisoners; and spread Destruction, “where-ever they advanced.”—To which insolent Menace, the brave *Lacedæmonians* made no other Reply, than—IF.

Is this the Story, to which You refer?

Asp. The very same.—And when you are speaking of human Righteousness, as the Cause of our Acceptance

* Mat. ix. 13. *I came not to call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance.*

DIALOGUE VII. 205

ance with the eternal GOD, I would borrow the Language of a *Spartan*. IF, shall be my Reply.—IF, exclusive of the Obedience, and independent on the SPIRIT of *CHRIST*, You can furnish Yourself with this Endowment: Or, if You can carry your Righteousness to that Perfection, which may equal the Purity of the Law, and comport with the Majesty of the Lawgiver: *then* trust in it; let it be the Ground of your Confidence; and seek no better Foundation.

But whoever shall, in this Manner, seek for his Recommendation to the Favour of GOD; will act like the mistaken Countryman in *Horace*: Who, being unable to ford the River, took up a Resolution to wait on the Banks, till the Stream was all run by:

————— *At ille*
Labitur, et labetur in omne volubilis Ævum.*

Ther. Here, I fancy, We must take Leave of your Countryman. If He adheres to his Resolution, We shall find Him in the very same Situation, when Breakfast is over; and may resume our Subject, just where it is discontinued:



DIALOGUE VII.

THERON.

TO me, who have spent the greatest Part of the Winter in *Town*, these Scenes of the *Country* are inexpressibly pleasing. Take, who will, the gilded Saloon, and the silken Settee; so long as I can shelter myself under the Canopy of such a spreading Beech,

* *Vain Man desist: Such flattering Hopes forego:
It flows, and flows, and will for ever flow.*

Beech, and use one of its coarse, mis-shapen Roots for my Seat.

'Tis true, We see no longer those splendid Brocades, and elegant Toupees, which distinguish the *Park* and the *Mall*.—But we have, full in our View, a Multitude of honest Rustics; pursuing their chearful Labours in yonder *Meadow*. Some, mowing the luxuriant Herbage. Some, raising it into regular Cocks. Others, loading their Waggon with the Hay, or clearing the Ground with their Rakes. The Ground, cleared of its soft Incumbrance, appears fresh and green, like another Spring. While the Exhalations of the tedded Grass, floating in the Air, give a rural Perfume to the Gale.—And which, my *Aspasio*, which are the most *valuable* Objects? The *little Labourers* of the Hive, that enrich themselves, and regale their Masters? Or the *gay Flutterers* of the Garden, whose whole Life is nothing but Sport; and their highest Character is, to be insignificantly pretty?

Asp. In this Retirement, We hear none of the wanton and corrupting Airs of the *Opera*; no, nor the majestic and ennobling Melody of the *Oratorio**.—But We have a Band of Music, stationed in the Grove; and a Concert of native Harmony, warbling from the Boughs. We are entertained with the Music, which charmed the human Ear, long before *Jubal*† found out his Instruments; and thousands of Years before *Handel* composed his Notes.—The Bull-finch, and a Multitude of little tuneful Throats, strike the Key. The Thrush below, and the Sky-Lark responsive from above, *diversify* and *exalt* the Strain. The Black-bird, somewhat like the solemn Organ, with Notes perfectly mellow, and gracefully sonorous, crowns the Choir.

While

* *Majestic and ennobling*—This, I think, is the true Character, and expresses the real Tendency of the *Oratorio*. Nevertheless, it may not be improper to observe; that if We carry a trifling or irreligious Spirit to the Entertainment; if We attend to the musical Airs, but disregard those sacred Truths, which enter into the Composition; it will be little better than a *Profanation* of holy Things. I fear, it will be a Species of *taking GOD's adorable and glorious Name in vain*.

† Gen. iv. 21.

While the Turtle's melancholy Voice, and the murmuring Water's plaintive Tone, *deepen* and *complete* the universal Symphony.

This is the Music, which constituted the first Song of Thanksgiving, and formed the first vocal Praise, that the all-gracious CREATOR received, from his new made World. This is neither the Parent of Effeminacy, nor a Pander for Vice; but refines the Affections, even while it amuses the Imagination.

Ther. All the Entertainments of Nature, are calculated to secure our Innocence, as well as to gratify our Fancy.—And what is another very agreeable Circumstance, these Gratifications which afford the sublimest Pleasure, are exhibited *gratis*. While those, which enervate the Mind, and debauch the Affections, must be *dearly purchased*.—Every one cannot gain Admittance into the Boxes or the Pit, when some celebrated *Tragedy* is brought upon the Stage. But every one may behold the beauteous Exhibitions of *Spring*, and the noble Productions of *Autumn*. All may contemplate the Machinery of Nature, and the Wonders of Creation. Thereby enjoying a far more exquisite Amusement, without any of the Guilt, or any of the Danger.

The Inhabitants of yonder Villages, have never beheld the splendid Procession, which solemnizes the Coronation of a Monarch; nor the *gaudy Illuminations*, which distinguish the Anniversary of his Birth. But they see, almost every Morning, a much nobler Spectacle displayed in the East. They see the great *Ruler* of the *Day*, or rather the Envoy from Day's eternal SOVEREIGN, making his Entry amidst the vast Spaces of the Sky.—The Heavens are strewed with Colours, that outvie the Pinks and Carnations. The Grass is decked with Dew-Drops, and every Plant is strung, as it were, with Pearls. All around the Darkness flies, and sweet refreshing Gales arise.—At length the magnificent Luminary appears! And what is all the ostentatious Pomp of Kings? What is all the Glitter of the most brilliant Court? Compared with his transcendent Lustre?—This Spectacle We may behold, without
Loss

Loss of Time, or Prejudice to Health. Nay, We cannot behold it, without *improving* one, and *redeeming* the other. So beneficial are even the Pleasures, which Nature yields! So serviceable the very Diversions, to which she invites!

Asp. Thus gracious is the Almighty MAKER, in the Constitution of material Things. The *Substantial* and the *Valuable*, are open to every One; are accessible by all. Only the *Tinsel* and the *Trappings*, are the Property of a Few; the poor Prerogative of Wealth.

No less gracious is GOD, in the Disposal of *spiritual* Favours. These are infinitely more excellent; and yet are equally free. We are invited to *buy them, without Money, and without Price* *.—What do you give for the Benefits of the rising Sun, or the Delights of this rural Melody? The Case is much the same, with regard to the Righteousness by which We are justified, and all the Blessings of Salvation.

Ther. This brings to our Remembrance the Countryman whom we left on the Banks of the River. And, for aught I can see, *Theron* and the Rustic are pretty much upon a footing. The first, as far from acceding to your Notions; as the last, is from gaining his Point.

Asp. Have you any Objection, *Theron*, to these Gifts of Nature; because, they are neither purchased by your Money, nor produced by your own Toil?

Ther. But who can ever expect to obtain Pardon, and Acceptance; and eternal Salvation, at so cheap a Rate? It seems to be all Delusion, *Aspasio*.

Asp. So cheap! Then You would pay somewhat, I presume, by way of Price.—But pray, let me ask; What Price did You pay to GOD your MAKER, for fashioning You in your Mother's Womb? What Price have you paid to GOD your PRESERVER, for upholding You ever since You was born? Or what Price do You think of paying to GOD the supreme PROPRIETOR, for the Ground, on which You tread; for the Air, in which You breathe; for the Sun, by which You see? Just the same Price must you advance

to

DIALOGUE VII. 209

to GOD your SAVIOUR, for all his justifying Merits.

Both *these* and *those* proceed from the same BENEFACTOR. They are all absolutely necessary, either for the Welfare of the Body, or the Happiness of the Soul. And they are all vouchsafed on the same free Terms. For thus saith the Prophet; *His Going-forth, in the Dispensation of the Gospel, is prepared as the Morning. CHRIST, with all his precious Privileges, shall come unto Us as the Rain; as the latter and former Rain unto the Earth* *.—However, if You are acquainted with a different, or a better Way, be so good as to communicate your Knowledge.

Ther. Some, You may observe, depend upon their *inoffensive* Behaviour. They live peaceably. They do no Harm to their Neighbours. They are guilty of no gross Offence against GOD. And why should they not hope to obtain his Favour?—They apprehend, the Prophet *Samuel* establishes their Hope, when He makes this solemn Appeal; *Whose Ox have I taken? Whose Ass have I taken? Or whom have I defrauded* †?—Nay, they imagine, that our LORD himself has authorized their Expectation, by giving this Character of *Nathaniel*; *An Israelite indeed, in whom is no Guile* ‡.—A Freedom from outward Injustice, and inward Hypocrisy, is all the Qualification, applauded in the one Case, avowed in the other.

Assp. This negative Goodness (if it deserves to be called Goodness) was a Plea for the *boasting Pharisee*. But None, I presume, would choose to be associated with *such* a Companion, either in Character Here, or in Condition Hereafter.

Samuel, in the Place You mention, is vindicating Himself, only to his *Fellow-creatures*, and only in the Capacity of a *Magistrate*. He speaks not of his Justification before the Judge of Quick and Dead. This, He well knew, must be derived from another Source, and must rest upon a firmer Bottom.

The Israelite without Guile, was a Person, who not only abstained from every Sin, but performed every Duty;

* Hof. vi. 3.

† 1 Sam. xii. 3.

‡ John i. 47.

210 DIALOGUE VII.

Duty; and without any wilful Neglect of the One, or any allowed Indulgence of the Other. This Instance, therefore, will by no means prove the Sufficiency of your negative Righteousness. Which seems to have just the same Degree of Excellency, as a Fountain that never issues in Water, or as a Cloud that never descends in Rain*.

Ther. In this Particular, *Aspasio*, your Sentiments are mine. — But I would add *Morality* to Civility; the virtuous to the inoffensive Conversation. And if We not only cease to do Evil, but learn to do well: if we use Temperance, exercise Charity, and keep all the Commandments to the best of our Power, is not this a sufficient Foundation for our Hope?

Asp. Yes, *Theron*; if, as you add *Morality* to your Civility, you add *Perfection* to both. Otherwise you must be ranked, not among the *Claimants*, but among the *Delinquents*. You have no Title to a Reward, but stand in Need of Pardon.

It is a Principle of Justice, founded on the unalterable Constitution of Things, That the Debtor be acquitted, when He has paid the Debt. But supposing Him, instead of Gold to bring Iron; instead of Talents to return Pence; instead of defraying, to increase the Score daily; can He then reasonably expect, or legally claim a Discharge?

With respect to such an Obedience, We may pass our Verdict in the figurative, but very expressive Language of *Isaiah*: *The Bed is shorter, than that a Man can stretch Himself on it; and the Covering narrower, than that He can wrap Himself in it*†. It can neither give Rest to the awakened Conscience, nor afford Protection to the guilty Soul. If We have nothing better to plead, We shall not be able to lift up our Heads, in the last decisive Judgment; but *must enter into the Rock, and hide Ourselves in the Dust, for Fear of the LORD, and for the Glory of his Majesty*||.

Ther.

* *Vel Lyra quæ reticet, vel qui non tenditur Arcus.* Claudian

† *Isai.* xxviii. 20.

|| *Isai.* ii. 10.

DIALOGUE VII. 211

Ther. We will go a Step farther, and take in the Exercise of *Devotion*. We will read GOD's Word; pray to his DIVINE MAJESTY; and regularly attend on his public Worship.—Here now, are *social* Accomplishments and *moral* Virtues, completed by the Performance of *religious* Duties.

Asp. Completed!—I fear, that Expression will scarcely abide the Test of a single Query. Have You then performed all your Duties, with that ardent Love of GOD, and undivided View to his Glory? With that adoring Gratitude to the blessed JESUS, and that child-like Dependence on his SPIRIT? Which the Reason of Things requires, and the Scriptures of Truth enjoin?—If not; your Duties, be they moral, or religious, or both, are far from being complete. Nay; they are utterly defective; and, for that Reason, absolutely insufficient for your Justification. They are *clipped* or *sophisticated* Coin. And will that be *current* in the World of Glory?

Ther. Allowing them to be defective, yet they are *sincere*. And though not free from all *Alloy*, yet if they bear the *Image* and *Superscription* of Integrity, why should they be rejected as *reprobate Silver*? Why should not they obtain the Currency, You mention?

Asp. Alas!—says a judicious and admired Writer,—
 “ The Imperfections of our best Services, daily *forfeit*
 “ the Blessings of *Time*. How impossible then is it,
 “ that the Sincerity of them, amidst so many Frailties
 “ and Defects, should *purchase* the Glories of *Eternity*!”

Ther. Be your Writer ever so judicious, I can confront Him with Others, equally capable of judging, and diametrically opposite in Opinion.—What says that wise and brave Man, the Successor of *Moses*, and Generalissimo of the Armies of *Israel*? *Joshua*, I am sure, declares Himself on my Side. *Fear the LORD*, and *serve him in Sincerity**, is his last solemn Charge to the People.—Even the great Apostle, on a Review of his Ministry, makes it Matter of Self-gratulation,

* Josh. xxiv. 14.

tulation, *That He had his Conversation in godly Sincerity*†.

Asp. You have quoted the Charge, delivered by the *Servant*, be pleased to recollect the Protestation made by the *Master*: *Not for thy Righteousness*, says *Moses*, *or for the Uprightness of thy Heart, dost thou go to possess their Land*‡. Even an earthly *Canaan* was not given to the *Israelites*, as the Reward of their own, either outward Obedience, or inward Sincerity. Much less can We expect the Kingdom of Immortality, on account of any Uprightness of our Intentions, or Piety of our Actions.

However, as the Doctrine of Sincerity is the *favourite* and *fashionable* Tenet, I will conform a little to the Taste in Vogue. You shall have no Reason to complain, That I am either a *Cynic* or a *Stoic*.—Let it suffice Us to be sincere. Only let Us refer Ourselves to the Apostle, for a Description of this darling Qualification. *That Ye may be sincere, being filled with the Fruits of Righteousness, which are by JESUS CHRIST, unto the Praise and Glory of GOD* §.

Here are three Properties of acceptable Sincerity.—It must bear Fruits, *the Fruits of Righteousness*; and bear them *abundantly*, so that We may be filled with them.—The Branch and the Fruits must derive, *that* its Vigour, *these* their Flavour, and both of them their very Being, from the all-supporting, all-supplying Root *CHRIST JESUS*.—Then, instead of terminating in Self-justification, they must redound to the Honour of GOD. It is not said, These shall *justify* You, but these shall *glorify* your FATHER which is in Heaven.

This Kind of Sincerity, can never be too highly esteemed, nor too zealously encouraged. But this, You will observe, flows from the *Grace of CHRIST*, and issues in the *Glory of GOD*. Therefore does but very poorly attest, either the Sufficiency of *human Ability*, to perform good Works; or the Sufficiency of *human Works*, to win the Prize of our High Calling.

Ther.

† 2 Cor. i. 12.

‡ Deut. ix. 5.

§ Phil. i. 10, 11.

DIALOGUE VII. 213

Ther. Do You then exclude *all* Works? Will You make a mere Nothing, both of *our* moral Endowments, and of *your* evangelical Obedience?

Asp. They are excluded from all Share in justifying Us. Yet not by me, but by an Authority, to which there can be no Objection, and from which there lies no Appeal. Speaking of Salvation, thus saith the Wisdom of GOD; *Not of Works.*

Ther. Works of the *ceremonial* Law, I suppose. These, we all acknowledge, are, under the *Christian* Dispensation, as a Bond cancelled, or an Act repealed. But sure You will allow a better Office, and a nobler Character, to that Course of Obedience, which is regulated by the Commands of *CHRIST*.

Asp. St. Paul will allow it no such Office, as that for which *Theron* is pleading. *Ye are saved*, says the Apostle! Ye are delivered from Wrath, reconciled to GOD, and made Heirs of his Kingdom.—How? *By Grace, through Faith* *. *Grace*, like a magnificent Sovereign, from the Riches of his own Bounty, and without any Respect to human Worthiness, confers the glorious Gift. *Faith*, like an indigent Petitioner, with an empty Hand, and without any Pretence to personal Desert, receives the heavenly Blessing.

Both Grace and Faith stand in direct Opposition to Works; *all* Works whatever. Whether they be Works of the Law, or Works of the Gospel; Exercises of the Heart, or Actions of the Life; done while we remain unregenerate, or when we become regenerate; they are, all and every of them, *equally* set aside in this great Affair.

That the Bill of Exclusion is thus *extensive*, or rather quite *unlimited*, appears from the Reason assigned. *Lest any Man should boast* †. That all Pretence of Glorifying may be cut off from fallen Creatures. That the whole Honour of obtaining Salvation, may be appropriated to HIM, *who hid not his Face from Shame and Spitting*.—And is He not worthy, unspeakably and infinitely worthy, to receive this *unrivalled* Honour,

* Eph. ii. 8.

† Eph. iii. 9.

214 DIALOGUE VII.

Honour, as a Recompence for his *unparalleled* Humiliation.

Ther. All our good Works, We allow, are recommended by *CHRIST*. They prevail for our Justification, only through his Merits. So that We still depend upon the REDEEMER. And, by this Means, pay Him the highest Honour.

Asp. Depend upon the REDEEMER! No, my dear Friend. You rely upon your own pious Acts, and moral Qualifications. They, *they* are your *grand* Recommendation. The Office configned over to the divine *JESUS*, is nothing more than to be (as it were) *Master of the Ceremonies*. He may have the Credit of introducing your fine Accomplishments, with a kind of graceful Air.—But is *this* an Office suited to his incomparable Dignity? Was it for *this*, that He bowed the Heavens, and partook of our Nature? Was it for *this*, that He became subject to the Law, and obedient unto Death? Only for *this*, that He might usher in our own Endowments, with a Plume and a Scarf?—Surely, *Theron*, You can never entertain such low Thoughts of the incarnate GOD, and of *CHRIST*'s mediatorial Undertaking.

Ther. Neither can I entertain such *low* and *vilifying* Thoughts, of our own virtuous Attainments. They distinguish Persons of Eminence and Worth, from the fordid Wretch and execrable Villain; just as the noble Faculty of Reason, distinguishes the Man from the Brute.

Asp. To deny good Works the Merit of justifying Us, is very different from vilifying them.—You are going to build a new House, *Theron*. Pray, do You intend to fetch your Timber from the flimsy Tendrils of the Vine?

Ther. No, certainly †.

Asp. Because You don't think its feeble Shoots proper, to form the Beams, and support the Roof, of your intended

† *No, certainly.*—Perhaps, it may be worth our while to observe; That this is the Meaning of a very *obsolete* Expression, which occurs in our Translation of (*εκ οίδα*) Luke xvii. 9. *I knew not.*

intended Edifice: do You, therefore, *affront* them, *depreciate* them, or *disallow* their Usefulness?—By no means.—They may *beautify* your Walls, with their ornamental Spread; and *enrich* the Desert, with their delicious Fruit. This is an Office, suitable to the Nature of the Plant: and from this it receives sufficient Estimation, without pretending to the Honours of the Oak.

Virtuous Attainments, I own, are a considerable Distinction, in the present State of Things. And, what is a higher Encomium (I shall now out-shoot You, in your own Bow) they will distinguish the true Believer from the hypocritical Professor, even at the great Tribunal.—But let them be content with their Province, and not intrude upon the SAVIOUR's Pre-rogative. To *effect* Justification, be *bis*: to *discriminate* the Justified, *theirs*.—Neither let them elate their Possessors, with a vain Conceit of themselves. Who, though they were meek as *Moses*, holy as *Samuel*, and wise as *Daniel*, must confide in nothing, but the boundless Mercies of the LORD: must plead nothing, but the infinite Merits of his *CHRIST*.

This, I am sure, is the Theology, both of the *Psalmist*, and of *St. Paul*. They derive the Blessedness promised in Scripture, not from the shallow Stream of human Accomplishments, but from the inexhaustible Ocean of divine Grace. *Blessed is He, whose Unrighteousnesses are forgiven, and whose Sins are covered* *.

Ther. Will *Aspasio* then, like many of our modern Disputants, *mutilate* the holy Word? Industriously display, what seems to favour his Cause; but artfully secrete, what tends to overthrow his Scheme? How could You forget, or why should You suppress, the following Clause? *And in whose Spirit there is no Guile*.—Was You afraid, it would demolish your Opinion; and point out an *upright, honest* Mind, as the Cause of this Blessedness?

Asp. Far was I, my dear *Theron*, from any such groundless Apprehensions; and equally far from all such
delusory

* Psal. xxxii. 1. Rom. iv. 7.

216 DIALOGUE VII.

deusory Designs. *Shall I talk deceitfully for GOD†?* His sacred Cause does not need it, and his exalted Majesty would disdain it. No: I would condemn my Tongue to eternal Silence, rather than speak a Syllable, either to conceal, or disguise the Truth.

Most readily We will admit the Sentence You mention: *In whose Spirit there is no Guile.* It is evident from the Context, That these Words are not descriptive of a Person, in whose Heart and Conversation there is no Iniquity; but whose Mouth freely *confesses* the Iniquity of them both. Confesses, without any Reserve, or the least Attempt to palliate.—Which, instead of invalidating, corroborates my Argument. Since, according to your own Allegation, the highest Merit consists, in a *free Acknowledgment* of Sin, or a *total Renunciation* of all Worthiness.

Ther. When We join Repentance to all our other Works; lament our Deficiencies, and implore Forgiveness: surely, this must be available with a merciful GOD, and cannot but intitle Us to the Happiness of Heaven.

Asp. How strange does it sound, at least in my Ears, for poor, miserable, guilty Creatures, to talk of intitling themselves to the Happiness of Heaven, by any Deeds of their own! When it is owing wholly to GOD's rich *forbearing Mercy*, that they are not transmitted to Hell: owing wholly to GOD's free *pre-venting Grace*, that they are enabled to think a good Thought.

But not to insist upon this Consideration.—I will suppose You, to have lamented your Deficiencies, and implored Forgiveness. Yet still I must say to my Friend, as our LORD replied to the young Gentleman in the Gospel: *One Thing thou lackest*: a Righteousness, that may magnify the Law, and make it honourable.—Should GOD, without insisting upon this, pardon and reward, He would not act according to his glorious Character: nor be, at once, *a just GOD, and a SAVIOUR* ‖.—And if You can find this Righteousness, *either in the Depth, or in the Height above*; in any

† Job xiii 7.

‖ Isai. xlv. 21.

any Person or any Object, save only in the imputed Obedience of our LORD *JESUS CHRIST*, I retract whatever I have advanced.

Ther. A Preacher and an Author has lately assured Us, that We are to be “accepted of GOD, and saved “by our own Obedience.” If so, I need not scruple to repeat my Assertion, that our own Duties, especially when accompanied with Repentance, are a *real* and *proper* Foundation for Life eternal.

Asp. Then the Apostle was under a great Mistake, when, treating of *CHRIST* and his Merits, He ventured to assert; *Other Foundation can no Man lay, save that which is laid, even JESUS CHRIST**.

Ther. If You will not credit a modern Preacher, I can produce a Decision, made by one of the most ancient and authoritative *Synods*, that ever was convened: *Then hath GOD also to the Gentiles granted Repentance unto Life †.*—*Repentance unto Life*, is *their* unanimous Voice, and *my* unexceptionable Voucher.

Asp. I can easily guess the Assembly, to which You refer. But I can hardly grant it the venerable Name of a *Synod*. It consisted of some *Judaizing* Converts. Who adhered, with a tenacious and bigotted Zeal, to the *Mosaic* Rites.—However, though I might scruple my *Theron*’s Appellation, I readily acquiesce in *their* Determination.

But it is not said, Those *Gentiles* were *penitent*, and therefore GOD granted them Life. This should have been the Language of the Assembly, in order to establish my Friend’s way of Thinking.—They were *dead* in Sin. GOD, of his free Goodness, granted them Repentance. Which is both the Beginning and a substantial Part of *true* Life: even of that Life, which is founded on Justification, is carried on by Sanctification, and completed in Glory.

I would farther observe; That Repentance is a *Turning of the Heart*. And, when it is Repentance unto Life, it is a Turning of the Heart from every other Object, to the great and sole Fountain of Good, *CHRIST*

* 1 Cor. iii. 11.

† Acts xi. 18.

JESUS.—Were Men Slaves to Sensuality? When they repent, they are turned to *CHRIST*, for refined and heavenly Affections. Were they wont to confide in themselves, and their own Works? As soon as they truly repent, they turn to *CHRIST* for a better Righteousness; and, thereby, for everlasting Acceptance with *GOD*.—In short; they turn from every false Stay, and fly only to *CHRIST*; depend only on *CHRIST*. Looking, not to their own Tears or Humiliation, not to their own Duties or Graces; but *looking for the Mercy of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, unto eternal Life* *.

Ther. Suppose, it should be wrong, to expect such a vast Reward, as the inconceivable Glories of Heaven, on Account of our own Duties: Yet, to set them *wholly* aside; to allow them *no* Influence at all; not so much as the *least* Co-operation, in turning the Scale; this is an Excess on the other Hand. If the former is *Presumption*, the latter is *Fanaticism*.

Asp. I must confess, I do not thoroughly understand, what You mean by Fanaticism. Neither is it of much Significancy, to enter upon the Disquisition of an obnoxious Term. I would only maintain, That, on Us unworthy Sinners, whatever is bestowed by the righteous *GOD*, is bestowed not as a Debt † to our Works, but as the Donation of *pure Grace*.

Ther. I think, it is sufficiently of Grace; if We acknowledge good Works, to be wrought by the Assistance of the *DIVINE SPIRIT*; and then admitted, together with our *SAVIOUR*'s Merits, as a Recommendation to the divine Favour.

Asp. The *Pharisee* could make his Acknowledgements for the Assistance of Grace. Yet, this did not exempt Him from the Charge of *Pride*, nor secure Him from the Sin of *Boasting*.—Besides; if good Works are wrought by the Operation of the divine *SPIRIT*, they

* Jude 21.

† Bestowed as a Debt, is, I must confess, somewhat like Jargon. But, perhaps, *Jargon* and *Inconsistency*, may not be without their *Propriety* in this Place. As they tend to shew the Genius of *that* Doctrine, which would connect such contradictory Ideas.

DIALOGUE VII. 219

they draw a Bill upon our Gratitude, not upon the Bank of Heaven. They render Us the *obliged*, not the *deserving* Party. To think or teach otherwise, is errant *Popery* †, however it may lurk under a Veil of *Protestantism*.

What You say, brings to my Mind a memorable Story.—Two Persons were traveling through the Deserts of *Arabia*. The One carried a Musket; the Other was armed with a Sword. A *Lion* espies them, and advances fiercely towards them. The foremost discharges his Piece, and wounds the savage Creature. The Wound, neither killing nor disabling, only enrages the Monster. He seizes the unfortunate Marksman, and is upon the Point to tear Him Limb from Limb. His Companion flies to his Succour; snatches up the Carbine, that dropt from the other's Hand; and fells the ravenous Beast to the Ground. Then, drawing his Sword, stabs him to the Heart, and rescues his Friend.—How, do You think, this Friend repays his Deliverer, when they both return to their native Country?—Truly, He demands Satisfaction for the Loss of his Weapon, which happened to be broke in the Encounter. He commences a Law-suit against that generous Associate, who had put his Life in his Hand, and saved the Prosecutor from the very Jaws of Destruction.

Do You commend the *Equity* of such a Procedure? —It is only a Shadow, the *most faint* Shadow of our excessive Unreasonableness, if We presume to write ourselves Creditors, and the DIVINE BEING Debtor; because, He has delivered Us from the Bondage of Corruption, and enabled us to discharge the Duties of Godliness.

† *Good Works*, says a Champion for the Church of *Rome*, are *Mercatura Regni cœlestis*, the *Price We pay for the Kingdom of Heaven*.—Another Zealot of that Communion declares; *Cœlum gratis non accipiam*, *It shall never be said, that I receive Heaven merely as a Matter of Alms*.—So speaks He! But, blessed be GOD, We have not to learned *CHRIST*.

220 DIALOGUE VII.

Theron paused; as somewhat struck by the Representation. After a short Interval, Aspasio resumed the Discourse.

Believe me, my dear Friend, Salvation, both in the Root and all its Branches, is *intirely* of Grace, Or else believe me, for the many cogent Testimonies of Scripture; which most circumstantially ascertain this great Truth.—*Election* is of Grace: *Having predestinated Us unto the Adoption of Children*, not on Account of human Worthiness, but *according to the good Pleasure of his Will**.—Equally gratuitous is our effectual *Vocation*: *GOD hath called Us with an holy Calling*, not according to our Works, but according to his Purpose and Grace†.—*Faith* is owing to the same Cause: *By Grace Ye are saved through Faith*‡.—From hence springs *Justification*: *Being justified freely by his Grace*§.—This is the Origin of *Regeneration*: *Of his own Will begat He Us by the Word of Truth*§.—The *Consummation* of Bliss flows from the same all-supplying Source: *The Gift ¶ of GOD is eternal Life*** : It is, in every Respect, a Gift; not only without, but contrary to, all Desert of ours.—So that the Foundation is laid in the Riches of Grace: the Superstructure is reared by the Hand of Grace: and when the top-stone is brought forth, when our Felicity is completed in the Kingdom of Heaven, the everlasting Acclamation will be, *Grace, Grace unto it*††!

This

* Eph. i. 5.

† 2 Tim. i. 9.

‡ Eph. ii. 8.

§ Rom. iii. 24. *Δωρεαν τη αυτη χαριτι*, One of these Expressions, might have served, to convey the Apostle's Meaning. But, He doubles his Assertion; in order to give Us the *fullest Conviction* of the Truth, and to impress Us with a Sense of its *peculiar Importance*: *Freely by his Grace*.—Is it possible to find out a Form of Words, that should more *absolutely* exclude all Consideration of our own Works and Obedience? Or that should more *emphatically* ascribe the Whole of our Justification to free, uninfluenced, sovereign Goodness?

§ Jam. i. 18.

¶ Rom. vi. 23.

** *Χαρισμα*. Which is a more expressive Word than *δωρεμα*, and conveys the Idea of *freest Favour*, Rom. vi. 23.

†† Zech. iv. 7.

This is that glorious Gospel, which human Learning could never have discovered ; which carnal Reason cannot understand ; which the Wisdom of this World accounteth Foolishness ; which the Envy of the Devil, and the Pride of Man, will always oppose.

Ther. What say You to the Opinion which *Ouranius* so strenuously maintains ? That We are justified not by the Merits of *CHRIST* imputed to Us, but by *CHRIST* himself formed in our Hearts. And *Ouranius* is none of your proud or carnal People. His Writings are remarkable for their strict Piety, and his Life is as exemplary as his Principles.

Asp. You know, *Iheron*, I have nothing to do with the Persons of Men, but with the Truths of the Gospel. *Ouranius*, though eminently devout, may be mistaken. And, if this is his Way of Thinking, He quite misapprehends the Doctrine of Grace.

What is written in the Oracles of Scripture ? *The LORD justifieth the Ungodly* *. What is included in the Tenet of *Ouranius* ? He justifieth the *Holy*, the *Heavenly*, the *Christ-like*.—*A Man is justified without Works* †, says the Secretary of Heaven. He is justified by Works, says the Pen of *Ouranius* : only let them be Works of a superior Order ; such as are internal, spiritual, and wrought by the Operation of *CHRIST* on the Soul.—According to this Notion, every One is justified by his own Love, his own Purity, his own Zeal. Whereas, an unerring Writer has most solemnly declared, That by *ONE Man's Obedience Many*, many Myriads of Sinners, even all the redeemed World, *shall be made righteous* ‡.

This Notion, I think, is *Legalism* in its greatest Subtilty, or highest Refinement. It disannuls the *Merit* of *CHRIST* ; it vacates all *Imputation* ; and makes our Salvation to consist wholly in the Work of Sanctification. Against which, if You remember, I entered my Protest in one of our first Conferences.—I am justified ; my Soul is accepted : not because *CHRIST* has put his Laws in my Mind, but shed his Blood for

* Rom. iv. 5.

† Rom. iii. 28.

‡ Rom. v. 19.

my Sins: not because I *myself* am enabled to walk in all godly Conversation, but because the *LORD JESUS* has fulfilled all Righteousness as my *Surety*.

Ther. I am for neither of the Extremes. The middle Way is most eligible. This is what sound Sense approves, and the sacred System authorizes. *Whoso believeth on me*, says our *LORD*, *shall not perish, but shall have everlasting Life**. *Blessed*, adds the beloved Disciple, *are they, who do his Commandments; that they may have a Right to the Tree of Life; and may enter in, through the Gates, into the City*†.

Conformably to these Texts of Scripture, I would neither reject our REDEEMER's Merits, nor repudiate good Works. As this shady Tree, and these cooling Breezes, unite their Properties, to render our Situation agreeable; so those two Causes, acting in Conjunction, exalt Us to the Favour of GOD, and constitute Us Heirs of Heaven.—GOD himself has joined them. And I must urge my Remonstrance in our LORD's own Words, *What GOD hath joined together, let not Man put asunder*.

Asp. Would You then make Impotence itself a Co-adjutor with Omnipotence?—Does this humble the Sinner? Does this exalt the SAVIOUR?—No: it is a most injurious Infringement of his mediatorial Dignity. Instead of excluding, it evidently introduces Boasting. In Consequence of such a Scheme, it would be said by the Inhabitants of the heavenly World; “Thanks to our blessed REDEEMER for this Happiness! Yet, not to Him only, but to our own Righteousness also.”

Can You imagine, that the Obedience of *CHRIST* is *insufficient* to accomplish our Justification? Must its Efficacy be reinforced by the Accession of our Works?—And what are these Works of ours? That *they* should enhance the Value, the immense Value, of our REDEEMER's!—*Maimed, tarnished, worm-eaten* Things. Eaten by the Worms of Self-seeking, Self-admiring, Self-love: Tarnished by a thousand Vanities: Maimed by ten thousand Negligences.—To join *these* in Commission

* John iii. 15.

† Rev. xxii. 14.

mission, with our divine MASTER's Righteousness; would be infinitely more *disgraceful*, than to tack the Beggar's Rag on the Monarch's Robe. Would be altogether as *needleless*, as to dream of augmenting the Sea, by the Drops of our Bucket.

Ther. *Worm-eaten!* What Reason have You to represent our Acts of Obedience under this disgraceful Image?

Asp. I thought, You could hardly brook this disparaging Expression. It is somewhat like *petty Treason* against the Dignity of Man. My Reasons I would postpone to some other Opportunity; when, if You please, We will give the Cause a full Hearing.

At present, to make Amends for this vile Slander, I will suppose your Works to have *no Defect*; nay, to have *all the Perfection*, which You yourself could wish.—Will You *glory* on this Account?—You are too modest, I am sure, to avow or patronize such a Practice. Yet, if we say or think, concerning any Attainments of our own, *This is the Ground, on which I expect to escape Condemnation, and inherit Life*; We do, in the most *offensive*, though not in the most *explicit* Manner, glory.

Or, will You reckon, that these Services, because faultless, are meritorious; and authorize You to make a Demand upon the ALMIGHTY? Let Us hear our LORD's Decision in the Case. *When Ye have done not some only, but all those Things which are commanded You; say, We are no better than unprofitable Servants; We have done nothing more, than what was our indispensable Duty to do**. And have, on this Footing, just the same Claim to Honours and Rewards, as the Negro Slave, after the Dispatch of his daily Business, has upon the Estate or the Wealth of an *American* Planter.

Ther. But what say You to those Passages of Scripture, which I have quoted. You have given them a Hearing, but no Answer. They, I do insist upon it, expressly *assert*, therefore incontestably *prove*, an *Union*

* Luke xvii. 10.

of *CHRIST*'s Merit, and our own Works, in the Business of Salvation.

Ass. It is written in the Book of *Revelations*, *Blessed are they that do his Commandments*. And wherefore? Because, the Obedience of Faith, is attended with a real Blessedness on Earth; and demonstrates our Title, to eternal Blessedness in Heaven. It is, to speak according to St. *John*'s Idea, though not the *Purchase*, yet the *Evidence* of our Right to the Tree of Life.

All this I acknowledge. But where, I beseech You, does the Scripture join the Obedience of *CHRIST* and the Obedience of Man, as mutually *concurring* to justify the Sinner?—The Scripture utterly *disavows* such a Copartnership; and asserts what our Homily expresses: “Surely, there can be no Work of any mortal Man * (be He never so holy) that shall be coupled in Merit with *CHRIST*'s most holy Act. *.”—It steadily declares, that, in this greatest of Transactions, *CHRIST* is not an Accessary, but a Principal; nay, that He is ALL. *Be it known unto You, Men and Brethren, that through this illustrious and exalted Person †, is preached unto You the Forgiveness of Sins: and by Him all that believe are justified from all Things. Through this Person; without any Partner or Coadjutor. Which was typified by the High-Priest, when, on the solemn Day of Expiation, He went into the Tabernacle alone, and made the typical Atonement without any Associate ‡. From all Things; by HIM they are wholly, as well as solely justified. Freed from every Charge, whether of Omission or Commission; and rendered, not in part only, but completely acceptable.*

I hope, therefore, You will no longer consider the glorious *IMMANUEL*, as a *partial* Cause of our Justification.—What would be the Consequence, if a Person should fix one Foot on the Bank of yonder, River, and rest another on the fluid Stream!

Ther.

* Homily on *Good-Friday*.

† Acts xiii. 38. *Δια τούτου*, the Word *Man* is not in the Original. So that I think, *this* illustrious and exalted *Person*, is the fullest and most exact Translation.

‡ Levit. xvi. 17.

Ther. He must unavoidably fall.

Asp. And what says our divine Instructor, to those double-minded *Galatians*; who could not believe themselves safe and complete, in the Merits of *CHRIST* alone: but must be seeking some other Foundation, on which to repose a *Share* at least of their Confidence? He says; and they are awful Words; they call for my *Theron's* most serious Regard; *Ye are fallen from Grace* *.

Let me intreat my Friend, to beware of this Error. I think, it is the prevailing Error of our Times; and so much the more *dangerous*, because it is somewhat specious. — To pour Contempt upon the blessed *JESUS* with the *Libertines* and *Deists*, would be shocking to a Mind, that retains the least Reverence for sacred Things. Intirely to set aside the meritorious Efficacy of his Undertaking, with the *Arians* and *Socinians*, would be afflictive to a Conscience, that is impressed with the least Sense of Sin. Whereas, to erect our Merits on the Foundation of *CHRIST's*; to be found in *his*, yet not renounce *our own* Righteousness; this is both plausible to our Reason, and pleasing to our Vanity. This seems to honour the DIVINE SAVIOUR, even while it gratifies human *Pride*. — But this is an egregious Falshood, and cannot stand. This is an abominable Idol, and must be laid in the Dust. *CHRIST*, like the *real* Mother of the Child, will have the *whole*, or none; the whole — *unshared* — *undiminished* Glory of our Salvation.

Let me once again intreat my dear *Theron*, to beware of this Error. It is the main Pillar in the *Romish* Heresy, and the Master-policy of the *Popish* Machiavilians. *CHRIST* hath merited, that *We* may merit, is their grand Maxim, and their grand Delusion. Hence come their Penances and their Pilgrimages: hence the hypocritical Mortifications of Some, and the extravagant Austerities of Others: this enriches their Shrines, and fills their Cloysters. And to those Seminaries of Superstition, let it be banished, let it be confined. —

* Gal. v. 4.

There let them raise their Scaffolding, and try to enlarge the Dimensions of the Sky. *There* let them kindle their Flambeaus, and attempt to increase the Lustre of the Sun. And when they have effected this *easier* Task, then will We *Protestants* follow their Example, and adopt their System. Then will We also think of adding our own Righteousness by way of Supplement to our LORD's.

Ther. If We are justified wholly by our LORD's Righteousness: if nothing *need* be added, if nothing *can* be added to its all-comprehending Fullness, what becomes of the generally received Opinion, that *CHRIST* obtained for Us only a *Possibility* of being saved; or put Us into a *Capacity* of acquiring Salvation?

Ans. It will be discountenanced and overthrown; as extremely dishonourable to the REDEEMER, and no less uncomfortable to the Redeemed. When *CHRIST* procured our Pardon, and recovered our Title to Life; it was all his own doing. *Of the People there was none with Him* *. In both Cases his Work was perfect—Hear his own Testimony: *I have finished the Work which thou gavest me to do* †. Should You want an Explication of these Words, I refer You to the Comment of an Apostle. *He*, that is *JESUS CHRIST*, *has obtained eternal Redemption for Us* ‡. This was his Work, and it is fully executed. *He has, He has*, obtained eternal Redemption; and left nothing for his People, but to accept the glorious Purchase, and live as becomes the Redeemed of the LORD.

This Truth is written, as with a Sun-beam in every Page of the Gospel; and sounds, as with a Voice of Thunder, in the Songs of Heaven. *Salvation to our GOD*, they cry, *that sitteth upon the Throne, and to the LAMB* ||. Those Saints in Glory, ascribe the Whole—the *Whole* of their Salvation they ascribe, to the Grace of GOD, and to the *Blood* of the LAMB.

Ther.

* *Isai.* lxiii. 6.
|| *Rev.* vii. 10.

† *John* xvii. 4.

‡ *Heb.* ix. 12.

Ther. Have not many of our ablest Divines represented Faith, Obedience, and Repentance as the *Terms of Acceptance*? In this Account, there is no Procurement of the Thing itself, but only of easier Conditions, on which it may be obtained.

Asp. The Terms of Acceptance, for fallen and rebellious Man, were, A full Satisfaction to the divine Justice, and a complete Conformity to the divine Law. These, impracticable by Us, were consigned over to *CHRIST*. By Him they were thoroughly accomplished; and by this Accomplishment of them, He purchased for us all Blessings. Among others, He purchased the *Gift* of Faith, the *Grace* of Repentance, and *Ability* to yield thankful, dutiful, evangelical Obedience. These therefore are very improperly called the *Terms*, which are really constituent *Parts* of our Salvation.

To sum up all in a Word—The whole Tenour of Revelation shews, that there are but two Methods, whereby any of the Children of *Adam* can be justified. —Either by a perfect Obedience to the Law, in their own Persons; and then the Reward is of Debt*. —Or else, because the Surety of a better Covenant has satisfied all Demands in their stead; and then it is a Gift of Grace. —There is no *trimming* or *reconciling* Expedient. —You may chuse either of the two; but no third is proposed or allowed.

Ther. Was there not a different Method for the *antient* People of GOD?

Asp. None, *Theron*. In the State of primitive Innocency, a *perfect* and *persevering* Observance of the divine Command, was the Condition of Life and Immortality. When, by the first grand Apostacy, this became impossible; a *free* Pardon, and *gracious* Acceptance, through the blessed *JESUS*, were substituted in its stead. Which Oeconomy, like a Fountain of Life, was opened; when GOD promised, *the Seed of the Woman, to bruise the Serpent's Head* †. —It ran, like
a fa-

* *Rom.* iv. 4. *Passional Debt*; founded on the Promise of the Covenant, not springing from any Worth in the Obedience,

† *Gen.* iii. 15.

a salutary Rivulet, through the *Antediluvian* World—Continued its Progress along the *Patriarchal* Age—Flowed, in broader Streams, under the *Mosaic* Dispensation.—Is derived down to Us, abundantly enlarged by the Coming of *CHRIST*, and the Ministry of his *Apostles* —Will be transmitted, with an *increasing* Spread, to the latest Posterity. Nor ever cease to amplify and extend its Influence, till, as the Fountain is become a River, the River is augmented into an Ocean; and the *Knowledge of the LORD* our Righteousness fill the Earth, as the Waters cover the Abysses of the Sea *.

There was, I confess, a Diversity in the *Administration*, but no Difference in the *Nature*, of the Blessing. *JESUS CHRIST*, however variously manifested, was the *same Yesterday*, is the *same to Day*, will be the *same for ever* †. As it is the very same Sun, which gleams at early Dawn; which shines in the advancing Day; and glows at Height of Noon.

My Simile reminds Us of the Time, and leaves a most important Doctrine upon our Memories. Suppose We take the Admonition, and begin to move homeward.

Ther. We need be in no Hurry, *Aspasio*. My Watch tells me, that We have half an Hour good. Besides, I have something farther to alledge, and from a very great Authority, which seems directly contrary to your Notion.

Asp. Just as You please, *Theron*. If You choose to stay, I am all Compliance with your Inclination. And, would Truth permit, I should be all Conformity to your Opinion.

Ther. You know, who it is that asks; *What doth the LORD thy GOD require of thee?* And neither of Us need be informed, what it is that the Prophet replies; *Do Justice, love Mercy, and walk humbly with thy GOD* ‖. But I want to know, what *You think* of this Passage?

Asp. I think, it is absolutely inconsistent with your Scheme. This Passage inculcates *Humility*. But your Scheme

* Isai. xi. 9.

† Heb. xiii. 8.

‖ Mic. vi. 8.

DIALOGUE VII. 229

Scheme is the very Reverse of that amiable Virtue. A *Self-justiciary* walking humbly with GOD, is little better than a Contradiction in Terms.

The LORD has said; "Ye shall be saved by Grace†." Your System replies; "No, but by our own Works."—It is declared in Scripture; "That the *Gift* of GOD is eternal Life." It is implied in my Friend's Doctrine; That this Happiness is the *Wages* of our own Deeds.—"My SON shall have all the Glory of a Sinner's Salvation," is the unalterable Decree of the MOST HIGH. "*We* will have a Share in the Honour," is the Language of your Opinion.—Look, how wide therefore the East is from the West! So remote is such a Strain of Teaching, from the Practice of *walking humbly* with our GOD.

Ther. But consider, good *Aspasio*; have I not the Prophet's Authority for my Opinion? Are not his Words expressly on my Side? Does He not mention those Duties of Morality and Piety, as the *appointed Method* of obtaining the divine Favour?

Asp. He mentions, I apprehend, a *sollicitous Inquiry*. To which He gives a *satisfactory Answer*. Then sub-joins a *practical Improvement* of the Whole.—The Inquiry is expressed in these Words; *Wherewithal shall I come before the LORD, and bow myself before the High GOD? Shall I come before him with Burnt-offerings, with Calves of a Year old? Will the LORD be pleased with thousands of Rams; with ten thousands of Rivers of Oil? Shall I give my First-born for my Transgression, the Fruit of my Body for the Sin of my Soul?* To which it is replied; *He hath shewed thee, O Man, what is good* for this important Purpose; namely, the *MESSIAH*; pointed out by all thy Sacrifices, and described in the preceding Chapter. Atonement for Sin, and Peace with GOD, are to be made by a better Hand,

† *Eph.* ii. 5. This Text lays the Ax to the *very Root* of spiritual Pride, and all Self-glorying whatever. Therefore the inspired Writer, foreseeing the Backwardness of Mankind to receive it, yet knowing the absolute Necessity of its Reception, again asserts (*ver.* 8) the *very same* Truth, in the *very same* Words.

Hand, and in a better Way than thou propofest. HE, *whose Outgoings have been from of old, from everlasting**; HE, who is the Son of the HIGHEST, and yet the Seed of *Her that travaileth*†; HE has undertaken, and will fully execute this great Office.

And what doth the LORD thy GOD ‡ require of thee? What Temper, what Conduct, what Expressions of Gratitude from his People? Who are reconciled thro' the Blood of CHRIST, and admitted to the Blessings of the New Covenant.—They are to testify their Thankfulness, by the Alacrity, Uniformity, and Constancy of their Obedience; or by the conscientious Discharge of every *moral, social, and religious* Duty.

If this be a true Interpretation of the Text, instead of establishing, it overturns your Cause.—But I have another Objection to your Method, perhaps, more weighty than the foregoing.

Ther. Pray let me hear it.—I am not so enamoured with my Notions, but I can bear to have them censured; nor so attached to my Scheme, but I can relinquish it for a better.

Asp. I would illustrate my Meaning, by a common Experiment in Optics. When Objects are viewed in a *concave Speculum*, or in the Hollow of a polished Spoon, how do they appear?

Ther. Inverted.

Asp. Such is my Friend's System of Religion. He inverts the Order of the Gospel. He turns the beautiful Building upside down; and lays that for the Foundation, which should only be Part of the *Superstructure*.—Not so the Apostle *Paul*. He, like a wise Master-BUILDER, places CHRIST as the Foundation-Stone; and rears his Edifice of practical Godliness, on that all-supporting Basis.—Examine his Epistle to the *Romans*.

* Mic. v. 2.

† Mic. v. 3.

‡ *Thy GOD*, is the Phrase. Which denotes an *Interest*; implies an *Appropriation*; and is the peculiar Language of the Covenant.—*Thy GOD*; not made so by *thy* humble Walking, but by an Act of *his own* Grace, previous to any Obedience of thine.—According to *Tberon's* Principles, the Prophet should rather have said, walk humbly (not *with thy GOD*, but) that He *may be thy GOD*.

DIALOGUE VII. 231

mans. Which is unquestionably the completest Model of Doctrine, and the noblest Body of Divinity, extant in the World.

He first discovers the *Depravity* of our Nature, and the Misery of our Condition.—He, then, displays the Method of our *Recovery* by *CHRIST*, and the Blessings freely vouchsafed in his Gospel.—After which, He delineates the Offices of *Morality*, and inforces them by the most engaging Motives. Motives drawn from the free unbounded Loving-kindness of *GOD* our SAVIOUR, and from the rich invaluable Benefits of his Grace*.—*Privilege* He plants as the Root. From which, *Duty* blooms as the Flower; *Godliness* grows, as the Fruit.

The same Order is observed by *St. Peter*, in his very concise, but very accurate Map, of the Way to Heaven. *Elect, according to the Fore-knowledge of GOD the FATHER, through Sanctification of the SPIRIT, unto Obedience, and Sprinkling of the Blood of CHRIST* †.—First, the everlasting and electing Love of the FATHER.—Then, the enlightening and renewing Agency of the SPIRIT. Who testifies of *CHRIST*, and applies his Death to the Soul; purifying the Heart by Faith.—From whence, as from a Fountain of living Waters, flow *true Sanctification*, and every Species of real Holiness.—All which, being partly defective, and partly polluted, must be sprinkled with the Blood of *JESUS*, and made acceptable by his dying Oblation.

Ther.

* This, I think, is the best Platform for an *evangelical* Catechism. The *Ruin* of Man, occasioned by Sin—His *Recovery*, effected by *CHRIST*—His *Gratitude*, to be expressed by way of Obedience.—This Plan is carried into Execution by the *Palatinate* Divines. Who have formed upon it, a Summary of catechetical Instruction: than which I have met with nothing of the Kind, more clear and satisfactory; more edifying and animating; more exactly consonant to the benign Spirit of the Gospel, or better calculated to make Mankind both holy and happy.—This Piece the Reader may see, together with a judicious, and very valuable Exposition of it, in the *Latin Works* of *Henricus Altingius*, 1 Vol. Quarto. Which, I believe, may be bought for a Trifle, yet at more precious than Gold.

† 1 Pet. i. 2.

Ther. Is this the *constant* Method, in which the sacred Writers represent the Gospel Salvation? Do they always observe this particular Order, in arranging its Doctrines and its Duties? Or, is it not an *insignificant* Circumstance, which goes *first*, provided We take in *both*?

Asp. To observe this Order, I am persuaded, is no insignificant Circumstance. It is of *great Consequence*, both to our Establishment and to our Growth in Grace. Is it a Matter of Indifference to the Archer, whether He send the Point, or the Feather of his Arrow foremost? Can He, in either Case, hit the Mark with equal Ease, and equal Certainty?

I believe, You will find, that the sacred Writers, in all their *evangelical* Discourses, invariably adhere to this Order. Nay; it took place even under the *legal* Dispensation.—When the LORD GOD published his Law from Mount *Sinai*; when He wrote it, with his own Finger, on Tables of Stone; how did He introduce the Precepts? How enforce their Observance?—Let Us attend to the Preamble; which is the Language of Love, and the very Spirit of the Gospel; *I am the LORD thy GOD; who brought Thee out of the Land of Egypt, out of the House of Bondage* *. “I have already delivered Thee, with a mighty Hand, “from the most fordid and insupportable Slavery. I “have promised Thee, for thy Possession, the delightful Country of *Canaan*; a goodly Heritage of the Hosts “of Nations †. Nay; I *myself* am thy Portion; a “GOD in Covenant with Thee; engaged by an inviolable Contract, and with the Exertion of all my “Attributes, to do Thee Good. *Therefore*, keep the “Statutes, the Judgments, and Ordinances, which I “am now going to establish.”—Could there be a more winning Inducement, or a more endearing Obligation, to Obedience?

I might point out the same Strain, running through the Exhortations of *Moses*, and the Songs of *David*; the Sermons of the Prophets, and the Writings of the Apostles. But this I wave, not through an Apprehension

* Ex. xx. 2.

† Jer. iii. 19.

hension of its Difficulty, only from a Fear of Prolixity.—However, You will not think me tedious, if I produce one more Instance, from the great Master of our Schools. *For We Ourselves were some time foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers Lusts and Pleasures, living in Malice and Envy, hateful and hating one another* †. Here, He sets before Us a dismal, but exact Picture, of our depraved and undone Condition.—Then He presents Us with a delightful View of our Redemption, both in its gracious Cause, and precious Effects. *But, after that the Kindness and Love of GOD our SAVIOUR toward Man appeared; not by Works of Righteousness, which We have done, but according to his Mercy, He saved Us, by the Washing of Regeneration, and Renewing of the HOLY GHOST; which He hath shed on Us abundantly, through JESUS CHRIST our SAVIOUR; that being justified by his Grace, We should be made Heirs according to the Hope of eternal Life.*—Having thus provided for our Happiness; He then promotes our Holiness. *This is a faithful Saying, and these Things I will that Thou affirm constantly, that they who have believed in GOD, might be careful to maintain good Works: these Things are good and profitable unto Men.*

I make no Comment * upon the Passage: because I hope, You will commit it, as a noble Depositum, to

† Tit. iii. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.

* Perhaps, the Reader will give me Leave, though *Aspasio* has declined the Office, to add a short *expository Stricture*, upon the most distinguished Parts of this very important Paragraph.—I. We have the Cause of our Redemption; *not Works of Righteousness, which We have done*; but the Kindness, the Love, the Mercy of GOD our SAVIOUR.—II. The Effects; which are, 1. *Justification*; *being justified*, having our Sins forgiven, and CHRIST'S Righteousness imputed: and this, without any the least deserving Quality in Us: solely by his Grace, and most unmerited Goodness.—2. *Sanctification*; expressed by *The washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the HOLY GHOST*. Whose Influences purify the Soul, as the Washing of Water cleanses the Body; and introduce an Improvement, into all the Faculties of the Mind, as eminent and glorious, as the Return of Spring diffuses, over the whole Face of reviving Nature.—III. The End and Consummation of all: that We should be made Heirs of the heavenly Kingdom; and live, now in the assured Hope, hereafter in the full Enjoyment, of eternal Life.

234 DIALOGUE VII.

to your Memory. Your own diligent Meditation, accompanied with humble Prayer, will furnish out the best Exposition.—Only I would just remark, that the Apostle, always consistent, always uniform, marshals his Thoughts with his usual Exactness. Good Works are not *disbanded*; nor yet suffered to lead the *Van*; but made to bring up the *Rear**.—When He mentions these Fruits of the SPIRIT, He mentions them, not slightly, as Matters of small Moment; but earnestly, as Affairs of great Importance. It is his Desire and his Charge, that all Believers should *be careful*†; have their Hearts upon the Business; should use their best Contrivance, and exert their utmost Endeavours—not barely to practice, but to *maintain*‡; to be exemplary, distinguished, and pre-eminent in the Exercise of every Virtue.—Because, this Virtue, and those Works, though not the Ground of a Reconciliation with GOD, are *amiable* in the Eyes of all, and *honourable* || to the *christian* Profession. They are also a necessary Ingredient in *personal* Happiness, and the apparent Means of *social* Usefulness §.

Ther.

* The same Order is observed by St. *John*. *Blessed are the Dead which die in the LORD; for they rest from their Labours, and their Works do follow them.* Not *go before*, to open the everlasting Doors, and give them Admittance into the Mansions of Joy. But they *follow* them, when admitted. As the Robe, which, on a King's Coronation-Day, flows from his Shoulders, cannot but accompany Him, wheresoever He goes.—It may be pertinent, on the Mention of this Illustration, just to hint; That as it is not the *Robe* of State which *makes* the King; so neither is it the *Practice* of Holiness which *makes* the Christian. An Union with *CHRIST*, an Interest in his Merits, and the in-dwelling Presence of his SPIRIT; *these*, and nothing short of these, constitute the true Christian. Yet, as the royal Robe is an Attendant on Majesty, and distinguishes the Monarch; so, practical Godliness is inseparable from Faith, and adorns the Believer.

† *Φροντισωσι*. This is somewhat like that emphatical Expression, which so often occurs in the Old Testament, *תשמרו לעשות* *Ye shall observe to do*: Ye shall be very diligent to fulfil; Ye shall be very *exact* in performing.

‡ *Προϊσασθαι*.

|| *Καλα*.

§ *Ωφελιμα*.

DIALOGUE VII. 235

Ther. This View of the evangelical Plan is, I confess, new to me; and particularly your Ordonnance of the Epistle to the *Romans*.

Asp. If this be *new*, perhaps, what I am going to advance, may be *strange*.—We have been talking about Acceptance with God; and debating, whether our own good Works, are the Cause of this inestimable Blessing. What will You say, if We can perform *no* good Work, *till* We are interested in *CHRIST*, and accepted by *GOD*?

Ther. Say!—That this is razing Foundations.

Asp. It is razing the *wrong*, the Foundation falsely so called. Which will certainly deceive as Many, as make it their Trust.—And is it not *prudent*, when We are building for Eternity, carefully to examine the Ground? Is it not *friendly*, to divert a Man from the treacherous Sand, and lead Him to the unshaken Rock?—For this Cause I said it once, and for this Cause I say it again, That We can perform no good Work, *till* We are interested in *CHRIST*, and accepted of *GOD*.

Ther. Produce your Reasons, *Aspasio*. And strong Reasons they must be, which are forcible enough to support such an Opinion.

Asp. The Case seems to speak for itself. How *can* a Man that is evil, do Works that are good? Would You expect to *gather Grapes of Thorns, or Figs of Thistles*?—But let Us hear, what our *unerring TEACHER* says: *As the Branch cannot bear Fruit of itself, except it abide in the Vine; no more can Ye, except Ye abide in me* ||. Nothing can be more express and full to our Purpose. But that which follows, is far more awful, and alarming to our Consciences. *If a Man abide not in Me, He is cast forth as a Branch, and is withered; and Men gather them, and cast them into the Fire, and they are burned* †.—From which it appears, that the human Heart is never actuated by *good Tempers*; that the human Life can never be productive of *good Works*; until a Man is ingrafted into *CHRIST*. No more than a Branch can bear valuable

|| John xv. 4.

† John xv. 6.

236 D I A L O G U E VII.

ble Fruit, while it continues in a State of Separation from the Tree*.—It appears also, that Persons alienated from *CHRIST*, are, and all their Performances too, like *broken, withered, rotten* Boughs: fit for nothing, but to be committed to the Flames, and consumed from the Earth. Both they and their Services, far from being meritorious, are in the Estimate of Heaven, worthless and despicably mean.

Ther. What! Are all the noble Deeds, performed by the Advocates for Morality, and Lovers of Virtue, worthless in themselves, and despicable before the SUPREME BEING? Worthless and despicable (grating Words!) *only* because they are not attended with the Peculiarities of your Faith? Can the want of this *little* Circumstance, change their Nature, and turn their Gold into Dross?

Asp. My dear *Theron*, call not the Circumstances little. It is sufficient, were your Works more precious than Gold, to debase them into Tin, into Lead, into Dross.—When the poor Shepherd brought You, yesterday Morning, a Present of some Wood-Strawberries; bringing them, as an humble Expression of his *Gratitude*, they were kindly received. But, if He had offered them, as a *Price* for your House, or as the *Purchase* of your Estate; how should You have regarded them, in such a Connection? No Words can express the Disdain, You would have conceived.—When *Bar-nabas* presented a Sum of Money to the Apostles, for the Supply of their own Necessities, and the Relief of indigent Believers†; it was welcome to them, and pleasing to their GOD. But, when *Simon* the Sorcerer, offered his Gold to *Peter* and *John*; offering it, not from a Principle of Faith, but as an Equivalent for

* This discovers an Error, which is often committed, in our Attempts to instruct little Children. What is more common, than to tell them? “If they will be good, GOD Almighty will love and bless them.”—Whereas, they should rather be informed, “That they are Sinners: but, that GOD Almighty has given his SON to die for Sinners: and, if they pray to Him, He will forgive their Sins; will make them holy; make them happy; and bless them with all spiritual Blessings in *CHRIST*.”

† Acts iv. 37.

for th
Thar
Heav
I l
Only
are g
If I a
it is,
“ T
only
them
Sour
their
them
caref
be k
Heav
Char
Exist
But i
made
that
I l
You
T
A
XIII
“ C
“ pl
“ or
CH
We
Obe
Perf
how

†
Apost
a tru
scienc

DIALOGUE VII. 237

for the HOLY SPIRIT; not in order to testify his Thankfulness, but rather to play the Huckster with Heaven; it was rejected with the utmost Indignation*.

I leave my Friend to apply the preceding Instances. Only let me beg of Him to believe; that, if my Words are *grating*, they are *extorted* by the Force of Truth. If I am obliged, in any measure, to blame your Works; it is, as a great Critic blames Eloquence, "with the *Tenderness of a Lover*."—But my Censure falls only on their *faulty Origin*, and *unbecoming Aim*. Let them spring from the Grace of *CHRIST*, as their Source; let them propose the Glory of *CHRIST*, as their End; then, instead of putting a Slight upon them, or giving them a Bill of Divorce, I would court, caress, and wed them.—Whereas, if neither *this* End be kept in the View, nor *that* Principle operate in the Heart; I must persist, in putting a *Query* upon their Character; nay, in denying the very *Possibility* of their Existence. There may be a *Mimickry* of holy Actions. But it is Mimickry only; as empty, as the Combs † made by those Wasps; and no better, than a Flame that is painted.

I have an Authority for this Doctrine, which I think, You will not offer to controvert.

Ther. What Authority?

Asp. That of our Church. Who declares, in her XIIIth Article; "Works done before the Grace of *CHRIST*, and Inspiration of his SPIRIT, are not pleasing to GOD; forasmuch as they spring not out of Faith in *CHRIST*."—Faith in *JESUS CHRIST*, purifies the Heart. Till this be done, We have neither Disposition nor Capacity for holy Obedience. Nay, without Faith in *CHRIST*, our Persons are abominable †; our State is damnable; and how can any of our Works be acceptable?

Such

* Acts viii. 20.

† *Faciunt & Vespæ Favos.*

‡ *To the Defiled and Unbelieving is nothing clean.* Tit i. 15. The Apostle joins *Defiled* and *Unbelieving*: to intimate, that without a true Belief nothing is clean. The Understanding and the Conscience are polluted. Both the Man and his Doings are impure.

238 DIALOGUE VII.

Such a One, You say, is honest in his Dealings, temperate in his Enjoyments, charitable to the Poor. I allow it all. But, unless these seeming Virtues are referred to the *Glory* of the Supreme JEHOVAH; unless they flow from *Faith* in the crucified JESUS; they may be Acts of worldly Policy, of selfish Prudence, or *Pharasaical* Pride. They are by no means a pleasing Oblation to the LORD Almighty*.—Nay; instead of being Acts of Duty, and Objects of Approbation, they stand condemned in the Scripture, and are Breaches of the Commandment. They stand condemned in that Scripture, which declares; *Without Faith it is impossible to please GOD*†. They are Breaches of that Commandment, which requires; *Whether Ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever Ye do, do all to the Glory of GOD*‡.

Upon the whole; if We will submit to the Determination of our established Church, or acquiesce in the Decision of our divine MASTER; We must acknowledge, that there is no such Thing as a good Work, till We are reconciled to GOD, and our Persons accepted in his Sight.—Therefore, to represent our own Works, as the Means of Reconciliation and Acceptance, is both chimerical and absurd. *Chimerical*, because it builds upon a Phantom, and takes for a Reality what has no Existence. *Absurd*, because it inverts the natural

* Might not this Observation be made, with great Propriety, in our *infirmary* and other *charitable* Sermons? Should not the Audience be exhorted to abound in Acts of Benevolence, from a *grateful* Regard to the infinitely merciful and condescending JESUS? 2 Cor. viii. 9.—Should they not, before all Things, be directed to *make sure* their Interest in the REDEEMER's Merits? That their Persons may find Favour, and their Aims Acceptance, Eph. i. 6.—Should they not be admonished, that without this *believing* Application to CHRIST, whatever they do, whatever they give, is worthless in the Eye of their MAKER, and will be fruitless to their own Souls? Heb. xi. 6.—In this Respect our SAVIOUR was eminently typified by the *Jewish* Altar. On which *every* Sacrifice, by whomsoever brought, was to be offered. And separate from which *no* Sacrifice, however costly, could be accepted. Exod. xx. 24.

† Heb. xi. 6.

‡ 1 Cor. x. 31.

natural
antece

Then
ask my
all tho
ligion,
lency i
is urg
Bible.

Asp
which
fore m
Love*
lest th
alone

I w
tuate
whatf
break
pierce
Chur
her B
with
the E
Film
them

Be
by yo
of yo
tion,

*
finely
only
are th
done
these
River
fair P
sacred
rent
the B

†

natural Order of Things, and would make the Effect antecedent to the Cause.

Ther. Before we quit this agreeable Retreat, let me ask my *Aspassio* ; What He *propoves*, by running down all those Works, which are the Produce of inward Religion, and essential to true Holiness. Whose Excellency is displayed in the *clearest*, and whose Necessity is urged in the *strongest* Terms, throughout the whole Bible.

Asp. I am far from running down those Works, which are the Produce of inward Religion ; and therefore may be justly stiled, *Works of Faith, and Labours of Love* *.—But I would caution Us both to take Care, lest they be destitute of those Circumstances, which alone can render them *truly* good.

I would also persuade my *Theron*, and I would habituate myself, not to repose our *Confidence* in any Works whatsoever. Lest they prove a bruised Reed, that breaks under our Weight ; or a pointed Spear, that pierces Us to the Heart.—We shall never be like the Church, *Who comes up out of the Wilderness, leaning upon her Beloved* † ; so long as We bolster up Ourselves, with a Conceit of personal Righteousness. This was the Error, the fatal Error of the *Pharisees*. This the Film that blinded the Eyes of their Mind ; and sealed them up, under the Darkness of final Unbelief.

Besides, my dear *Theron* : If You expect to be saved by your own Duties, You will be loth to see the worst of your Condition. To see the worst of your Condition, will be a *Dagger* to your Hopes, and as *Death* to your

* *Works of Faith, and Labours of Love.* 1 Theff. i. 3. How finely are good Works characterized, in this Place ! Though it be only *en passant*, transiently, or by the by. And how judiciously are the *true* distinguished from the *Counterfeit* ! Works, that are done in Faith ; Works, that proceed from Love ; these, and these only, the Apostle signifies, are *really* good.—As some noble River, though pressing forward to the Ocean, nourishes many a fair Plant, and suckles many a sweet Flower, by the Way ; so the sacred Writers, though principally intent (as here) upon some different Point ; yet drop *incidentally* such valuable Truths, as cheer the Believer's Heart, and make glad the City of our GOD.

† Cant. viii. 5

240 DIALOGUE VII.

your Soul. You will therefore be inclined to *daub with untempered Mortar**. Instead of acknowledging the deep Depravity of your Nature, and the numberless Iniquities of your Life, You will invent a thousand Excuses, to *palliate* your Guilt. And, by this means, erect a *Wall of Partition*, between your Soul and the Merits of your REDEEMER. Which will be a greater Inconvenience, a more destructive Evil, than to cut off all Supply of Provision from an Army, or even to intercept the Sun-beams from visiting the Earth.

Ther. Now you talk of Armies, I must observe, that, though I have scarce been able to keep my Ground, in this argumentative Action, I cannot allow You the Honour of a Victory. As a *Retreat* is very different from a *Rout*.

Asp. I would also remark, that my Friend has changed the intended Plan of our Operations. Has almost continually acted upon the *Offensive*. While my Part has been only to sustain the Shock. At our next Encounter, You may expect to have the Order of Battle reversed. I shall direct my Forces to begin the Charge. Put Yourself therefore in Readiness for a *brisk Attack*.

Ther. You act the fair Enemy, *Aspasio*, I must confess; in thus giving the Alarm, before You make the Assault.

Asp. This Hostility may appear *fairer still*, when I assure You, that my Weapons aim not at the Destruction of your Comfort, or the Demolition of any valuable Intereſt. Only that they would be *mighty through GOD*, to pull down the Strong-holds of Unbelief; and bring every self-exalting, every rebellious Thought, captive unto CHRIST †. Captive, in a professed Submission to his Righteousness, as well as a dutiful Subjection to his Commands.—And, when *such* is the Tendency of the Campaign, it will be your greatest Advantage, to lose the Victory. It will be better than a Triumph, to acknowledge Yourself vanquished.

DIA-

* Ezek. xiii. 10.

† 2 Cor. x. 4, 5, 6.



D I A L O G U E VIII.

T H E R O N.

OUR last Conversation ended with a *Challenge*. To decline or delay the Acceptance of it, would look like Cowardice in me, and be a Piece of Injustice to You, *Aspasio*. Therefore, I am now ready to give You all the Satisfaction, which a Gentleman can demand.—Only as the Weather continues hazy, I believe, my *Study* must be the Place of Action.

Asp. A Challenge! *Theron*—

Ther. What, Sir! Do you boggle? Would You eat your Words, and play the *Poltroon*?

Asp. Perhaps I may have an Inclination to follow the Example of a *Brother Hero*; who ran away from the Field of Battle, just as his Comrades were advancing to charge the Enemy. And when called to an Account for his Behaviour, right worthily alledged; That his Retreat proceeded, not from any Timidity of Mind; no, but from a Concern for the public Good. For, quoth He, *if I had been knocked on the Head to-day, how should I have been able to fight for my Country tomorrow* *.

You smile, *Theron*, at my doughty Warrior, and his sage Maxim.—But, since You have glanced at a certain *modish* Custom, give me Leave very seriously to assure You; That, if the Affair was to be determined by Sword and Pistol, I should reckon such a Conduct, a *resolute* Refusal at least, not at all unmanly, but the

* Something like this even the grave *Demosthenes* alledged, in Vindication of his own Conduct; *Αντὶς ὁ φευγὼν καὶ πάλιν μάχησεται.* *The Man that runs away, may have it in his Power to fight again.*

242 D I A L O G U E VIII.

truly wise and gallant Behaviour.—For surely, it can never be an Instance of Wisdom, to hazard my Life, at the mere Caprice of a turbulent Ruffian; who is a Stranger to all the Principles of Humanity and Generosity, but a Slave, an abandoned Slave, to his own ungovernable Passions.—Surely, it can never be an Act of real Bravery, to expose *my* Person; because some fool-hardy Practitioner in the Fencing-school, is desperate enough to risk *his*.—The Gentleman, the true Gentleman, should exert a becoming Dignity of Spirit; and scorn to set his Welfare on a Level, with that of an inconsiderate and barbarous Bully*.

Ther. But Honour, my *Aspasio*, Honour is at stake. Better to lose our Life, than forfeit our Reputation. Better to be in a Grave, than to be the Jest of every Coffee-House; and perhaps pointed at, as We pass the Streets, for mean-spirited, sneaking, or as the Gentlemen of the Sword so *elegantly* speak, *white-livered* Animals.

Asp. Lose our Reputation, *Theron*! Amongst whom, I beseech You?—A few rash and precipate Creatures: The Pupils of *La Mancha's* Knight: The Sons of *Chimera*† and Cruelty. Whose Applause is Infamy; and their Detraction the highest Praise they can bestow.—From every judicious and worthy Person, your Conduct will be sure to gain Approbation, and your Character Esteem. When *Cæsar* received a Challenge from *Anthony*, to engage Him in single Combat, He very calmly answered the Bearer of the Message; *If*
Anthony

* *Aspasio* calls the Person who gives the Challenge, a *Bully*. And such, notwithstanding all the Maxims of *fantastical* and *false* Honour, He will certainly be found, when tried at the Bar of Reason or Justice. For, if the most impetuous, irrational, and brutal Barbarity is allowed to constitute a Bully, He has an indisputable Title to the Character; who, on Account of a mere Punctilio, or some slight Affront, would destroy a Life, that might be of Service to Society.—might be a Blessing to various *Relatives*—and is intimately connected with a blissful or miserable *Immortality*.

† This Kind of Gentry are stiled—in a BOOK, with which they have little or no Acquaintance; but whose Maxims will be had in Reverence, when their Names are lost in Oblivion—בְּנֵי שָׁוְיוֹן
The Sons of Bluster, or The Children of Noise. Jerem. xlviii. 45.

DIALOGUE VIII. 243

Anthony is weary of Life, tell Him, there are other Ways to Death, besides the Point of my Sword.—Who ever deemed this, an Instance of Cowardice! All Ages have admired it, as the Act of a discreet and gallant Man; who was sensible of his own Importance, and knew how to treat the petulant and revengeful Humour of a discontented Adversary with its deserved Contempt.

Barely to lose our Life, is the *smallest* of those Evils, which attend this mischievous Practice.—It is pregnant with a long, and almost *endless* Train of disastrous Consequences to Parents, Wives, Children, Friends, Associates, and the Community.—It is an *infallible* Expedient, to be deprived of the Favour of the infinite GOD, and to be excluded from the Joys of his eternal Kingdom.—It is the *sure* Way, to become an Object of Abhorrence to the Angels of Light; and be made the Laughing-stock of Devils, in their Dungeons of Darkness *. *Shame*, everlasting Shame, shall be the Reward of such Gallantry, the Promotion of such Fools †.

Ther. With regard to this Point, I am intirely of your Opinion, *Aspasio*; however I may differ in other Particulars.

Asp. Say You so, *Theron*! Would You then tamely submit to affronts, Insults, and Injuries?

Ther. As to the trifling Affronts of a peevish incontinent Tongue, I would treat *them* with a superior Scorn. And when thus treated, they are sure to recoil,

* “Let me tell you with Confidence,” (says an excellent Person, addressing Himself to one of these unhappy *Desperado’s*) “that all “Duels, or single Combats, are murderous; blanch them over “(how You list) with Names of Honour, and honest Pretences, “their Use is sinful, and their Nature devilish.” See the select Works of Bishop Hall, in one Volume Fol. p. 526. Where the Reader will find a happy Mixture of true *Oratory*, and sound *Divinity*; a rich Vein of *Fancy*, and a sweet Spirit of *Piety*; Contemplations upon the Histories of Scripture (which, I think, are our Prelate’s Master piece) as *entertaining* and *instructive*, as the Subjects illustrated are important and wonderful —Notwithstanding a few stiff or antique Phrases, I cannot but esteem the Works of this Author, among the most valuable Compositions extant in our Language.

† Prov. iii. 35.

244 D I A L O G U E VIII.

with the keenest Edge, and severest Weight, upon the *impotent* Malice that offers them. The Wretch should see, that I could pity his Misery, and smile at his Folly.—But as to *Injuries*, the Case is otherwise. Should any one offer Violence to my Person, 'tis at his Peril. He would find, and perhaps to his Smart,

*Et Nos tela Manu, Ferrumque haud debile Dextrâ
Spargimus, et nostro sequitur de Vulnere Sanguis *.*

Here, the fundamental and everlasting Law of *Self-preservation* calls upon Us to play the Man. And I am sure, *Christianity* does not require Us, to yield our Throats to the Knife, or open our Breasts to the Dagger.

But to retire—to deliberate—to sit down—and indite a *formal* Challenge—seems to me altogether as *savage* and *iniquitous*, as to assault on the Highway.—He that demands my Money on the Road, or extorts it by an incendiary Letter, or decoys me into the Snare by a forged and counterfeit Note; is stigmatized for a Villain; is abhorred by every Person of Integrity; and, when detected, is rewarded with a Halter. Why should We reckon the headstrong Bravo *less injurious*? Who makes his Attempt upon my very Life; and thirsts with insatiable Fury, for my Blood?

Asp. He allows You a fair *Chance*; it is said.

Ther. A Chance! Of what!—Either of falling a Sacrifice to his Rage, or of imbruing my Hands in his Blood. Which is neither more nor less, than reducing me to a *Necessity*, of launching into Damnation myself, or of transmitting a Fellow-creature to eternal Vengeance.—And is *this* an Extenuation? *This* a mitigating Circumstance? It really proves the Practice so inexcusably wicked, that nothing can be pleaded in its Defence. The very Argument, used to *justify* the horrid Deed, *inflames* and *aggravates* its Malignity.

'Tis Pity, but the *legislative* Authority would interpose, for the Suppression of such a flagrant Wrong to Society, and such a notorious Violation of our benign Religion. Why should not the Laws declare it

Felony,

Felony, to make the first Overture for a Duel? Since it is always more heinous, and frequently more pernicious. Is always Murder in the *Intention*, and frequently issues in *double* Destruction: the One, inflicted by the Stab of Violence; the Other, executed by the Sword of Justice.

Might it not, at least, be branded with some Mark of *public Infamy*, or subjected to a severe *pecuniary Mulct*? So that a Gentleman of Spirit and Temper might have it in his Power, to return the Compliment of a challenging Letter with some such Answer;

S I R,

“ However meanly You may think of your Life, I
“ set too high a Value upon mine to expose it as a Mark
“ for *undisciplined* and *outrageous* Passions.—Neither
“ have I so totally renounced all that is humane, benevolent, or amiable, as to draw my Sword for your
“ Destruction, because You have first been overcome
“ by *precipitate* and *unreasonable* Resentment.—You
“ have given me an Opportunity of acting the *Gentleman* and the *Christian*. And this Challenge I accept,
“ as a Note under your Hand for five hundred Pounds*;
“ which will very soon be demanded, according to
“ Law, by

S I R, Your, &c.

Asp. But to resume the proper Subject—the Nature of *our* Engagement. Which I now recollect, and which

* Might not the Refuser of a Challenge be dignified with some honorary Distinction, resembling the *Civic Crown* amongst the antient *Romans*? Since, by his *cool* and *temperate* Bravery, He saves one Life from the Sword, another from the Halter.—Was some honorary Distinction, on the one hand, united to a pecuniary Forfeiture on the other, I cannot but think, they would prove an effectual Method to *check* the *Progress* of this destructive Evil. It would break the Teeth of Malice with her own Weapons, and turn the Artillery of Revenge upon Herself. Those detestable Passions would be loth to indulge themselves in this horrid Manner, if it was made the sure Way to *ennoble* and *enrich* the Object of their Rage.—*N. B.* The *Civic Crown* was an Ornament assigned to those Soldiers, who had in Battle rescued a Fellow-citizen from impending Death.

246 D I A L O G U E VIII.

was explained, when I ventured to give, what You call *The Challenge*.—As it is not my *Theron*, but the Obstacles of his Faith, and the Enemies of his Felicity, that I am to encounter, perhaps I shall have Courage to stand my Ground. And, instead of *violating* all the Obligations of Equity, Honour, and Conscience, I shall certainly *evidence* my Love to my Friend; may possibly promote his truest Good.

Ther. I don't see how this can be effected by your late Attempt. You undertook to *run down* all Works of Righteousness, as absolutely unable to find Acceptance with GOD, and equally insufficient to recommend Us to his Favour.—It is for the Credit of these, which *Aspasio* has depreciated, that I enter the Lists.

Asp. Pray, what is the *Standard* to which these Works of Righteousness must be conformed; and by which their Sufficiency may be determined?

Ther. The *moral Law*, doubtless: I know no other Standard of Righteousness, nor any other Way of becoming righteous.

Asp. Agreed, *Theron*. We will join Issue on *this Footing*; and try the Merits of our Cause before *this Tribunal*. Yourself shall be the Judge. I will only ask your Opinion, and refer myself to your Decision.—You see, I am soon weary of the military Stile. I had intruded myself on a Part, which I was not qualified to act; and now resume a more becoming *Character*.

Ther. If You place me on the *Bench*, I shall allow of no such Digressions; but shall keep You close to the Subject.

Asp. Has your *Lordship* then considered the Nature of the divine Law, and the Extent of its Obligations?

Ther. It obliges *all* Persons, and comprizes the *Whole* Duty of Man. It forbids all Immorality, and enjoins every Virtue.—Are not these your Sentiments?

Asp. They are, when somewhat enlarged.—The Empire of the Law, as *prohibitory* of *Evil*, extends both to the outward and inward Man. It takes Cognizance of the Actions. It judges every Word. All the Operations, and all the Dispositions of the Soul, come under its sacred Jurisdiction.—It is indeed a Discerner,

Discerner, not only of the working Thoughts, but also of the dawning Intentions; and arraigns them both at its awful Bar. *It pierces even to the dividing asunder of the Soul and Spirit**. Not the inmost Recesses of the Breast, are too deep for its Penetration; nor all the Artifices of the deceitful Heart, too subtle for its Detection.—*Other* Laws forbid the unclean Act; *this* condemns the wanton Eye, and irregular Desire. *Other* Laws punish the injurious Deed; *this* passes Sentence on the unguarded Sallies of Passion, and the most secret Emotions of Resentment. So eminently true is that Remark of the *Psalmist*, *Thy Commandments are exceeding broad* §!—Tell me now, *Theron*, has your Obedience been commensurate to this extensive Platform of Duty?

Ther. If the Law be so *very extensive*—

Asp. Nay, my Friend, You cannot suspect, that I have stretched, to an undue Extent, the Obligations of the divine Law. Since this Interpretation is established by an Authority, *too great* to be controverted; *too clear* to be misunderstood; even by the Authority of *CHRIST* Himself. Whose Sermon upon the Mount is a professed Exposition of the Commandments, and maintains, in the most explicit Manner, all that I have advanced.—So that, if our *LORD's* Exposition is just, I think, it will be neither rash, nor uncharitable to say, There is not a Man upon Earth, but has *broke* them *all*.

Ther. Are We all Idolaters then? All Adulterers? All Murderers? Shocking to imagine!

Asp. It is shocking, I confess.—But how much more so, if *such Delinquents* expect Justification by their own Deeds?

Ther. This is no Proof of your Assertion, my good Friend.

Asp. To be fond of Gold; to be enamoured with the World; to love any Creature more than the ever blessed *CREATOR*; are Instances of *Idolatry*, not quite so gross, but altogether as real, as to set up Idols in our Temples, or pay Acts of Adoration to senseless

M 4

Images.

* Heb. iv. 12.

§ Psal. cxix. 961

Images. Have You always been free from this *Apostacy* of the *Affections*?

Our infallible TEACHER has informed Us, That unreasonable Anger, contemptuous Language, and malevolent Wishes, are each a Species of *Murder*; and not many Removes from the Assassin's deadly Stab. Have You been always meek, always benevolent, and never chargeable with this *mental Homicide*?

We are farther assured, That the Indulgence of inordinate Desire is, in the impartial Estimate of Heaven, as the Commission of the impure Deed. And evil Concupiscence of every Kind violates that sacred Precept, *Thou shalt not covet* *. Has your Will

* *Aspasio's* Observation brings to my Remembrance a remarkable Incident; which, as it is quite pertinent to our Purpose, the Reader will allow me to relate. It passed between a Friend of mine, and a certain ingenious Stranger, into whose Company he happened to fall.—The Gentleman was extolling, at an extravagant Rate, the Virtue of *Honesty*: what a Dignity it imparted to our Nature! How it recommended Us to the SUPREME BEING! He confirmed all by a celebrated Line from Mr. *Pope*,

An honest Man's the noblest Work of GOD.

Sir, replied my Friend, however excellent the Virtue of *Honesty* may be, I fear, there are very few Men in the World, that really possess it.—You surprise me! said the Stranger.—Ignorant as I am of your Character, Sir, I fancy, it would be no difficult Matter, to prove even *You* a dishonest Man.—I defy You.—Will You give me Leave then, to ask You a Question or two; and promise not to be offended?—Ask your Questions, and welcome.—Have You never met with an Opportunity of getting Gain by some *unfair Means*?—The Gentleman paused.—I don't ask, Whether You made use of, but whether You have met with, such Opportunity? I, for my Part, have; and, I believe, every Body else has.—Very probably I may.—How did You feel your Mind affected on such Occasions? Had You no secret Desire, not the least Inclination, to seize the Advantage that offered? Tell me, without any Evasion, and consistently with the Character You admire; Had You no secret Inclination to make use of such Opportunity?—I must acknowledge, I have not always been absolutely free from every irregular Inclination, but—Hold, Sir; none of your Salvo's. You have confessed enough. If You had the Desire, though You never proceeded to the Action, this shews You was dishonest in Heart. This is what the Scripture calls *Concupiscence*. It defiles the Soul. It is a Breach of that Law, which requires *Truth in the inner Parts*. And unless You are pardoned through the Blood of *CHRIST*, will be a just Ground of your Condemnation, *when GOD shall judge the Secrets of Men*.

Will be invariably upright, and warped with no irregular Inclination? Are You wholly unpolluted with this *Adultery* of the Heart?

I wait not for a Reply. I have often heard You *plead Guilty* to all—yes, to all and every of these Charges respectively.

Ther. Where, and when, *Aspasio*?

Asp. In the most sacred Place, and on the most solemn Occasion. And not You only, but a whole Multitude of self-condemned Criminals.—Our Church, You know, has ingrafted the Decalogue into her public Service; and taught all her Members to answer, after the Repetition of each Commandment; *LORD, have Mercy upon Us, and incline our Hearts to keep this Law.* Is not this an Acknowledgment of Disobedience in every Particular? Is not such the *Meaning* of our Response?—"We are verily guilty concerning this Thing. And we humbly implore, both pardoning Mercy for the past, and strengthening Grace for the future."

Give me Leave to urge my Question a little farther.—Is there a *single Day*, in which you have not transgressed, some way or other, this sacred Rule?

Ther. If the Law of GOD will dispense with no Deviation, not even in the first Starts of Thought, or the least Wanderings of Desire.—But surely to affirm this, is to extend the Law beyond all reasonable Bounds. The Motions of evil Desire, *if indulged*, are undoubtedly criminal. But are they also, *when immediately restrained*, Breaches of Duty? I should rather imagine, that such Temptations are thrown in our Way, for the Trial of our Obedience: which, had they no Power over our Affections, *would not* be Trials; and, when they are resolutely withstood, *cannot* be Faults.

Asp. What was the Judgment of our Reformers? And what is the Voice of our Church? We may find both in the Ninth Article. "Although there is no Condemnation for them that believe and are baptised, yet the Apostle doth confess, that Concupiscence and Lust hath of itself the Nature of Sin."

250 D I A L O G U E VIII.

It is not said, Concupiscence hath *then only* the Nature of Sin, when it is ripened into Action; but *of itself*, and before it breaks out into the Commission of Iniquity.

Ther. This I can truly plead in my own Behalf; That it has not been *customary* with me to offend; at least, not *presumptuously*, or of deliberate Wickedness.

Asp. My dear *Theron*, do not offer to *palliate* your Guilt. Such an Opiate may stupify, but will not cure: or rather, like Opiates ill prepared, it will intoxicate the Mind, and counteract the Operation of every healing Medicine. Besides, it is not only pernicious, but false and unreasonable. You know the Use of that *solar Microscope*, and are able to inform me of its Effects.

Ther. I ought to be pretty well acquainted with these Experiments; since it has long been my favourite Diversion, to employ a few *spare Hours* in such agreeable Speculations.

Asp. You have seen the Body of an Insect, accommodated to the surprising Instrument. When, in this Situation, the Animal was pricked by a very fine Needle; your Eye, your naked Eye, just perceived the *Puncture*; and discovered, perhaps, a *Speck* of Moisture oozing from the Orifice. But, in what Manner were they represented by the magnifying Instrument?

Ther. The *Puncture* was widened into a frightful *Gash*. The *Speck* of Moisture swelled into a copious *Stream*; and flowed, like a *Torrent*, from the gaping Wound. An Ox, under the sacrificing Knife, scarce looks more bulky, or bleeds more largely.

Asp. Don't You apprehend my Design?—If *We*, short-sighted Mortals, and almost blinded with Self-love; if *We* cannot but be sensible of our Faults; how flagrant must they appear, in what *enormous* Magnitudes, and with what *aggravating* Circumstances, to an Eye perfectly pure, and infinitely penetrating?

Instead of attempting to extenuate our Offences, let Us make some such improving Reflections.—“ If this
“ holy Law, which prohibits the minutest Failure,
“ form the *Inditement*; if this all-discerning GOD,
“ who

DIALOGUE VIII. 251

“ who sifts our Conduct even to the smallest Defect,
 “ be the *Judge*; if our personal Goodness, which
 “ abounds with Imperfections, be our *Plea*; what can
 “ We expect, at that decisive Hour, when GOD shall
 “ lay Judgment to the Line, and Righteousness to the
 “ Plummets*?—Surely, this Consideration should in-
 “ cline Us, to adopt the wise and ardent Wish of the
 “ Apostle; *That We may now, in this our Day, win*
 “ *CHRIST*; and, at the last tremendous Audit, be
 “ found in Him; not having our own Righteousness, which
 “ is of the Law, for the Foundation of our Hopes, but
 “ the Righteousness which is of GOD, by Faith in JE-
 “ SUS CHRIST†.”

Consider the Law in its nobler Capacity, as *injoin-
 ing* whatever is *excellent*.—Can You hope, *Theron*, to
 be justified by it, if You fall short of its Demands, not
 barely in a few Instances, but in every Action of your
 Life, and every Temper of your Heart?

Ther. Such a Hope, cherished amidst such Circum-
 stances, would be fallacious and absurd.—But I trust,
 I am not so very faulty, or rather so intirely abandoned,
 as your Interrogatory supposes.

Asp. Have You duly weighed the *Perfection* and *Spi-
 rituality* of the divine Law?—It is a Transcript of the
 unspotted Purity, and absolute Rectitude of the divine
 Nature. It requires an *unreserved* Obedience to all
 GOD’s Commands, and a most *unfeigned* Submission
 to all his Dispensations; without regretting the for-
 mer, as a grievous Yoke; or repining at the latter, as
 rigorous Treatment.—It calls, not only for external
 Duty, but also for the most upright Imaginations, and
 devout Affections.—It insists upon the Exercise of
 every Virtue, and that in the *highest* Degree. Love,
 without the least Lukewarmness; and Faith, without
 any Diffidence; a Sanctity of Desire, that knows no
 Stain; and an Humility of Mind, that is free from all
 Elatement.—In a Word; it requires Us to be perfect,
 even as our FATHER which is in Heaven is perfect||.

Do any of your Actions come up to this exalted
 Standard? Are any of your Graces thus refined?

Ther.

* Isai. xxviii. 17.

† Phil. iii. 8, 9, 11.

|| Matt. v. 48.

252 D I A L O G U E VIII.

Ther. Am I then absolutely *an Insolvent* before the great LORD of the Universe? Have I no Lamb in my Fold without a Blemish? Nothing in my Life, nothing in my Heart, but what is defective and defiled?

Asp. Indeed, my Friend, this is not *your* Condition alone, but the Condition of the most irreproachable Person on Earth. There is None perfect, in any Character, or in any Work, no not One. None that obeys the divine Law, uniformly, invariably, and completely.

Cast your Eye upon the *Names*, which are subjoined to those beautiful *Prints*. How elegant is the Engraving! How accurate are the Letters! The Strokes most delicately fine! their Shape most exactly true!—Let me ask You to transcribe them with your Pen; and make the Copy equal to the Original. Preserve all the noble Boldness of the *Roman* Stamp, and all the graceful Softness of the *Italian* Touch.—What? Could You not execute this Task, even in your present *unimpaired* Health, and with the Exertion of all your Skill? How shamefully then must you fall short, if your Eyes were *dim* with Age; if your Hands shook with a *paralytic* Disorder; and your Understanding was oppressed with a *lethargic* Dulness?—Such is really the Case with regard to all the Children of Men. Our Nature is depraved; our moral Abilities are enervated; and our intellectual Faculties clouded. And can We, in such a *State of Impotence*, transcribe that sacred System, which is the very Image of GOD—transcribe it into our Tempers, and render it legible in our Lives, without diminishing one Jot or Tittle of its perfect Purity?

Ther. Though I fall short, there are *Christians* of a much higher Class. *Christians*, I do not doubt, who have these Laws written on their Hearts; all whose Tempers are cast into this heavenly Mould. Nor am I myself without Hopes of making *more considerable* Advances in Holiness.

Asp. May your Hopes be quickened into vigorous Endeavours! And your Endeavours be crowned with abundant Success!—What you suppose, concerning very eminent Christians, I cannot wholly admit, neither do

I wholly

I wholly deny. They may have all their Tempers cast into the heavenly Mould: but then, they are conformed to the sacred Pattern, only in *Part*. There is a Resemblance; yet not such as that clear and steady Mirror (pointing to a fine Glass over the Chimney-piece) exhibits; but such as some *turbulent* and *muddy* Stream reflects.—If the Breasts of these eminent Christians were formed on the Model of *Drusus's* * House; I verily think, You would have a lower Opinion of their Acquisitions in Virtue.

David, whom GOD himself dignifies with the most exalted of all Characters, and styles a *Man after his own Heart* †; who, to a most inflamed Love, added a most accurate Knowledge, of the divine Testimonies; was deeply sensible of the Truth, I would inculcate. After an attentive Contemplation of the Sublimity, the Extent, the Sanctity of those heavenly Institutes, He breaks out into this humbling Exclamation; “ *Who can tell, how oft He offendeth* ‡? Was the most vigilant Conduct, or the most purified Soul, examined by this consummate Rule; *innumerable* would be found the Slips of the former, and *glaring* would be the Failures of the latter appear.

Ther. I cannot see the Reason, for *degrading* human Nature, to such an extravagant Degree; and ranking human Works amongst the *Refuse* of Things.

Asp. Do You ask the Reason of this Remonstrance? —It is to preserve Us from the mischievous Error of the *Pharisee*. Who, measuring Himself, not by the *true, sublime, and extensive* Sense of the Law, but by a false, debased, and mutilated Interpretation, became haughty in his own Conceit, and abominable in the Sight

* When *Drusus*, a noble *Roman*, was deliberating upon a Model for his new House; the Architect offered to build it in such a Taste, that no Eye should overlook any of his Rooms —*You quite mistake my Inclination*, said *Drusus*. *I am for the very reverse of your Plan. I would have my House so contrived, that every Passenger may see, whatever is transacted within.*

§ For the Propriety of this Character, and its Correspondence with the Person, I would refer the Reader to a *Note*, in *Dialogue I. p. 21.*

† Psal. xix. 12.

254 DIALOGUE VIII.

Sight of GOD.—Hear him trumpeting his own Praise; *I am no Extortioner, no Adulterer* †. This, the poor vain Creature fancied, was a sufficient Obedience, paid to the *second* Table. See him still strutting in his own imaginary Plumes ‡; *I fast twice in the Week; I give Tythes of all that I possess* §. This, He foolishly dreamt, was a due Compliance with the Demands of the *first* Table.—The young Ruler, seems to have been under the same Delusion, when He had the Assurance to declare; *All these Things*, which are prescribed by the divine Law, *have I kept from my Youth up* ||.

A more pestilent Opinion, it is scarce possible for the Mind of Man to entertain. And nothing can appear more egregiously mistaken, if we consider the *vast comprehensive* Scope of the sacred Precepts; and are convinced, that they require an *exact* Conformity, in every Particular, and every Punctilio.

Ther. Is there nothing *valuable* in Regularity of Conduct, and Integrity of Heart? Is there no *Excellency*, in our Acts of Charity, and Habits of Virtue?

Ans.

† Luke xviii. 11.

‡ This seems to give the genuine Signification of το υψηλον εν ανθρωποις, Luke xvi. 15. Not *that which is highly esteemed, εντιμον, ενδοξον*. The Proposition, taken in this Sense, is neither necessarily nor universally true. The Meekness of *Moses*, the Fortitude of *Joshua*, the Wisdom of *Solomon*, were highly esteemed among those very Men, to whom our LORD addressed his Discourse. Yet None can suppose, that the Endowments of those illustrious Personages, were an *Abomination in the Sight of GOD*.

Whereas, whatever is *high and lifted up*, haughty and conceited; every Sentiment of Self-admiration, and all the Fruits that spring from this bitter Root: these are *certainly and invariably* Objects of the divine Abhorrence.—This Interpretation, I think, is most suitable, not only to *Faet* in general, but to the *Import* of this Word in particular: See *Rom.* xi. 20. where it occurs in a similar Acceptation, μη υψηλοφρονες. *Be not high-minded.*—It seems also best to quadrate with the *Tenon* of our SAVIOUR's Reproof; *Ye are they that justify Yourselves before Men*, but all such arrogant Attempts, and every such elated Air, the most holy GOD beholds with Detestation.

§ Luke xviii. 12.

|| Matt. xix. 20.

Asp. From our *Fellow-creatures* they stand intitled to Respect, Imitation, and Gratitude. But before *infinite* Perfection, they must drop their Claim, and lie prostrate in the Dust; imploring Forgiveness, not challenging a Reward.—We all discern a Beauty and a twinkling Lustre in the Stars, when viewed under the Shades of Night. But, when the magnificent Source of Day arises, their Beauty vanishes, their Lustre is Darkness. *Such* are human Accomplishments, when compared with the perfect Law, or beheld by the piercing Eye, of the supremely glorious GOD.

Ther. Methinks, this Notion confounds the Difference of Good and Evil; and, by rendering all our Actions *blameable*, would render them all alike. This is levelling with a Witness!

Asp. It only shews, that there are Blemishes in all. Whereas, Some are Flaw and Blemish all over. Is there no Difference between the *Leopard's* Spots, and the *Æthiopian's* Soot? If I maintain, that neither of them are perfectly white, does this imply, that both are equally black?

I am only alledging, That all We perform, however *specious* it may seem, is very *far short* of our sacred Rule; and therefore cannot procure the divine Favour, or intitle us to the Kingdom of Heaven.—Nay, that if GOD should enter into Judgment with Us, on the Foot of our own Performances; He would discover such Defects, even in the choicest Instances of our Obedience, as would render them Matter of *Condemnation**, not meritorious of *Applause*.

Be pleased to observe this Penknife—What can be more exquisitely *keen*, than the Edge; or more nicely *polished*, than the Blade? But, how do they appear, when beheld thro' one of those *Microscopes*?

Ther.

* To this Assertion St. Cyril, in Concert with several other Fathers, bears a very express Testimony: ΑΥΤΟ ΗΜΩΝ ΚΑΙ ΤΟ ΟΥΔΩΣ ΠΡΑΞΕΙΝ ΔΟΚΕΙΝ, ΜΟΜΦΗΣ ΚΑΙ ΑΝΤΙΑΣ ΑΠΟΙΟΗΣΕΙΝ ΑΝ Ξ ΤΙ ΠΑΡΕΠΙΕΡΓΑΖΟΜΕΝΑ ΤΕ ΚΑΙ ΕΛΑΤΤΑΝΙΖΟΥΝΤΟ ΘΕΩ. Even those of our Actions, which seem to be performed in a right Manner, could not escape Censure and Blame, if GOD should but slightly examine, or bring them to the Test.

256 DIALOGUE VIII.

Ther. The Edge less sharp than the Woodman's Ax, or rather more *blunt* than his Iron Wedge. The Polish resembles a Mass of *coarse* Metal, rudely hammered on the Anvil.

Asp. How very delicate is the *Cambric*, that forms your Ruffles; and gives such an ornamental Air to your whole Dress! Nothing can be finer, than the Threads; or more exact, than the Texture. But what is their Appearance in a *microscopic* View?

Ther. You would take the fine Threads for *hempen Cords*; and would almost be positive, that they had been *wattled* together, by the clumsy Hands of the Hurdle Maker; rather than curiously wove, in the Artist's Loom.

Asp. That lovely Piece of *Enamel*, which makes a Part of your Lady's penfible Equipage, quite charms the Spectator, with the Justness of its Figure, and the Radiancy of its Colours. But——

Ther. Under the Scrutiny of this searching Instrument, it loses all its Elegance; and instead of winning our Admiration, provokes our Contempt. It looks like a *Heap* of Mortar, *plaistered* on by the Mason's Trowel.

Asp. You see then, *Theron*, what gross Indelicacies, what bungling Inequalities, this supplementary Aid to our Sight discovers, even in the *most finished* Works of human Art. So, and abundantly more, does the immaculate Purity of GOD, discern Imperfections in our *most upright* Deeds, and *most guarded* Hours.

I said, *immaculate Purity*——For GOD is not only unerringly wise to detect, but infinitely pure to abhor, all Contamination. Have You considered this Attribute of the Godhead, *Theron*?

Ther. I have; and not without Amazement, at the charming, the awful Descriptions, which occur in the sacred Writings.—GOD is not only holy, but, as the Lawgiver of the *Jews* very sublimely expresses Himself, *glorious in Holiness*†. The sacred Penmen, treating of this illustrious Perfection, seem to labour the important Point. They indulge the loftiest Flights of
Ima-

† Exod. xv. 11.

Imagination; they employ the boldest Figures of Speech; and add the most glowing Colours of Eloquence; not without frequent Acknowledgments, that all the *Force* of Language, is abundantly too *feeble*, for the unutterable Subject.

One of the Prophets, addressing the KING eternal, immortal, invisible, breaks out into this extatic Exclamation; O LORD, my GOD, my HOLY ONE, *Thou art of purer Eyes, than* (to allow, shall I say? This is an Ascription of Praise, unspeakably too mean for thy surpassing Excellency. *Thou art of purer Eyes, than*) *to look upon Evil, and canst not behold Iniquity* †.—Another, wrapt into a prophetic Vision, sees the *Seraphim* veiling their Faces, in Token of profound Humiliation; hears those Sons of Ardour and Love, crying one to Another; *Holy, Holy, Holy is the LORD GOD of Sabbath* *.—Nay, so transcendently holy, says another

† Hab. i. 13.

* *Isai. vi. 3.* The Poets and Writers of a bold Imagination, are particularly fond of *Matinery*; of introducing celestial Beings, in order to give some peculiar Dignity to their Plan, or some additional Strength to their Sentiments. With inimitable Propriety, and surprising Emphasis, is this Species of fine Writing used in Scripture. Especially in the Passage quoted above.

Let us only consider—The *Personages*. These are none other than the Dominions and Principalities of Heaven. Who are placed at the very Top of the Creation; who excel in Strength and Wisdom, in every high and bright Accomplishment.—Their *Attitude*. They stand before JEHOVAH, who is seated on his exalted Throne. They cover their Faces with their Wings; as overcome with the insupportable Glories, which beam from uncreated Majesty.—Their *Action*. They celebrate, not in cold Conversation, but in rapturous Songs, the amiable yet tremendous Sanctity of the LORD Almighty.—Their *Manner of Expression*. Though filled and penetrated with the prodigious Theme, they attempt not to describe it. Impracticable that, even by the Tongues of Angels! They express themselves, therefore, in the Language of profound Admiration; in repeated, in reiterated Acclamations to the wonderful Attribute; *Holy! Holy! Holy!*—The *Effects* of this august Appearance. The Posts of the Door, shake at the Voice: the ponderous and magnificent Pillars of Brass, (see 2 *Chron. iii. 17.*) tremble like a Leaf. The spacious and beautiful House, is filled with Tokens of the divine Indignation; is involved in Clouds of Smoke; and joins with the trembling Columns, and adoring Seraphs, to tell the thoughtless World, *What a fearful*

258 D I A L O G U E VIII.

another devout Worshipper, that all created Glory is totally eclipsed in his Presence. *He looketh to the Moon, and it shineth not; yea, the Stars are not pure in his Sight §. And his very Angels, those refined and exalted Intelligencies, He chargeth with Folly †.*

Asp. Very majestic Descriptions!—And pray let Us observe the Impressions, which such Beamings of the divine Effulgence made upon the Saints of old.—*Moses*, drawing near the cloudy Pavilion, the Presence-chamber of the HOLY ONE of *Israel*, says with Emotions of uncommon Dread; *I exceedingly fear and quake ‡!*—When *Job* is favoured with some peculiar Manifestations of the omnipotent GOD, see his Posture! Hear his Words! *I abhor myself, and repent in Dust and Ashes ||.* How strong is the Language! How deep the Abasement!—When *Isaiab* saw the incomprehensible JEHOVAH, sitting upon his Throne; and the Princes of Heaven, adoring at his Footstool; seized with a Pang of reverential Fear, he cried out; *Woe is me! I am undone! For I am a Man of unclean Lips ¶!*—When *Ezekiel* beheld an emblematical Representation

a fearful Thing it is to fall into the Hands of the living GOD! The Prophet himself is struck with Astonishment; is overwhelmed with Awe; and cries out, “as a Woman in her Pangs.”—Can any Thing be more invlivened, impressive, and alarming?

If I shall not trespass upon the Reader's Patience, I would beg Leave to add a Remark, concerning the Word *Sabbaoth*: which, though a *Hebrew* Expression, is retained in that excellent Hymn, intitled *Te Deum*; and which some People, I am inclined to believe, inadvertently confound with *Sabbath*.—The latter signifies the *Rest* of the seventh Day; and, in this Connection, yields a Sense, not very apposite, and comparatively mean. Whereas, the former denotes *Armies* or *Hosts*; and furnishes Us with an Image, truly grand and majestic; worthy to be admitted into the Songs of Seraphs—It celebrates GOD, as the great, universal, uncontrollable SOVEREIGN: who exercises a *supreme Dominion* over all the Orders of Being, from the loftiest Archangel that shines in Heaven, to the lowest Reptile that crawls in Dust. Who says to a Legion of Cherubs, *Go*; and they go: to a Swarm of Insects, *Come*; and they come: to any, to every Creature, *Do this*; and they do it. See *Matt.* viii. 9.

§ Job xxv. 5.
|| Job xlii. 6.

† Job iv. 18.
¶ Isai. vi. 5.

‡ Heb. xii. 21.

tation of HIM, who dwelleth in Light inaccessible : When the ANTIENT of Days, veiled under a human Shape, appeared to *Daniel*: though one was a devout Priest, and each was an eminent Prophet; yet, overwhelmed with a Mixture of Veneration and Terror, they *both fell down at his Feet as dead*†. And this, not before a *full Display*, but only before a *Glimpse* of the GODHEAD. Which, though partial and transient, was too dazzlingly bright, for an Eye of Flesh to bear.

O my Friend! my *Theron*! what Figure must *our* mean Performances, *our* low Attainments, make, before this immensely glorious GOD?—Let Us observe the Behaviour and Spirit of *Job*, a little more particularly. He is one of your favourite Examples; and indeed very deservedly. For, in Piety He had no Superior, and no Equal; *there was none like Him in the Earth*. Yet, when He has to do with the MAKER of all Things, and the JUDGE of all Men, He pours out his abashed Soul in these very remarkable Professions: *If I justify Myself, my own Mouth shall condemn me: if I say, I am perfect, it shall also prove me perverse*‡. He declares yet farther; *If I wash myself in Snow-water, and make my Hands never so clean, yet shalt Thou, O righteous and eternal GOD, plunge me in the Ditch*; manifest me, notwithstanding all this Care and Circumspection, to be a guilty and a filthy Creature; yea, so very guilty and filthy, that my *own Clothes*, were they sensible of their Pollution, *could not but abhor me*.

This He confesses, not because He was an habitual Sinner, or chargeable with any scandalous Immorality; but because his Mind was filled with the most affecting Sense, of GOD's inconceivable Holiness, and infinite Glory. For, adds the venerable Sufferer, *He is not a Man, as I am*; but a BEING of such extensive Knowledge, that nothing can escape his Discernment; of such exalted Purity, that every Spot of Defilement is loathsome in his Sight. For which Reason,

it

† Ezek. i. 28. Dan. x. 8, 9.
30. 31, 32.

‡ See Job ix. 20, 21—

260 D I A L O G U E VIII.

it is absolutely impossible, *that I should answer Him*, with reference to my own personal Righteousness: or *that We should come together in Judgment*, on any such Footing, without Confusion to myself, and Ruin to my Cause.

To all this He subjoins, what is still more memorable and exemplary: *Though I were perfect, yet would I not know my Soul, I would despise my Life.*—He supposes Himself in a higher State, than your most advanced Christian; though I were perfect. Yet, even in such a State, were it attainable, *I would not know my Soul*; not dwell upon, not plead, no, nor so much as cherish a Thought of, my own Accomplishments and Acquirements. In the important Business of Justification, they should stand for Cyphers; they should be thrown into Shades; they should intirely disappear. —Nay more; *I would despise my Life*; my Life, with all its most shining Actions, and most distinguished Virtues, should be reckoned insignificant and despicable. Just as *insignificant and despicable*, with respect to this great Transaction, as a wandering Spark would be, if appointed to diffuse Day amidst the Darkness of Night, or produce Spring amidst the Depths of Winter.

Ther. These are really alarming Hints, *Aspasio*.—A Law, which requires an *exact* and *universal* Obedience, both in Heart and Life!—A GOD of such Majesty, Purity, and Glory, that Men of the most *approved* Integrity, are overwhelmed with *Confusion*, in his Presence!—I shall consider them, at my Leisure, with the Attention they deserve. —At present, I believe, Opportunity is giving us the Slip. Yonder Coach seems to be moving this way, and the Livery looks like *Philander's*.

Aspasio, desirous to fix these Convictions—which are of the *last* Consequence to our Faith and Salvation.—desirous to fix them on his Friend's Mind, replied,

Asp. As your Visitants are at a Distance, give me Leave to observe; That the wisest of Men, attending to the *first* of these Particulars, has poured Contempt upon all human Excellency; *There is not a just*

Man

DIALOGUE VIII. 261

Man upon Earth, that doeth Good, and sinneth not *. The Apostle of *CHRIST* takes Shame to Himself, on the same Account; and teaches all Mankind, to strike the Sail of Self-conceit; *In many Things We offend all* †. —*David*, considering the latter of these Points, prays with the utmost Earnestness; *Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant, O LORD!* And assigns this humbling Reason for his Petition; *For, in thy Sight, shall no Man living be justified* ‡. This induced *Nehemiah*, who had been so nobly zealous for the Honour of his *GOD*, not to confide in his own valuable Services, but make Application to forgiving Goodness. *Spare me, O LORD, according to thy great Mercy* ||.

Had I set before You the Example of the poor *Publican*, who smote upon his Breast; durst not lift up his Eyes to Heaven; but cried from the Bottom of a polluted Heart, *GOD be merciful to me a Sinner* §! *Self-Love*, might possibly have whispered; “Surely, “I am not to be ranked with that abominable “Wretch. I stand upon some better Footing, than “such an infamous Offender.”—With regard to the Hope of eternal Life, We stand upon no better, upon no other. And when *low* as that obnoxious despised Creature, We are upon the very same Ground with the most *exalted* Saints. They all appear before the *MAJESTY* of *HEAVEN*, in the same Attitude of unfeigned Humiliation, and with the same Acknowledgments of utter Unworthiness.—For, it is a certain Truth, and admits of *no* Exception; That to justify Sinners, is not the Privilege of human Obedience, but the *sole* Prerogative of the *LORD* our *Righteousness*.

Ther. Is not the Practice of *Hezekiah* an Exception to your Rule? These, if I recollect aright, are the Words of that holy King; *I beseech Thee, O LORD, remember how I have walked before thee in Truth, and with a perfect Heart, and have done that which is good in thy Sight* ¶. You see, He puts the Issue of his Trial before

* Eccles. vii. 20.
xliiii. 2.

† Jam. iii. 2.
|| Neh. xiii. 22.

‡ Psal.
§ Luke xviii. 13.

¶ 2 Kings xx. 3.

262 DIALOGUE VIII.

before the everlasting GOD, upon his own Integrity and his own Obedience.

Asp. These are his Words, but they are not used with *this* View. He humbly represents before the great Sovereign of the World, how beneficial his former Life *had been*, and how serviceable his prolonged Life *might be*, to the best Interests of the *Israelitish* Nation. He pleads his Obedience, not in order to establish a Claim to eternal Happiness in Heaven; but only to obtain a *Reprieve* from the Grave, and a lengthening of his *Tranquillity on Earth*.—Neither is it gloried in, by way of Merit; but only urged, by way of Argument: As though He had said; “*Remember*, gracious GOD, how I have exerted my
“ royal Authority, to suppress Idolatry, to extirpate
“ Vice, and to promote thy true Religion. *Consider*,
“ how greatly thy People stand in need of such a vi-
“ gilant and zealous Governor; and to what a mis-
“ erable Condition both Church and State may be re-
“ duced, if Thou takest away thy Servant by this
“ threatened but untimely Stroke. And, for the
“ Welfare of *Israel*, for the Honour of thy Name,
“ for the Support of thy own Worship, O spare me a
“ little!”

Aspasio paused; expecting a Reply.—As *Theron* continued silent and musing, *Aspasio*, with a Smile of Benevolence, proceeded.—Come, my *Theron*; why so deep in Thought? Have You any Objection to the Evidences I have produced?—They are some of the most *dignified* Characters, and *illustrious* Personages, that could be selected from all Ages: Kings, Princes, and Patriots; Priests, Saints, and Martyrs. Should these be deemed insufficient, I can exhibit a larger and nobler Cloud of Witnesses—*larger*, for they are a great Multitude, which no Man can number, of all Nations, and Kindreds, and People, and Tongues—*nobler*, for they stand before the Throne, and before the LAMB, clothed with white Robes, and Palms in their Hands.—Ask those shining Armies, who they are, and whence they came? Their Answer is comprized in one of my *favourite* Portions of Scripture:

DIALOGUE VIII. 263

ture: one of those *delightful* Texts, from which I hope to derive Consolation even in my last Moments. For which Reason, You will allow me to repeat it, though it may have been mentioned in a former Conversation. *We are they, who came out of great Tribulation; and have washed our Robes, and made them white in the Blood of the LAMB: therefore are We before the Throne* *.

Some of them laid down their Lives for the Sake of *CHRIST*; many of them were eminent for Works of Righteousness; *all* of them were endued with real Holiness. Yet, none of these Qualifications constituted their *Passport* into the Regions of eternal Felicity. They had *washed their Robes*; had fled to the Atonement, and pleaded the Merits, of *JESUS* their SAVIOUR—Hereby they had *made them white*; this was the Cause of their Acquittance from Guilt, and their complete Justification—And *therefore*, on this Account, their Persons were accepted; they were presented without Spot before the Throne; and admitted to that Fullness of Joy, which is at GOD's Right-hand for evermore.

Ther. I have no Objection to your Witnesses. But, methinks, your Doctrine is strangely *debaasing* to human Nature.

Asp. A Sign, *Theron*, that it is agreeable to the Genius of the *Gospel*. Which is calculated, as the eloquent *Isaiah* foretold, to humble the Sinner, and exalt the SAVIOUR †; *The Loftiness of Man shall be bowed down,*

* Rev. vii. 14, 15.

† This corresponds with a very valuable Maxim, which an eminent Divine once recommended to his People, as a *Touchstone* to distinguish *evangelical* Truth.—That Doctrine, he said, which tends

To humble the Sinner;
To exalt the SAVIOUR;
To promote Holiness;

That Doctrine, which tends to accomplish *all* these Designs, You may embrace as *sound*. That which is defective in its Influence on *any one* of them, You should reject as *corrupt*.

264 DIALOGUE IX.

down, and the Haughtiness of Men shall be made low, and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that Day.*

“ Man, though naturally vain, shall be made sensible
“ of his numberless Offences ; shall see the Defects
“ that attend his highest Attainments ; shall confess
“ the Impossibility of being justified by the Deeds of
“ the Law ; and place all his Hope upon the propi-
“ tiatory Death, and meritorious Obedience, of the
“ LORD JESUS CHRIST.”



DIALOGUE IX.

THERON, impressed with the last Conversation, was very desirous to resume the Subject, and renew the important Debate. With this View, He conducted his Friend into a Retirement, commodious for the Purpose.

They enter a spacious *Lawn* ; which lay opposite to the House ; and stretched itself in the Form of an expanded Fan. The Mounds, on either Side, were dressed in Verdure ; and ran out in a slanting Direction. The whole, to an Eye placed at a Distance, bore the Resemblance of a magnificent *Vista* ; contracting, by slow Degrees, its Dimensions ; and lessening, at last, into a Point. Which, the regular and graceful Seat, with all imaginable Dignity, supplied.

Nature had sunk the Lawn into a gentle *Decline*. On whose ample Sides, were Oxen browsing, and Lambs frisking. The lusty Drovers lowed, as they passed ; and the thriving Flocks, bleated welcome Music in their Master's Ear.—Along the Midst of this verdant Slope, ran a spacious and extensive *Walk*. Which, coated with Gravel, and fenced with Pallisadoes,

* Isai. ii. 11.

does; looked like a plain Stripe of Brown, intersecting a Carpet of the brightest Green.—At the Bottom, two handsome *Canals*, copiously stocked with Fish, floated to the Breeze. Whose Waters, beheld from every Front Room in the House, had a fine Effect upon the Sight; not without a refreshing Influence on the Imagination.—At the Extremity of one stood a stately *Colonnade*. The Roof was elevated on Pillars of the *Ionic* Order; and the Area slatted with Stones, neatly ranged in the Diamond Fashion. Several Forest-chairs accommodated the Anglers with a Seat, while the bending Dome supplied them with a Shade.

Corresponding, and on the Margin of the other Canal, was erected a *Summer-house*, of a very singular Kind.—The lower Part, had an Opening towards the North. It was cool; it was gloomy; and had never seen the Sun. It carried the romantic Air of a *Grotto*, or rather the pensive Appearance of a *Hermit's Cell*.—The Outside was coarse and rugged with protuberant Stones. Partly over spread with Ivy, partly covered with Moss, it seemed to be the Work of ancient Years.—You descend, by Steps of Turf, thro' a low and narrow Door. A scanty Iron Grate, instead of a large sweeping Sash, transmits a glimmering Light; just sufficient to discover the inner Structure. Which appeared like one continued Piece of Rock-work; a Cavern, You would imagine, cut from the surrounding Quarry.—*Above*, hung an irregular Arch; with an Aspect, rather threatening, than inviting. *Below*, lay a Paving of homely Pebbles; in some Places, a little furrowed, as though it had been worn by the frequent Tread of solitary Feet. *All around*, were Rusticity and Solemnity; Solemnity, never more visibly seen, than through a Gloom.—The Furniture, of the same *grotesque* Fashion with the Apartment. A Bench hewed, You would suspect by Nature's Chizel, out of the solid Stone. A sort of Couch, composed of swelling Moss, and small fibrous Roots.—From one Corner, trickled a pure Spring: which crept, with a bubbling Moan, along the channeled Floor; till its healthy Current was collected into a Basin,

266 D I A L O G U E IX.

rudely scooped from the Ground. On the Edge of this little Receptacle, lay chained a rusty Bowl; and over it, stood an antique worm-eaten Table.—On the least obscure Part of the Wall, you discern, *dimly* discern a Parchment Scroll; inscribed with that sage, but mortifying Admonition; VANITY OF VANITIES! ALL IS VANITY!

Over this Recess, so pleasingly horrid, and adapted to solemn Musings, arose an open and airy *Belvidere*. You ascend by winding Stairs; and coming from the *uncouth* Abode below, are sweetly surpris'd with an *elegant* Hexagon.—The Ceiling lofty, and decorated with the softest, richest, almost flowing *Fretwork*. The Wainscot, in large Pannels of Oak, retained its native Auburn: so *beautifully plain*, that, like an amiable Countenance, it would have been disfigured, rather than improved, by the most costly Paint. On this were disposed, in gilded Frames, and to great Advantage, a Variety of entertaining *Landschapes*. But none surpass'd, none equalled, all were a Foil to, the noble lovely Views, which the Windows commanded.—The Chimney-piece, of white shining Marble, streaked with Veins of vivid Red. *Over it*, was carved a fine Festoon of artificial, *in it*, was ranged a choice Collection of natural Flowers.—On a Table of glossy Walnut, lay a portable *Telescope*; attended with *Thomson's Seasons*, and *Vanierii Prædium Rusticum* ||.

The whole was fitted up in the highest Taste, and furnished with every pleasurable Ornament. On purpose to harmonize with that *lavish Gaiety*, which seem'd to smile over all the Face of Nature. On purpose to correspond with that *vernal Delight*, which came

|| *Vanierii Prædium rusticum*.—A most elegant *Latin Poem*: which treats of every remarkable Peculiarity, relating to the Business of a Country Life, or the Furniture of a Country Seat.—It entertains us with a Description of the most agreeable Objects; in an easy Flow, of the *purest* Language, and most *musical* Numbers.—It is, I think, one continued Beauty. Superior to every Thing of the Kind, I have met with among the Moderns; and scarcely, if at all, unworthy the first Genius of the *Augustan* Age. *Uni Virgilio secundus, & pæne par*.

DIALOGUE IX. 267

came breathing on the Wings of every fragrant Gale. I may add, on purpose to remind the Beholder of those *immortal Mansions*, which will be decorated with Images infinitely more splendid, with Objects unspeakably more glorious: where holy Beings will spend, not a few vacant Hours in refined Amusement, but a boundless Eternity in the Consummation of Joy.—For, to a well-turned Mind, Nature is a Preceptor; and these are her *instructive* Lessons. To the pure in Heart, even Sense is edifying; and these are its *delicate* Moralities.

The redundant Waters of the Canal, rolled off in a spreading *Cascade*. Which, tumbling from many a little Precipice, soothed the Air with a Symphony of soft and gurgling Sounds. Nor ever intermitted the obliging Office,

From Morn to Noon, from Noon to dewy Eve.

But, when the fanning *Breezes* dropt their Wings; when the feathered Choir were hushed in Sleep; when not so much as a chirping Grasshopper, was heard throughout the Meads; this liquid Instrument still played its *Solo*: still pursued its busy Way, and warbled, as it flowed, melodious Murmurs.

Asp. Such, *Theron*; so uniform, uninterrupted, and invariable, should be *our* Conformity to the divine Law.—But alas! those sacred Precepts are so *exceeding broad*, that the most enlarged human Obedience, is far from being commensurate to their Extent: so *absolutely holy*, that our highest Attainments fall vastly short of their exalted Perfection.—How then can We expect Justification, from such a consummate Rule? How dare We place our Dependence, upon such imperfect Duties? Especially, before a GOD of unerring Discernment, and immaculate Purity.

Ther. Because Mankind are incapable of pleasing their MAKE R, by yielding an *absolute* and *invariable* Obedience to the moral Law; does it follow from thence, that they cannot render themselves acceptable

268 DIALOGUE IX.

to Him, by an universal Course of sincere Obedience.

Asp. I think, it follows from what has been already observed. If you desire new Arguments, they are at hand.

The Law, says the Teacher of the *Gentiles*, is the *Ministration of Condemnation* *. How can this be true, if it requires no more than a *sincere* Obedience; such as is proportioned to our infirm State? If this be sufficient to justify, and intitle Us to our CREATOR's Favour; the Law ceases to be the Ministration of Condemnation. It becomes (which is flatly contradictory to the Apostle's Doctrine) the Ministration of Righteousness.

The Law is stiled, by the same inspired Teacher, *A Schoolmaster* to bring Us to CHRIST †. How can it, upon your Supposition, be qualified for such an Office? If a sincere Obedience be the whole of its Demands, it can no longer direct us to CHRIST; it will no longer deliver Us over to a REDEEMER's Merit; but must draw and attach Us to *itself*. Teaching Us to look upon its Precepts, and our own conscientious Observance of them, as the Tenare of eternal Life.

Do you insist upon a third Proof? A third presents itself. Not so much founded on Argumentation, as deduced

* 2 Cor. iii. 7. In this Place I apprehend, the Apostle means the moral Law, and that principally. As that alone was *written and engraven on Stones*. Elsewhere, I believe, He uses the Word in a larger Sense; and intends to exclude *all* Law whatever, from bearing any Share in our Justification.

† Gal. iii. 24. Παιδαγωγός, *A Schoolmaster*: who pretends not to *finish* the Education of Youth; but directs them to, and prepares them for, higher Studies, or nobler Employ's. The Law in like manner, aims not at furnishing Us with a Title to Happiness; but *sits, disposes, and disciplines* Us, for the all sufficient REDEEMER.

Some have thought, that εἰς Χριστόν signifies, *Until the Coming of CHRIST*. But this will hardly consist with the Genius of the Language, or with the Import of the following Clause, *That we might be justified by Faith*.—Besides, this would confine the Efficacy of the Law, to that Period of Time, which preceded our LORD's Incarnation. Whereas, it *still* does, and *always* will *act* (until this Corruptible shall put on Incorruption) in a Way of Subserviency to his Merits.

deduced from Example.—How was *Abraham*, the Friend of G O D, and Father of the Faithful, justified? By a Course of sincere Obedience? No; but by Faith in the promised MESSIAH. *Abraham worked not*, with a View to obtain Justification; but *believed on Him, who justified the Ungodly*.—How was *David**, the Man after G O D's own Heart, justified? By his Zeal for the L O R D and by his eminent Services? No; but by a Righteousness imputed: even that Righteousness of the blessed R E D E E M E R, through which *Iniquity is forgiven, and Sin pardoned*.—And can We be said to walk *humbly*, or can We be thought to walk *surely*, if, refusing to tread in the Steps of these exemplary Saints, We divert into a Path of our own devising?

Ther. Of our own devising!—No, my Friend: there is a *milder* Law introduced by the Gospel, condescending and merciful to our Infirmities, which accepts of Sincerity instead of perfect Obedience.

Asp. When was this milder Law introduced, and the stricter abrogated?—Not upon the Entrance of Sin, I presume. At this Rate, the original Law must be the Creature of a *few Days*, perhaps of a *few Hours* only. But can We imagine, that the all-wise and unchangeable G O D would ordain a System of Precepts, to be disannulled, as soon as enacted?—Not in our L O R D's Time, I am very certain. That holy Commandment, which requires *supreme* Love to G O D, and *perfect* Charity to Men, He assures Us, was still in Force.† Nay, it is evident, from the Nature of the D E I T Y, and from our Relation to one another,

N 3

That

* These two Examples are with the truest Judgment selected, and with the utmost Propriety applied. *Rom. iv. 4, &c. Rom. vi. 6, &c.*—*Abraham* was the most illustrious Pattern of Piety, among the *Jewish* Patriarchs: *In Glory there was None like him.* *Eccclus. xliv. 19.* *David* was the most zealous and seraphic of their Kings: *A Man after G O D's own Heart.* *1. Sam. xiii. 14.* If neither of these was justified by *his own* Obedience; but each by an *imputed* Righteousness: If they both obtained Acceptance with G O D, not as *upright* Beings, who might *claim* it; but as *sinful* Creatures, who must *implore* it; the Consequence is glaring. It is such, as must strike every attentive Understanding, and must affect every individual Person.

† *Matt. xvii. 37. 38. 39.*

270 DIALOGUE IX.

That it always will be in Force ; that it can never cease ; but is necessary and everlasting.

A milder Law, condescending to our Infirmities—
What can be the Purport of such an Institution ? It must be supposed to speak the following Language ;
“ Be it known unto You, O Children of *Adam*, that
“ You are no longer enjoined to love the LORD with
“ all your Strength, nor to love your Neighbour as
“ yourselves.—*Once*, indeed, I insisted upon absolute Purity of Heart ; *now* I can dispense with some
“ Degree of evil Concupiscence.—Since *CHRIST* is
“ come, and his Gospel preached, You need not always be clothed with Humility ; but may feel some
“ little Emotions of Pride.—In short ; because You
“ are *weak*, I will *connive* ; or even accommodate
“ my Demands to your enfeebled and depraved Condition.”

Not to urge, (what must be shocking to every Ear)
That such a Doctrine would make the HOLY ONE of GOD, a Minister of Sin ; and the Gospel of our Salvation, a Patent for Licentiousness. Let me only ask—Does this agree with our LORD’s Declaration ?
*One jot or Tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled**.—Is this suitable to the Perfections of the divine LEGISLATOR ? *With whom is no Variableness, nor Shadow of turning* † ?—Will this consist with the avowed Resolution of the Almighty JEHOVAH ? *He will magnify the Law, and make it honourable* ‡.

Ther. However You may decry, what I call the milder Law, St. *Paul* asserts it to be the *Christian* Scheme. This he strenuously argues for, as the only Scheme by which any Man can be justified in the Sight of GOD.

Asp. Does He, *Theron* ? In what Epistle ? What Chapter ? What Verse ?—He says, addressing himself to the *Galatian* Converts ; *I do not frustrate the Grace of GOD ; for, if Righteousness come by the Law, then CHRIST is dead in vain* ||. From which Passage

We

* Matt. v. 18.
|| Gal. ii. 21.

† James i. 17.

‡ Isai. xlii. 21.

We learn two very momentous Truths. That, to derive a justifying Righteousness from the Law, is not only *derogatory* to the Honour of Grace, but *subversive* of its very Being — That, by seeking to be justified by our own conscientious Behaviour, We make, as far as in Us lies, the Death of *CHRIST* a *vain* Thing; for which there was no Occasion, and of which there is no Use.

To the same Purpose it is written in that invaluable Epistle to the *Romans* †; *If they which are of the Law be Heirs*; if they, who trust to their own Performance of the Law, are thereby intitled to the heavenly Inheritance; *Faith is made void, and the Promise made of none Effect*. — See now, my Friend, the Tendency of your Opinion! It is not a mere speculative Mistake; an Error of inconsiderable Consequence; but such as strikes at the Fundamentals of the Gospel. Instead of being the only *Christian* Scheme, it totally overthrows ‡ *Christianity* itself. For it would render the Promise abortive, and supersede the Necessity of Faith. It would destroy the very Existence of Grace, and make even the Death of *CHRIST* a superfluous Transaction.

Ther. This I see, *Aspasio*; That the Method of obtaining Acceptance on Account of our own Sincerity, is a benign Expedient; such as corresponds with the compassionate Nature of the DEITY; and is what the

† Rom. iv. 13.

‡ St. Paul says of those Preachers, who taught Justification by the Works of the Law, *They would pervert*, or (as the Original *μεταστρεψαι* may be translated) subvert and overthrow the Gospel of *CHRIST*. — To pervert, give a *wrong Turn*, or a *faise Colour*, seems not to express fully the Apostle's Idea, nor to preserve the native Energy of his Argument. The Greek Word corresponds with the Hebrew *פָּרַךְ*, which is generally rendered *ewertere*. Gal. i. 7.

It may be worth our while, to transcribe *Beza's* Descant upon the Passage: which is no less pertinent, than it is important. *Quid enim magis contrarium est Fidei, sive gratuita Justificationi, quam Justificatio ex Lege, sive Meritis, non CHRISTI sed nostris? Itaque qui volunt ista, duo conciliare, magis etiam sunt inepti, quam si quis conetur Lucem cum Tenebris, Mortem cum Vita conjungere.*

Apostle styles, *being justified by Faith, without the Deeds of the Law.*

Asp. How! To be justified by Faith, and justified by Sincerity, the *same* Thing!—Is it possible, that these should be *equivalent* Terms?—Let me illustrate my Meaning by a Similitude, which our present Situation suggests. Sometimes, an easy Comparison is more convincing, than a laboured Argument.

From this pleasing Eminence, We command an extensive View of the Country. Our Eye connects the artless Grandeur of Nature, with the elegant Embellishments of the Summer-house. Nor is the public Road the least entertaining Part of the Scene. Because, it presents Us with a *moving Picture*; with a perpetual Succession of new Objects.—How many Travelers have passed in Review, since We took our Seat in this agreeable Elevation! Just at this Instant, a *Stage-coach* bolts out of the Lane: filled, I presume, with Passengers, that reside in the Neighbourhood, or are to lodge in the next Market-town. We will suppose them set down at their Journey's End. An Acquaintance visits them: congratulates them on their Arrival: and asks that customary Question, "How they came?"—"We came, say they, without walking a Step ourselves; yet by walking, as well, and as far, as we were able."—Is this Answer *intelligible*? Are these two Methods of traveling *consistent*? So intelligible is my Friend's Doctrine. So consistent is Justification, vouchsafed *without* the Deeds of the Law; and Justification obtained, by performing the Deeds of the Law, *as well* as We are able.

Ther. Without the Law, signifies, without the Necessity of an *exact* and *unerring* Conformity to it.

Asp. This is not *without*, but *by* the Law, qualified in the Rigour of its Demands, and departing somewhat from the Perfection of its Precepts. Could You affirm, with any Propriety, that this Part of the Hemisphere is *without the Sun*? Because, an intervening Cloud has moderated its Fervour, and abated its Glare.

What

What says the Apostle? His Words in another Place, will determine his Meaning in this. If a State of Acceptance with GOD, be *of Works*; be referable to our own Obedience, whether sincere or perfect; *it is no more of Grace* *. Works and Grace, in Point of Justification, are irreconcilable Opposites †. They mutually vacate each other.

But why do I speak of Grace? If my Friend's Opinion prevail, Grace is at an End. What We took to be the Gospel, turns out a Covenant of Works. Salvation ceases to be a free Gift, and becomes a necessary Payment. For, *to Him that worketh, that performeth what the Law requires, is the Reward not reckoned of Grace; but He may claim it, as Matter of Debt* ‖.

Ther. You take no Notice of what I urged, concerning the *Benignity* of this Scheme; and how much it magnifies the *Clemency* of the great LEGISLATOR.

Asp. But why should Clemency erect its Throne, on the Ruins of almost every other Attribute?—This Method would dishonour the *Veracity* of GOD; which has denounced a Curse, upon every Deviation from his revealed Will.—It would deprectiate the *Administration* of his *Justice*; which cannot but punish, whatever violates his sacred Precepts.—It would greatly derogate from the *Dignity* of his *Law*, and make it a mere Thing of Wax. To bend; and truckle; and take its Form, from the Sin and Weakness of human Nature.

Ther. Will the divine Law then make no favourable Allowances for human Infirmities, for constitutional Faults, and Strength of Passion?

* *Rom. xi. 6.* The Passage produced by *Aspasio*, refers immediately to the Doctrine of Election, and but remotely to the Privilege of Justification. However, as the former includes the latter, if *that* be perfectly free, *this* cannot be the Consequence of Works. The Argument, therefore, I apprehend, is conclusive, tho' the Proof is not so direct.

† *E diametro inter se opponuntur, Moses & JESUS CHRISTUS: Lex & Promissio: facere & credere: Opera & Fides: Merces & Donum.* Bengel.

‖ *Rom. iv. 4.*

Asp. Far be it from me to represent the Law of the MOST HIGH, either more strict, or more yielding, than it really is. To avoid all Possibility of such a Mistake, let Us hear the Declaration of the Law itself. *Curst is every One that continueth not in all Things, that are written in the Book of the Law to do them*.*

Every One ; without any Exception of Persons ; without any Regard to Pleas, either of human Weakness, or violent Temptation.—*That continueth not* ; it is not enough to observe these holy Commandments, in the general Tenour of our Conversation. Our Course of Obedience must be without any Intermission ; from the earliest Dawn of Reason, to the latest Period of Life.—*In all Things* ; We must refrain from all the Sins, that are forbidden, and from every Approach towards them. We must practise all the Virtues, that are enjoined, and in their full Extent of Perfection.

In a Word ; the Law insists upon Obedience ; perfect in its *Principle* ; perfect in all its *Parts* ; perfect in every *Degree* ; and in each of these Respects *perpetual* †. —The least Deficiency in any one Particular, exposes to divine Vengeance ; and, notwithstanding any Repentance for Transgressions, notwithstanding all Pretensions to Sincerity of Heart, subjects to a tremendous Curse.

Theron paused.—He seemed to be struck with Surprise.—But rallying his Thoughts, replied. If this be the Sense of the Passage, who of all Flesh can be saved?

Asp. Say rather ; If the Extent of the divine Law be so enlarged, if its Demands be so high, and its Sanction so awfully rigorous ; then must every Mouth be stopped—then is all the World become guilty before

* Gal. iii. 10.

† That the Law insists upon an Obedience, *absolutely perfect*, will be farther evident to the attentive Reader ; if He considers the Tenour of St. Paul's Argumentation, in his Epistle to the Romans, and to the Galatians. Particularly Rom. iii. 23. iv. 15. Gal. iii. 21.

DIALOGUE IX. 275

fore GOD—and, *by the Works of the Law shall no Man living be justified.*

Ther. Will not such excessively severe Doctrine, drive People into *Despondency*, or even drown them in *Despair*?

Asp. No, *Theron*; unless it be *such* a Despair, as is the Parent of heavenly Hope; and productive of those amiable Twins, Peace and Joy. A Despair, I mean, of being reconciled to our offended GOD, and of obtaining eternal Happiness, by any Satisfaction or any Duties of our own.

Ther. Surely, You forget the gracious *Manifesto*, published by the condescending KING of Heaven; *If there be first a willing Mind, it is accepted, according to what a Man hath, not according to what he hath not* *. Is it not plain from this Text, that infinite Goodness will admit our honest, though imperfect Endeavours. And, since We are not able to pay an *unfinning*, will mercifully accept our *best* Obedience.

Asp. I do not forget, but possibly my Friend may misapply the gracious *Manifesto*.—To whom was the Word of this Consolation sent? To true Believers; who had *given their own selves to the LORD* †; who *were established in CHRIST* ‡; and *abounded in Faith* §. —If you likewise, my dear *Theron*, acknowledge yourself a *vile Sinner* in your worst, and an *unprofitable Servant* in your best Estate: if, in consequence of this Acknowledgment, You fly for Refuge to the Wounds of a *crucified SAVIOUR*; and rely, for Salvation, only on *his Obedience* unto Death: then, You imitate those *Corinthian* Converts. Then You may apply that indulgent Declaration to Yourself. And then would I venture to address You, in the elegant and cheering Language of the royal PREACHER; *Go thy Way, eat thy Bread with Joy, and drink thy Wine with a merry Heart; for GOD now accepteth* || both thy Person and thy Performances.

But

* 2 Cor. viii. 12.

† 2 Cor. viii. 5.

‡ 2 Cor. i. 21.

§ 2 Cor. viii. 7.

|| Eccles. ix. 7.—*Aspasio's* Remark discovers an *Ambiguity* in the Word *accepted*.—If People mean, That sincere Obedience shall be

But, if You overlook the Righteousness of the blessed *JESUS*; if You depend upon Yourself, and your own Attainments; You are (how shall I speak it!) not accepted, but accursed. In such a Case, You have already heard your Doom denounced by *Moses*, and may hear it ratified by the Apostle of the *Gentiles*; *As many as are of the Works of the Law*, who seek Justification by their own Observance of its Commands, *are under the Curse* †.

Ther. Under the Curse! Because, our Attempts to obey, though faithfully exerted, are attended with Defects! Is not this unreasonable and shocking? *Unreasonable*, that the GOD of Justice should establish a Law of such consummate Perfection, as no Child of *Adam* can, even with his utmost Assiduity and Care, fulfil? *Shocking*, that the GOD of Mercy should thunder out so severe a Denunciation, on the least inadvertent Breach, on every unavoidable Failure?—This exceeds the relentless Rigour of *Draco*, or the tyrannical Impositions of the *Aegyptian* Task-masters. *Draco* is said to have written his Laws in Blood. Yet He never enacted such Institutions, as were absolutely too strict and difficult to be observed. And, tho' the *Aegyptian* Task-masters insisted upon the full Tale of Bricks, without allowing the necessary Proportion of Straw, yet the Punishment they inflicted, was incomparably less than everlasting Destruction.

Asp. Had GOD Almighty's Design in delivering his Law to fallen Mankind, been, to propound the *Means* of their *Justification*; your Argument would have been valid, and your Inference undeniable. But the SUPREME LEGISLATOR had a very different, a far more

be accepted, as their *justifying* Righteousness; as that which constitutes their Title to everlasting Felicity: the Proposition is absolutely false.—If they mean, that the sincere Obedience of Believers, though very imperfect in itself, shall be *graciously regarded* in *CHRIST*, and find Favour through his all-recommending Merit: it is unquestionably true.—As the *Effect of Faith*, We may rejoice in it, with the happy Apostle, 2 Cor. i. 12. As the *Condition of our Justification*, We must renounce it with holy *Job*, Chap. ix. 15.

† Gal. iii. 10.

more mysterious End.—However, before I proceed to touch upon this Point, let me desire to know *your* Sentiments.

For what Reasons, think you, was the Law ordained?

Ther. For what Reasons?—To deter Men from the Commission of Vice, and excite them to the Practice of Virtue.—To set before them a Rule for their Conduct; which if they diligently observe, they shall be rewarded with eternal Happiness; which if they presumptuously transgress, they shall be punished with eternal Misery.

Asp. The Law is undoubtedly a Rule of Conduct to All, not the Condition of eternal Happiness to Any. If Man had never fallen, this Doctrine had been sound Divinity; and this Method, a practicable Scheme. But, ever since the *Fall*, such a Way of Salvation, is somewhat like the *North-East Passage*. As Mountains of Ice, and the severest Rigours of Winter, block up *this*: so, extreme Impotence in Man, and the utmost Perfection in the Law, bar up *that*.—*The Law*, saith the Apostle, *is weak*; is incapable of furnishing Us with a Title to the heavenly Felicity*. Not through any Defect in its Precepts, but *through the Flesh*; through the Inability of our degenerate Nature.

Yet I must confess, You are not alone in this Opinion. Multitudes have unwarily entertained the same Notion. Not apprehensive, that they frustrate hereby the Grace of GOD, and render it of none Effect with regard to themselves.—If You examine the *scriptural* Account, You will find it quite of another Strain.

Ther. Pray let me hear the scriptural Account. For, whenever those DIVINE ORACLES speak, I am all Attention.

* Therefore he says in another Place; *IF there had been a Law given, which could have given Life*, Gal. iii. 21. It is the same Way of speaking, and intended to denote the very same *Impossibility*, which is implied in that Speech of JEHOVAH to Abram; *IF a Man can number the Dust of the Earth*, Gen. xiii. 16.

278 DIALOGUE IX.

tention. Where-ever they interpose their Authority, I am all Submission.

Asp. By the Law is the Knowledge of Sin †. Far from being our Justifier, it is our Accuser. It arraigns, and proves Us guilty. It demonstrates, beyond all Possibility of Contradiction, that the very best among Us, have failed and come short of our Duty; nay, that the very best among Us, have done amiss, and dealt wickedly.

I was alive without the Law once, says the Apostle *. I thought myself upright and holy; and intitled, by Virtue of these Qualifications, to Life eternal. *But when the Commandment came*, shining in its Purity, and operating with Power, *Sin revived*; a clear and lively Sense of Guilt shot, like a piercing Ray, through all my Soul. I saw myself chargeable with many past Provocations, I felt myself subject to much remaining Corruption. In consequence of which, *I died*; my vain Conceits were blasted; my presumptuous Hopes expired: I could not but acknowledge myself justly liable to Condemnation and Death.

Ther. It had this Effect on *Saul*, when He was a malignant and barbarous Persecutor. But, when People are *virtuous* and *benovolent*, what Purpose does it then serve?

Asp. A very important one. Yet such as may, probably, at the first Hearing, affect You with a little Surprise. *The Law entered*, says the Apostle, *that Sin might*——

Ther. Be restrained, no doubt.

Asp. That Sin might abound ||, is the Assertion.

Ther. Surprising indeed! Is it possible that GOD's Law should give Countenance to Sin? Nay, add Spurs to the Sinner?

Asp. Let Us beware of mistaking our sacred Casuist. The Law entered, not that the *Commission* of Sin might be authorized, but that the *Abundance* of our Sins might be manifested. That all Mankind, even your virtuous Persons, may perceive the great Impurity of their
Hearts;

† Rom. iii. 20.

* Rom. vii. 9.

|| Rom. v. 8.

Hearts* ; may discern the vast Multitude of their Iniquities ; together with the utter Imperfection of their highest Attainments, and best Services.

This End could not be answered by a Law, relaxed in its Demands, or warping to our Weakness ; only by a System of Precepts, *every* Way exact, and in *all* Degrees perfect.—Whoever would represent to his Neighbour, the Spots that fully, or the Scars that disfigure his Countenance, must effect his Design, not by a stained, but by a pure Mirror.

Ther. *The Knowledge of Sin, and a Conviction of our exceeding Sinfulness!*—These are Intentions, which I should not have suspected.

Asp. These are not all. There is another Intention of the Law, equally necessary, and no less awful. *It reveals the Wrath of GOD, on all Ungodliness and Unrighteousness of Men†.*—Having set before the Sinner, his innumerable Offences, and enormous Guilt ; it denounces the Doom, which he deserves. It unsheaths the Sword of Justice, and threatens the Offender with everlasting Destruction from the Presence of the LORD.

Ther. A modern Writer supposes, that GOD may *set aside* the Law, in Favour of frail Men. I might far more reasonably suppose, that He would *mitigate* the Law, on the same Consideration. But what You urge, makes me afraid to lean on so precarious a Prop.

Asp. To look for Comfort and Salvation from this Quarter, would be *to lean*, as the *Arabian Proverb* speaks, *on a Wave of the Sea* : which will not only fail to support, but will certainly swallow up, the unadvised and rash Depender.

No, *Theron* ; rather than the divine Law should lose its Honours, *Sodom and Gomorrah* were laid in Ashes ; the antient World was destroyed with a Deluge ; the present Frame of Nature is destined to the Flames, and all

* *And therefore was Law given them, to evince
Their natural Pravity.* Milt. B. XII. 287.

† Rom. i. 18.

280 DIALOGUE IX.

all its unholy Inhabitants must be doomed to Hell.—Nay, rather than the *least Tittle* should pass unaccomplished, its Curse has been executed on GOD's own SON, and all its Injunctions have been fulfilled in the Person of *JESUS CHRIST*.

Ther. As I dare not confide in the modern provisionary *Salvo*, so neither can I accede to your severe and terrifying Notions.—The Laws of a wise and beneficent Governor, are calculated for the *Good* of his Subjects. What Good can accrue to Us, from receiving such a Sentence, and possessing such Convictions?

Asp. Much and various.—Though I might mention many Advantages, I shall content myself with selecting one. Which is not only valuable in itself, but the Introduction to *every* spiritual Blessing.—Hence We are taught to see our Danger: hence We are made to feel our Misery: that We may no longer sleep in Security, but solicitously look out for Deliverance, and gladly accept the sovereign Remedy.

Ther. The Law then, according to your Representation, is intended to *accuse* me—to *convict* me—to *condemn* me. So it becomes, instead of a salutary, a killing System.

Asp. *The Letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth Life**. If We adhere to the literal Sense, without attending to the spiritual Design: if We regard only the Precept and the Sanction, as they stand in *themselves*: and neither consider, nor improve them, as acting in *Subserviency* to the MEDIATOR's Righteousness; they are doubtless a killing Ordinance, and bind Us down under a Sentence of Death.—But rightly improved—Hold! Let me proceed no farther with the Argument.

You are a Sportsman, *Theron*, and delight in the manly Recreations of the Field. You must therefore have read that fine Poem, which so elegantly describes your favourite Diversion.

Ther. The CHACE, I suppose, You mean.

Asp.

* 2 Cor. iii. 6.

DIALOGUE IX. 281

Asp. The same.—Do You remember the large Description of the *royal Stag Chace*?

Ther. Perfectly well. It is not a Week, since I perused the whole Passage, and with as much Pleasure, as if it had been intirely new.

Asp. Then You can give me a Summary of the agreeable Narrative.

Ther. I can. But will not this Chace lead Us away very far from our Subject?

Asp. Perhaps, not so far as You imagine. I have a Reason for my Request.

Ther. What Reason, I beseech You?

Asp. You shall soon know. Only favour me with the Account.

Ther. I protest, I cannot discern the least Connection, between these rural Sports, and the grand Topic of our Conversation. However, since You command, I will implicitly obey.

The Stag, roused from his Lair, shakes his dappled Sides; tosses his beamy Head; and, conscious of superior Agility, seems to defy the gathering Storm.—You see, speaking of Poetry, I have catched something of the poetical Strain.

Asp. This invlivened Manner excites my Eagerness, and makes me more desirous to hear the Sequel.

Ther. First, He has Recourse to Stratagem, and evasive Shifts. He plunges into the Copse; darts across the Glade; and wheels about in doubling Mazes; as tho' He would pursue even the Foe He avoids. The full-mouthed Pack unravel all his Windings, and drive Him from his wily Arts.

Now, He betakes himself to Flight, and confides in his speed. He bursts through the Woods; bounds over the Lawns; and leaves the lagging Beagles far behind. The Beagles slow, but sure, trace his Steps, through Woods, through Lawns, through half the extended Forest. Unwearied, still unwearied, they urge their ardent Way, and gain upon the alarmed Object of their Pursuit.

Again He flies. Flies with redoubled Swiftnes.
Shoots down the Steep; strains up the Hill; and
takes

takes shelter in the inmost Recess of some sequestered Grove. The sagacious Hounds hang, with greedy Nostrils, on the Scent. They recover, by indefatigable Assiduity, the Ground they had lost. Up they come a third time; and, joining in a general Peal of Vengeance, hurry the affrighted Animal from his short Concealment.

Perplexed, and in the utmost Distress, He seeks the numerous Herd. He would lose himself, and elude his Pursuers, amidst the Multitude of his Fellows. But they, unconcerned for a Brother's Woe, shun the miserable Creature, or expel him from the selfish Circle.—Abandoned by his Associates, and haunted with Apprehensions of approaching Ruin, He trembles at every Leaf that shakes. He starts; He springs; and wild, and swift as the Wind, flies He knows not where, yet pours all his Soul in Flight.—Vain, vain are his Efforts. The horrid Cry, lately lessened, thickens upon the Gale, and thunders in his Ear.—Now, the poor breathless Victim is full in View. His Sprightliness forsakes him. His Agility is spent. See! how He toils in yonder Valley, with faltering Limbs, and a hobbling Gait. The Sight of their Game, quickens the Pace, and whets the Ardour of the impetuous Hounds. With tumultuous Violence they rush in, and with clamorous Joy demand their Prey.

What can He do? Surrounded as he is with insulting Tongues, and ravenous Jaws? Despair is capable of inspiriting even the timorous Beast. Having nothing to hope, He forgets to fear. He faces about, and makes a resolute Stand. The Trunk of a sturdy Tree covers his Rear; and his own branching Horns defend him in Front. He rushes upon his Adversaries; goars some; lays others groveling on the Turf; and makes the whole coward Pack give way.

Encouraged by this unexpected Success, his Hopes revive. He rallies once again his drooping Spirits; exerts the little Remainder of his Strength; and springs through the midst of the retiring Rout.—It is his last, last Chance. He stretches every Nerve; once more loses sight of the Rabble from the Kennel; and,

and, finding no Security on the Land, takes to the Water. He sails down the Stream, and skulks away to the Verge of some little shelving Island. There, finding a Resting-place for his Feet, He sinks close to the shady Margin. All immersed in the Wave, excepting only his Nostrils, He baffles, for a while, the prying Eye of Man, and the keener Smell of Brute.

Discovered, at length, and forced to quit this un-
 availing Refuge, He climbs the slippery Bank. Unable
 to fly any longer, He stands at Bay against an aged Wil-
 low. Stands, all faint with Toil, and sobbing with
 Anguish. The Crouds that gather round Him, with
 merciless and outrageous Transport, triumph in his
 Misery. A Multitude of blood-thirsty Throats, joined
 with the sonorous Horn, ring his funeral Knell.—
 The Tears, till this fatal Instant, unknown, gush from
 his languishing Eyes, and roll down his reeking Cheeks.
 He casts one more Look on the Woods, the Lawns, the
 pleasing Scenes of his former Delights; and, deter-
 mined to die, prepares to sell his Life as dear as possible.

At this most critical Juncture, the royal Sportsman
 comes up. He sees the distressed Creature; and, as
 soon as He sees, He pities. The Clemency which at-
 tends the Throne, accompanies even the Diversions of
 Majesty. He issues the high Command. The prohi-
 bitory Signal is given. The Pack, though raving for
 Blood, are checked in a Moment. And not checked
 only, but called off from the Chace. So that they leave
 the intended Victim of their Fury, to enjoy his Liberty,
 his Safety, and his Ease again.

I have now followed the Stag, till I have tired your
 Patience. Why did You suffer me to run on, at this
 extravagant Rate? You know, I am, on these favourite
 Topics, an everlasting Talker.

Asp. Why this Apology, *I heron*? I am sure, You did
 not see my Lips yawn, or my Head nod, while You
 was pursuing your Subject. Besides, I intend to make
 Reprizals, and put *your* Attention to the same Tryal.

Thus the Strictness of the *Law* pursues the Soul;
 dislodges it from every Refuge of Lies; and never re-
 mits its terrifying Menaces, till the poor Delinquent
 ceases

ceases from Self-confidence, and fixes on *CHRIST* for his whole Salvation *.

The Man, perhaps, is awakened into a serious Concern for his eternal State. In consequence of which, He relinquishes his profane and iniquitous Practices. Breaks the Sabbath, and defrauds his Neighbour no more.—But the Law quickly represents, and in a glaring Light, that a *Negative* Obedience is by no means sufficient, to deliver from the Wrath to come.

Upon this, He betakes Himself to a Course of *positive* Holiness. Gets acquainted with religious People, and performs religious Duties. Prays in secret, and attends public Ordinances. Conscientiously observes the LORD's Day, and regulates his Behaviour by the Rule of GOD's Commandments. Now, He is ready to congratulate Himself on his remarkable and hopeful Reformation.

Soon He perceives, that all his Proficiency is but Skin-deep: a mere outside Varnish: which has not penetrated the inner Man. He begins, therefore, to watch over the Motions, and bewail the Evils of his Heart. He labours to subdue Pride, and curb Passion; to purge out filthy Lusts, and to banish spiritual Wickedness. Notwithstanding all his Vigilance, Conscience flies in his Face, either for the Neglect of some Virtue, or the Commission of some Sin. The Law rings in his Ear that dreadful Denunciation; "Cursted is He, "that performeth not *all* Things."

Struck by this Conviction, his Wounds bleed afresh. He is obliged to seek some new Balm for his Sore. In order to appease an offended GOD, and atone for his sinful Relapses, He makes many sorrowful Confessions; possibly, submits to voluntary Sufferings. He denies Himself, and bestows liberally on the Poor. He sighs deeply, and mourns bitterly.—But can Waters that are muddy, cleanse the Garment that is filthy? Wilt Thou satisfy, O vain Man, for one Sin, by committing another? In *these* penitential Exercises, were your Thoughts

* *Lex Hominem urget, donec is ad CHRISTUM confugit. Tum ipsa dicit; Asylum es nactus; desino Te persequi; sapis saluus es.*

Bengel.

D I A L O G U E IX. 285

Thoughts steadily devout? In *those* Acts of Beneficence, was your Heart warmly affectionate? If not, such fancied Reparations of past Faults, only aggravate the heavy Score.

What shall He do? He cannot *pay*. To *beg* He is ashamed. Fain would He enter into Life, yet not be too much indebted to Grace. He attempts therefore to *compound* with Heaven. He binds Himself by solemn, perhaps by sacramental Engagements, to use greater Circumspection for the future. Then turns his Eye to the divine M E D I A T O R; not with a View of relying wholly on his Righteousness; but only to obtain such a Supply, as may make up the Deficiencies of his own.—Somewhat like this was the Mistake of the *Galatian* Converts; against which St. *Paul*, in his Epistle to that People, so solidly disputes, and so sharply inveighs*.

For a while, He holds fast his purposed Integrity. At length, falling notoriously short, in executing his Part, a startling Voice sounds in his Ear that dreadful Alarm, “Curfed is He that *continueth* not.” His Heart sinks with Discouragement, and all his Resolutions hang their enfeebled Heads. He has tried every Method, that He can devise; and has found every Method ineffectual. All his Expedients are a Spider’s Web, and his Hope is as the giving up of the Ghost.

His Soul, pursued by the Law, and hunted by Terror, is brought to the Gates of Death, or the very Brink of Despair. And now the KING of Kings, now the LORD our Righteousness, appears for his Rescue. Now is accomplished that gracious Declaration: *O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself, but in me is thy Help*†.—Driven from every false Refuge, and drawn by the blessed SPIRIT, He comes weary and heavy laden

* *Sharply* indeed! For, instead of saluting them, under the honourable Title of *Saints and Faithful in CHRIST JESUS*; He stigmatizes them with that severe Appellation, *O foolish Galatians!*—And as to their Practice, which was a Departure from Justification by *CHRIST alone*, He styles it, not merely an Error, but an Error of the most mischievous and horrid Kind—an *Infatuation*—*a Bewitchery*, Τῆς ἑσθραῖας. Gal. iii. 1.

† Hof. xiii. 9.

286 DIALOGUE IX.

laden to *CHRIST*. Convinced of the Sin of his Nature, the Sin of his Life, and the Sin of his best Duties, He renounces Himself in every View. This is all his Salvation, and all his Desire, that He may win *CHRIST*, and be found in Him. Did that poor afflicted Woman say? *If I may but touch his Garment, I shall be whole*. With equal Ardor does this inlightened Sinner cry; “If I may but have Fellowship with the “glorious *IMMANUEL*, in his Merits and in his “Benefits, I am alive from the Dead; I am happy “for ever.”

Having seen a Glimpse of the transcendent Excellency of the *REDEEMER*’s Person; having received a Taste from the inexhaustible Fulness of his Grace; O! how He longs for brighter Manifestations! How He thirsts after more plentiful Draughts!—None that come to *CHRIST*, are cast out. He that awakens these ardent Desires, in his due Time gives the desired Blessings. After various Conflicts, a comfortable and established Faith is wrought in the Penitent’s Soul. He believes, that the *SON* of the *MOST HIGH* died in *his* Stead, and was obedient for *his* Justification. Believes, that all the unsearchable Riches of the adored *MEDIATOR*’s Life and Death are his Portion*.

By this Faith, his Heart is purified; his Heart is quickened: He is fitted for every good Work.—Tho’ Temptations assault Him, He derives Strength from his *SAVIOUR*; resists the Devil; and is faithful unto Death.—Though Corruptions defile Him, He
flies

* See this Work of Grace, and Procedure of Conversion, more copiously displayed, in a valuable little Piece intituled, *Human Nature in its fourfold State*, by Mr. Thomas Boston, page 21. Which, in my Opinion, is one of our best Books for common Readers. The Sentences are short, and the Comparisons striking. The Language is easy, and the Doctrine evangelical. The Method proper, the Plan comprehensive, the Manner searching yet consolatory.—If another celebrated Treatise is styled, *The whole Duty of Man*, I would call this *The WHOLE of Man*: as it comprises—what He *was* originally—what He *is* by Transgression—what He *should be* through Grace—and then what He *will be* in Glory.

flies to the *Fountain opened for Uncleanneſs* *; makes daily, hourly Application of the Blood of Sprinkling; and goes on his Way, rejoicing in GOD his SAVIOUR.

Ther. Your Diſcourſe puts me in mind of *Absalom's* Procedure, when *Joab* refused to make Him a Viſit. The Prince ordered his Servants to ſet on fire the General's ſtanding Corn. This Stratagem had its intended Effect. The Apprehenſion of Danger drove Him, when the reſpectful Invitation would not lead Him, to a perſonal Interview. You ſeem to ſuppoſe, that the Law was delivered with ſuch a Deſign; to lay Us under a *Necceſſity* of flying to the Atonement of CHRIST.

Aſp. I do, *Theron*. And for this Opinion, I have a far better Authority, than my own Suppoſition. We are aſſured by unerring Wiſdom, That CHRIST is the End of the Law. It points invariably to Him. It terminates wholly in Him. And then obtains its noble Purpoſe, when Sinners are brought to their divine REDEEMER, for Righteouſneſs and Strength: For that Righteouſneſs, which intitles to Heaven; that Strength, which capacitates for Obedience.

The Law hath concluded all Mankind under Sin †. Yet not with an Intention, that any ſhould be diſcouraged now, or periſh for ever: but that every One may ſee his inexpressible Need, of a SAVIOUR's Death, and a SAVIOUR's Obedience ‡. That, being thus prepared,

* Zech. xiii. 3.

† Gal. iii. 22. The ſacred Original is ſomewhat more comprehensive than *Aſpaſio's* Interpretation. It is not *παντας*, but *παντα*. Which denotes Things, as well as Perſons: And implies, that nothing We have, nothing We do, is free from Sin; till the Merits of CHRIST intervene, and the Blood of CHRIST be ſprinkled.

‡ *Wetſius*, ſpeaking of the Law delivered at Sinai, ſays; *Facta eſt iſta Fæderis Operum Commemoratio, ad Iſraelitos Peccatorum & Miſeriæ ſuæ convincendos, ex ſeipſis expellendos, de Necceſſitate Satisfactionis edocendos, & ad CHRISTUM compellendos: & ſic inſervit Fæderi Gratia*. Animadv. Iren. p. 99.

pared, both to value and receive so precious a Blessing, *the Promise of Justification by Faith in JESUS CHRIST may be given to them that believe.*

Let Us advert to this grand Aim of the Law. Then, We shall see Goodness, unquestionable and sovereign Goodness, in forming its Constitution so *sublimely perfect*, and making its Threatenings so *inflexibly severe*. Exclusive of this wholesome Severity, We should supinely disesteem, perhaps, wantonly reject, the Grace of the Gospel.—The *prodigal Son* would never have returned to his Father, in that humble, submissive, supplicating Posture; if He had not found his Circumstances utterly ruined, and felt Himself perishing with Hunger. No more would the conceited Sons of *Adam*, disclaiming all Pretence to any Merit of their own, and with nothing but the Halter * of Self-condemnation about their Necks, fall down at the Feet of a merciful REDEEMER: if they were not instigated by the sharp Goad, or rather driven by the flaming Sword of the Law.

To this agrees our celebrated *Milton*. Whose Divinity is as faultless, as his Poetry is matchless. You will

The *Genius* and *Design* of the Law were, I think, emblematically taught, by the Circumstances attending its *Delivery*.—The Mountain, not to be trodden by any *Israelite*, or touched by any Beast, on pain of Death—The Voice of Thunder, and the Glare of Lightning—The Sound of the Trumpet, and the Clouds of Smoke—The vast Range of Hills and Rocks, trembling to their Center—Six hundred thousand Men struck with inexpressible Consternation—And *Moses*, even *Moses* himself, the Favourite of Heaven, terrified exceedingly—All these indicated the *righteous*, the *rigorous*, and the *awful* Import of “The Word spoken.”

Nor was the *Effect* of those astonishing Incidents, without a spiritual Meaning. The People durst not adventure upon a *personal* Approach, but had Recourse to a *Mediator*. They requested that *Moses* might interpose; and transact Affairs, between the terrible JEHOVAH, and the guilty Congregation.—Such an Impression, the Purity and Rigour of the Law, should make on our Hearts: should drive Us from Self to a SAVIOUR; deter Us from confiding in our *legal*, and prompt Us to seek an *evangelical* Righteousness.

* Alluding to those remarkable Words of *Benbadad's* Servants; *Let Us put Sack-cloth upon our Loins, and Ropes upon our Heads, and go out to meet the King of Israel; peradventure He will save thy Life.* 1 Kings xx. 31.

DIALOGUE X. 289

will give me Leave to quote a few of his beautiful Lines. Which *recapitulate*, as it were, the whole preceding Conversation : and, while they recapitulate the Conversation, *confirm* the Doctrine. This will make You some amends, for my late tedious Harangue. This will tip the Lead with Gold.

*So Law appears imperfect ; and but giv'n
With Purpose to resign them, in full Time,
Up to a better Cov'nant ; disciplin'd
From shadowy Types to Truth ; from Flesh to Spirit ;
From Imposition of strict Laws, to free
Acceptance of large Grace ; from servile Fear,
To filial ; Works of Law, to Works of Faith*.*



DIALOGUE X.

ASPASIO.

A GAIN, *Theron* ! Must we never lay aside the Weapons of Controversy ?—You put me in mind of the resolute *Athenian* ; who, having fought with distinguished Bravery on the Field of *Marathon*, pursued the vanquished *Persians* to their Fleet. At that very Instant, a Galley full of the Enemies Troops, was putting off to Sea. Determined, if possible, to prevent their Escape, He laid hold on the Vessel with his Right-hand. Which was no sooner fixed, than chopped off by the Sailors. The Warrior, not at all discouraged, seized it with his left. When that also was cut away, He fastened his Teeth in its Side ;

* Book XII. 300.

Vol. I.

O

and

and never quitted his Gripe, till he resigned his Breath *.

Ther. I have been re-considering the Case of *imputed Righteousness*; and am by no means satisfied, as to the Propriety of the Phrase, or the Truth of the Doctrine; especially, in the Sense which You espouse.—Objections arise, more substantial and weighty, than any that have hitherto been urged. And which, if I mistake not, You will find it a more difficult Task to answer.

Asp. I must do my best. And if my best Attempts prove unsuccessful, I shall say with the gallant *Iphicrates*, when overpowered by the Eloquence of his Antagonist; “My Adversary is the better Actor, but “mine is the better Play.”

I say *better*—For, to You, *Theron*, I will freely own, what to another Person I should not be so willing to disclose; That I receive no Comfort, but from the habitual Belief, and daily Application of this precious Doctrine.—Whenever I read the most *correct* and *beautiful* Writings, that proceed in the contrary Strain, I feel my Spirits heavy; I find my Prospects gloomy; and not one Ray of Consolation gleams upon my Mind. Whereas, *much meaner* Compositions, which breathe the Savour of this evangelical Unction, seldom fail to quicken my Hopes; to brighten my Views; and put into my Mouth that piously alert Profession of the Psalmist, *I will run the Way of thy Commandments, now thou hast set my Heart at liberty* †—Though I am far from laying any considerable Stress upon this Observation; farther still from advancing it into the Place of an Argument; yet I may be permitted to mention it, in the Confidence and Familiarity of Friendship.

Ther. An Opinion proposed with so much Modesty, and so nearly connected with my *Aspasio's* Comfort, has
doubt-

* The *Atbenian's* Name was *Cynægyrus*. The Author, who relates this extraordinary Story, is *Justin*. If the Reader should think it a *Rhodomantade*, I believe, He will not judge it amiss. And I promise myself, the same good Sense will enable Him to distinguish, between what is *binted* by way of *Pleasantry*, and what is *urged* by way of *Argument*.

† Psal. cxix. 32.

doubtless a Claim to my serious Attention. Otherwise, it might possibly provoke my Raillery. For, You must know, I am no great Admirer of inward Feelings. I cannot think them a very solid Method of demonstrating your Point. It must be enforced by better Reasons, if You would gain it access to *my* Heart.

We must place, You say, a Dependence upon the *LORD JESUS CHRIST*, in all that He has *done* and *suffered*. This, You add, is our only justifying Righteousness: the only Method to obtain Pardon of our Sins, and Life eternal.

Asp. I do, *Theron*. This being the Righteousness of GOD, is—

Ther. Give me Leave, before You proceed farther, to propose a Query. Does the Righteousness of GOD signify the active and passive Obedience of *CHRIST*?

Asp. Righteousness is a Conformity to the Law, in Heart, and in Life. As the SON of GOD voluntarily made Himself subject to the Law; perfectly fulfilled its Precepts; and suffered to the utmost its Penalty; this, I should imagine, furnishes Us with the truest and noblest Signification of the Phrase.

Ther. What, if I or others should imagine quite the Reverse?

Asp. I thank my Friend for his Admonition. It is indeed unreasonable, that *my bare* Imagination should pass for Orthodoxy and Truth. Let Us then inquire after better Proof.

When the divine Name, in the sacred Phraseology, is added to a Substantive, it expresses some very extraordinary Property.—*The Trees of the LORD* *, denote those stately and magnificent Forests, which the Hand of the MOST HIGH planted.—*The Mountains of GOD* †, are those prodigiously large Elevations of the Earth, which none but an Almighty Arm could establish.—The Righteousness of GOD likewise means, A Righteousness of the *most supereminent* Dig-

* Psal. civ. 16.

† This is the Import of the Original, *הרי אלהים*, Psal. xxxvi. ver. 7. Heb. ver. 6. Eng.

292 DIALOGUE X.

nity; such as is worthy to be called by his Name; and may justly challenge his Acceptance. And where shall We find this, but in the Conduct and Person of his blessed SON?—This has a most unexceptionable Claim to the exalted Title: being, as a masterly Critic explains the Phrase, “A Righteousness devised by “GOD the FATHER, from all Eternity; wrought “out by GOD the SON, in the Person of *JESUS* “*CHRIST*; applied by GOD the HOLY GHOST, “to the Sinner’s Soul.”

Ther. This Doctrine of yours, if I rightly understand it, would make Remission of Sins, but one *half* of our Justification; and something else necessary, in order to obtain eternal Life. Which is just as rational, as to suppose, That though one Cause may expel Darkness, another must supervene, in order to introduce Light.

Asp. The Nature of Justification, and the Nature of Condemnation are two *Opposites*, which will mutually illustrate each other.—What is implied in the Condemnation of a Sinner? He forfeits eternal Life, and is doomed to eternal Death.—What is included in the Justification of a Sinner? It supersedes his Obligation to Punishment, and invests Him with a Title to Happiness.—In order to the *first*, there must be a Remission of Sins. In order to the *second*, an Imputation of Righteousness. *Both* which are derived from *CHRIST*’s Mediation in our Behalf; and *both* take place, when we are united to that divine HEAD.—So that we do not derive them from two different Sources, but ascribe them to one and the same great, all-sufficient CAUSE.

Your Comparison, though intended to overthrow, I think, fully establishes the Sentiment.—When yonder bright Orb makes his first Appearance in the East, what Effects are produced? The Shades of Night are dispersed, and the Light of Day is diffused.—To what are they owing? Each to a separate, or both to the same Origin? Every one’s Experience will answer the Question. Thus, when the *Sun of Righteousness* arises in the Soul, He brings *at once* Pardon and Acceptance. Remission and Salvation are under his Wings. Both
which

which constitute the healing of the Nations: and both owe their being to *CHRIST*'s Obedience, embraced as active, and not rejected as passive.

Ther. This, I know, is the fine-spun Theory of your systematic Divines. But where is their *Warrant* from Scripture? By what Authority do they introduce such subtle Distinctions?

Asp. I cannot think the Distinction so subtle, or the Theory so finely spun. To be released from the *dam-natory* Sentence, is one Thing; to be treated as a *righteous* Person, is evidently another.—*Absalom* was pardoned, when He received a Permission to remove from *Geshur*, and dwell at *Jerusalem*. But this was very different from the Recommencement of filial Duty, and parental Endearment*. A Rebel may be *exempted* from the capital Punishment, which his traiterous Practices deserve; without being *restored* to the Dignity of his former State, or the Rights of a loyal Subject. In *Christianity* likewise, to be freed from the Charge of Guilt, and to be regarded as a righteous Person, are two several Blessings; really distinct in themselves, and often distinguished in Scripture.

Ther. Where are they distinguished? In what Texts of Scripture? This is what I called for—your scriptural Warrant.

Asp. What think You of *Job*'s Reply to his censorious Friends? *GOD forbid, that I should justify You †!* That He *forgave* them, there is no Doubt. Yet he could not *justify* them: could not allow their Reflections to be equitable, or their Behaviour charitable.

What think You of *Solomon*'s Supplication? *Then hear Thou in Heaven, and do, and judge thy Servants; condemning the Wicked, to bring his Way upon his Head; and justifying the Righteous, to give Him according to his Righteousness ‡.* To condemn, in this Passage, evidently signifies to pronounce guilty, and obnoxious to Punishment. By Parity of Reason, to *justify* must denote to pronounce Righteous, and intitled to Happiness.

* 2 Sam. xiv. 24.

† Job xxvii. 5. *Vos justos in Causâ vestrâ adversus me pronuntiem.* Schult.

‡ 1 Kings, viii. 32.

What says Solomon's Father? *Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant, O LORD! For, in thy Sight, shall no Man living be justified.* A Man might be *pardoned*, if judged according to the Tenour of his own Obedience, and found guilty. *Justified*, or declared righteous, He could not be, without the Imputation of some Righteousness better than his own.

From all which Passages I conclude, That to be justified or pronounced righteous, is different from, is superior to, the bare Remission of Sin.

Ther. All these Instances are derived from the *Old Testament*: the *New*, if I mistake not, speaks another Language. Consider the Case of the penitent *Publican*. What does He request? *G O D be merciful to me a Sinner!* What does He obtain? *He went down to his House justified* *. If then the Petition and the Grant may be deemed correspondent, Pardon and Justification must be reckoned equivalent.

Asp. The *Old* and the *New Testament* are, in their Style and Contents, exactly correspondent. *Echo*, in yonder Cloysters, does not more punctually reverberate the Speaker's Voice, than those divine Books harmonize with each other.

But it does not follow from the *Publican's* Request and *Publican's* Blessing, That Pardon and Justification are the same. Only, that *G O D's* Bounty frequently exceeds our Prayers, and is larger than our Expectations; or that the Blessing which we implored, and the Blessing which was vouchsafed, are inseparably connected, and always accompany each other.

St. Paul mentions *A Justification of Life*: not barely an Exemption from the Sentence of Death; but such a Justification, as gives a Title † to the Reward of Life. The Words are very emphatical. We shall injure the Dignity of their Meaning, if We understand them in a more contracted Sense. — Towards the Close of the same Chapter, We have another Passage, rich with Consolation, and full to our

* Luke xviii. 13, 14.

† Rom. v. 18. Δικαιωσις ζωης est Declaratio divina illa, qua Peccator, Mortis reus, Vitæ adjudicatur, idque jure. Bengel. in loc.

our Purpose. *Grace reigneth through Righteousness unto eternal Life* * : Here, is pointed out the *prime Source* of all our Blessings, infinitely free and rich of *Grace* : The *meritorious Cause*, not any Works of Man, not any Qualification of our own, but the perfect *Righteousness* of our *LORD JESUS CHRIST* : The *Effect* or *End* of all; which is, not barely an Absolution from Guilt, but an Instatement in Life; a Life of holy Communion with *GOD* in this World, to be crowned with an eternal Fruition of Him in another.

Let me produce one Text more, which just at this Instant occurs to my Memory. You will find it, in the Apostle's Defence of Himself, before *Festus* and *Agrippa*. He opens, as it were, his apostolical Commission, and repeats the Words of his royal *M A S T E R*. *I send thee to ignorant and enslaved, guilty and ruined Creatures; to turn them from Darknes to Light, and from the Power of Satan unto GOD; that they may receive Forgiveness of Sins, and Inheritance among all them which are sanctified by Faith that is in me* †. The great Preacher of the *Gentiles*, or rather the supreme *LORD* of all Preachers, has distinguished between *Remission of Sins*, and the *Inheritance of Saints*; between the *Pardon* that delivers from Hell, and the *Justification* that intitles to Heaven. So that the former does by no means constitute the latter; but is connected ‡ with it, as a Link in the same sacred Chain; or concluded in it, as Part of the same glorious Whole.

Ther. Admitting your Distinction to be just, Is not the Satisfaction, made by the Death of *CHRIST*, sufficient of *itself* to obtain, both our full Pardon and our final Happiness?

Asp. Since my Friend has started the Question, I may venture, with all Reverence to the divine Councils, to answer in the Negative: it being necessary, that the *REDEEMER* of Men should *obey*, as well as *suffer*, in their Stead.—For this we have the

* Rom. v. 21.

† Acts xxvi. 18.

‡ Vid. *Wits. Oecon. Lib. III. Cap. viii. Sect. 46*

'Testimony of our LORD Himself. *This Commandment*, says He, *have I received of my FATHER, that I should lay down my Life* *. *Thus it becometh Us*, adds He in another Place, *to fulfil all Righteousness* †. To which his Apostle subjoins; that, if *We reign in Life*, it must be, not only through those Sufferings which expiate, but also *through that Righteousness* ‡ which merits.

Ther. Our LORD's Testimony relates only to a *positive* Institution, and is quite foreign to your Purpose.—I have often been disgusted at such strained Applications of Scripture. The Partizans of a System wrest the Holy Book. They deal with divine Truth, as the Tyrant *Procrustes* served those unhappy Creatures, who fell into his merciless Hands. Is a Text too short, to suit their Purpose? Our *Procrustean* Expositors can stretch it on the Rack, and lengthen its Sense. Is it too full, to consist with their Scheme? They can lop off a Limb, secrete a Sentence, or contract the Meaning.—Is this to reverence the great GOD? Is this to treat respectfully the divine Word?

Asp. I have been grieved, I assure You, and disgusted at this Practice, as well as Yourself. A Practice not only very irreverent, but very injudicious also. It really prejudices the Cause, it would unfairly recommend. Such a Support, is like *a broken Tooth, or a Foot out of joint* ||; not only unserviceable, but hurtful; an Obstruction, rather than a Furtherance.—However I am not conscious of committing any Violence on this Passage, or of forcing it into my Service. The Circumstance You object, rather strengthens, than invalidates the Conclusion. If it was so requisite for our blessed MEDIATOR, to observe a *positive* Institution; how much more necessary, to fulfil those *moral* Precepts, whose Obligation is unalterable and everlasting.

Besides; it should be considered, Whether *CHRIST's* Sufferings were a complete Satisfaction of the Law? Complete they were, with regard to the *Penalty*, not with regard to the *Precept*. A Distinction obvious and important. From whence arises the following Argument;

* John. x. 18.

† Matt. iii. 15.

‡ Rom. v. 17.

|| Prov. xxv. 19.

ment; which, for once, You will allow me to propose in the *logical* Form.

By what alone the Law was not satisfied; by that alone Sinners could not be justified:

By *CHRIST*'s Sufferings alone, the Law was not satisfied.

Therefore, by *CHRIST*'s Sufferings alone, Sinners could not be justified.

But when We join the active with the passive Obedience of our LORD; the Efficacy of the One, with the Perfection of the Other; how does our Justification stand firm, in the *fullest* Sense of the Word? We have *all* that the Law demands, both for our Exemption from the Curse, and as a Title to the Blessing.

Ther. Does not the Scripture ascribe the *Whole* of our Salvation to the Death of *CHRIST*? Delivering it, as a never to be forgotten Maxim in *Christianity*; That *We have Redemption through his Blood* *: are brought near through the Blood of *CHRIST* †: nay, that *We are justified* (the very Point under Debate) *through his Blood* ‡.

—Would the inspired Writer have assigned these *various* Blessings to this *one* Cause; if it had been a Price inadequate to the Purchase, or a Means insufficient to accomplish the End?

Asp. This *Part* of our LORD's meritorious Humiliation, is, by a very usual Figure, put for the *Whole*. The Death of *CHRIST* includes, not only his Sufferings, but his Obedience. The shedding of his precious Blood, was at once the grand Instance of his Suffering, and the finishing Act of his Obedience. In this View it is considered, and thus it is interpreted, by his own Ambassador. Who, speaking of his divine MASTER, says, *He was obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross* §.

By the same Figure, Faith is sometimes said to be a lively influential Belief, *That CHRIST died for our Sins* ||. At other Times, it is represented, as a firm practical Belief, *That GOD hath raised Him from the Dead* ¶. Neither of which can, without the utmost Contrarie-

* Eph. i. 7.
§ Phil. ii. 8.

† Eph. ii. 13.
|| 1 Cor. xv. 3.

‡ Rom. v. 9.
¶ Rom. x. 9.

ty to the Analogy of Scripture, be taken in the *exclusive* Sense. Each Act must be understood, not separately, but jointly. Each as implying both, or reciprocally inferring one another.

In like manner, when the Scripture ascribes our Justification to the Death of *CHRIST*; We are not to think, that it would *set aside*, but *imply* his Obedience. It is not because his active Obedience has no Concern, in procuring the Blessing; but because his bitter Passion was the most conspicuous, and the completing Stage of his ever glorious Undertaking. Then, and not till then, He could truly say; FATHER, *I have finished the Work, Thou gavest me to do* *.

Ther. According to your Account then, it should be possible for a Man to have all his Sins done away, yet not attain to *complete* Justification. Which is as contrary to sound Sense, and true Divinity, as to imagine, that Crookedness may be removed, and the Object now become straight.

Asp. No, *Theron*. According to my Account, it is impossible, that the active and passive Obedience of our REDEEMER should be disjoined. To whomsoever the one is imputed, from Him the other is not withheld. They were *undivided* in *CHRIST* the illustrious Head, and they are *undivided* in their Application to his mystical Body. As *CHRIST* in Suffering obeyed, and in Obeying suffered; so, whoever receives *CHRIST* as an Atonement, receives Him also as Righteousness.

This has been observed before; and if this be real Fact, what an *inestimable precious* Gift, is the Gift of *CHRIST*! Never was the most sovereign Remedy, so admirably suited to any Malady, as this is adapted to all our Wants. In HIM may We be found, living and dying! How safe, how happy then!—Let me not weary your Patience, if I repeat a Passage from our excellent Dr. *Lightfoot*. Which, though artless and remarkably simple, has very much affected my Mind; and, I hope, will leave some valuable Impression on my Friend's.

“ Justification, says that judicious Divine, is a Man's
“ being

* John xvii. 4.

“ being interested in all *CHRIST*’s Righteousness. And
 “ if any Thing is to be longed for, sure that is, to
 “ be interested in *all CHRIST*’s Righteousness.”

Ther. You don’t weary my Patience; neither do
 You satisfy my Doubts. For You take no Notice of the
Absurdity objected, and the Comparison that inforces it.

Asp. Your Comparison, my dear Friend, is not
 founded on a *parallel* Case. Neither Sense, nor Phi-
 losophy find a Medium, between the Removal of
 Crookedness, and the Succession of Straightness. But
 Reason discerns an *apparent*, and Revelation maintains
 an *important* Difference, between the Pardon of Guilt,
 and a Title to Life. This has already been proved
 from Scripture; and is, to me at least, evident from
 the very Nature of Things. For, if a King, in Fa-
 vour of some condemned Malefactor, revokes the *Sen-
 tence* of Death, this is one very considerable Act of
 Clemency. But if He pleases to make the pardoned
 Criminal a *Partaker* of his Kingdom, or an *Heir* of
 his Crown: This surely is a new, and a much higher
 Instance of royal Bounty.

If You insist upon a *Similitude*, the holy Word of
 GOD, which always speaks with consummate Propri-
 ety, will furnish Us with one. *Zechariah* illustrates
 the Doctrine of Justification. He represents the Sin-
 ner, by a Person arrayed in *filthy Garments*. His Par-
 don is described by *taking away* this sordid Apparel.
 By which Benefit, He ceases to be defiled; yet is He
 not hereby clothed; yet is He not hereby justified.
 This is an additional Blessing; signified by putting on
*Change of Raiment**, and wearing beautiful Robes.—
 Here, the Circumstances tally. The two constituent
 Parts of Justification, are severally displayed, and strong-
 ly marked. Here We have the Removal of Filth, and
 the Robe of Righteousness; that which frees Us from
 being abhorred, and that which renders Us accepted.
 Which, though distinguishable in themselves, and dis-
 tinguished by the sacred Writer, are always united in
 the divine Donation.

Ther. This Notion is founded on a *chimerical Cove-
 nant*

* Zech. iii. 3, 4, 5.

nant, that *CHRIST* would take upon Him the Obedience due from Man, of which there is not the least Intimation in holy Scripture.

Asp. That *CHRIST* undertook to do every Thing necessary, to redeem lost Sinners from Guilt and Condemnation; every Thing necessary, to procure for attainted Rebels a fresh Title to Life and Glory; this, I think, cannot be called chimerical, and this is what we mean by *The Covenant of Grace*.—Without *undertaking* this, I see not how our LORD could sustain the Character of a *Surety*; nor, without *fulfilling* it, how He could execute the Office of a REDEEMER.

To this great Transaction, there are frequent Allusions in Scripture. Whence is it, that Believers are said to have been given by the FATHER to *CHRIST*? *Thine they were, and Thou gavest Them to me* *. Does not such Language, suppose the Existence of some previous Contract, and refer to one of its delightful Articles?—With what Kind of Justice could the FATHER lay † our Iniquities upon the holy *JESUS*, unless He had *consented* to be answerable for our Guilt?

In the Prophecy of *Zechariah*, this Covenant and the Parties are particularly mentioned. *The Counsel of Peace shall be between them both* ‡: The mysterious and unsearchable

* John xvii. 6.

† Isai. liii. 6.

‡ Zech. vi. 12, 13. These two Verses contain a brief, but very fine Description of the REDEEMER; of his Person, his Office, and his Glory; together with the noble Cause, and blessed Fruit of our Redemption.

His Person: He is the *Man*; or, as the *Hebrew* imports, the *real*, but, at the same Time, the *illustrious* Man.—*Whose Name is the Branch*; being the new Origin of a new Race; the Father of a spiritual Seed, who are Children, not of the Flesh, but of the Promise.—A Branch that shall spring, not from a common Root, not from any human Planting, but *מִתַּחַתָּי* from under Himself; being born of a pure Virgin, and by the Power of his own SPIRIT, He shall be both Stock and Stem to Himself.

His Office: It is to *build the Temple*, the Church of the Elect; which is the House of the living GOD. In which He dwells, and by Whom He is worshipped. Laying the Foundation of this spiritual Edifice in his Cross, and cementing it with his Blood.—Which He shall rule as a *King*, after having redeemed it as a

Priest;

searchable Contrivance for the Recovery of ruined Man, as it has been concerted, shall be carried in Execution——by Whom? By the LORD Almighty, or GOD the FATHER; and that illustrious Person, who is to *build the Temple, and bear the Glory*. A Character, which None can claim; a Task, to which None is equal; but the blessed JESUS only.

In *Psalm* the xlth, the *Conditions* of the Covenant are circumstantially recorded: Which were the Incarnation and Obedience of the eternal SON: *A Body hast thou prepared me. Lo! I come to do thy Will**.—The *Accomplishment* of these Conditions, is alledged and pleaded by our great MEDIATOR, in the Introduction to his last solemn Prayer †. What He implores, in the Process of his Supplications, may be looked upon as the *Recompence* ‡, decreed Him by the FATHER, and stipulated in this glorious Treaty. *Implores*, did I say? 'Tis very observable, that our LORD makes a *Demand*, rather than a *Request*. The Expression is not *ερωτω*, but *θελω* ||: A Word of Authority, not of Supplication. He claims what, by the FATHER's Engagement, and his own Obedience, was become his unquestionable Right.

Ther.

Priest; uniting the sacerdotal Censer with the regal Diadem, and being a *Priest upon his Throne*. Hence proceeds his *Glory*: For, He *stands* not, like other Priests, offering daily the same Oblations; but having, by one Sacrifice, obtained eternal Redemption for Us, is *set* down at the Right-hand of the MAJESTY on High.

What is the *Cause* of these great Events? What, but that most sacred and august Convention, *the Council of Peace*? Which was settled *between them both*: between the LORD JEHOVAH on one Hand, and the Man whose Name is the *Branch*, on the other — Called a *Counsel*, from the intire Consent, which actuated each Party; and the transcendent Wisdom, displayed in the whole Scheme.—The *Counsel of Peace*, because of its sovereign Efficacy, to make Peace with an offended GOD, Peace in accusing the Conscience, Peace among People of jarring Tempers and discordant Principles.

* Heb. x. 5, 7.

† John xvii.

‡ This *Recompence* is specified and promised, in another authentic Copy of the same grand Treaty, recorded *Isai. xli. 1—6*.

|| Not I *beg*, but I *will*. *Sic volo, sic jubeo*.

Ther. This you call the Covenant of Grace: But if We are justified by *CHRIST*'s fulfilling of the Law, We are justified by Works. So that, before You can strike out such a Way of Salvation, You must *contradict* yourself: And what is more adventurous, You must abolish that fundamental Principle of the Gospel; *By the Works of the Law, shall no Flesh be justified.*

Asp. I grant it, *Theron*: We are justified by Works. But whose? The Works of *CHRIST*, not our own. And this is very far from contradicting Ourselves; equally far is it from abolishing what You call the *Gospel-principle*. Which, though an undeniable Truth, is not an evangelical Doctrine. Because, it only shews Us our ruined State, and the utter Impossibility of relieving Ourselves. Whereas, nothing is *genuine* Gospel, but what speaks Recovery and Comfort.

Between the Covenant of Works, and the Covenant of Grace, this, I apprehend, is the Difference: By the former, Man was indispenfibly bound to obey, in his *own Person*. By the latter, the Obedience of *his Surety* is accepted, instead of his own. The Righteousness required by both, is not *sincere*, but *complete*; not proportioned to the Abilities of fallen Man, but to the Purity of the Law, and the Majesty of the Law-giver.—By this Means, the Glory of GOD as an awful Sovereign, and the Glory of his Law as an inviolable System, are intirely preserved and illustriously displayed. The Salvation of Sinners, neither clashes with the Truth, nor interferes with the Justice of the supreme LEGISLATOR. On the contrary, it becomes a *faithful* and *just* * Procedure of the most High GOD, to justify *Him that believeth on JESUS*.

Ther. When You make this Difference between the two Covenants, where is your Authority from Scripture? Which of the sacred Writers have taught Us, that, though one demanded personal, the other is content with *vicarious* Obedience?

Asp. Which, *Theron*?—*The first Three*. The most eminent Historian; the most inraptured Poet; and the most

* 1 John i. 9.

DIALOGUE X. 303

most zealous Preacher. I need not inform You, that I mean *Moses, David, and Paul.*

The Testimony of *David* has been already recited. — *Moses* gives Us a concise, but very instructive Account of the second Covenant. With *Whom*, according to his Representation, was it made? Not with *Adam*, or any of his Posterity; but with the LORD *JESUS CHRIST*, in the Room and Stead of both. None of the Articles are proposed to a poor, impotent, ruined Creature; but the whole is consigned over to the interposing SAVIOUR, significantly described by *the Seed of the Woman*. It is not said, “Thy best Endeavours, O *Adam*, thy true Repentance and sincere Obedience, shall retrieve this fatal Miscarriage; but, *the Seed of the Woman shall bruise the Serpent’s Head**: the SON of the MOST HIGH, by taking thy Nature, submitting to thy Obligations, and suffering Death for thy Sins, shall fully repair thy Loss.”

CHRIST, We see, undertook to execute the Conditions. *CHRIST* was our Representative in this great Transaction. For which Reason He is stiled by St. *Paul*, *The second Man*†, and *the Surety of a better Covenant*‡ — Our Help being laid upon ONE, that is so mighty; upon ONE, that is so faithful; the Covenant is said to be, *In all Things well ordered and sure*||. Admirably well ordered indeed, for the Comfort of the *Christian*, and the Security of his Salvation. — “ ’Tis true, may He argue, I cannot fulfil the Conditions; and ’tis equally true, that this is not required at my Hands. The LORD *JESUS CHRIST*, of his adorably rich Goodness, has performed all that was conditional §; and has established for me, and for his People,

* Gen. iii. 15.

† 1 Cor. xv. 48.

‡ Heb. vii. 22.

|| 2 Sam. xxiii. 5.

§ *Witsius*, instead of representing the *Covenant of Grace* as a chimerical Thing, most affectionately and charmingly displays its Excellency; *Si quicquam ergo attentissima Consideratione dignum cense-ri debeat, sane id Fœdus Gratiæ est. Hic Via ostenditur ad meliorem terrestri Paradisum, & ad certiore[m] stabilioremque Fœlicitatem, eâ qua Adamus excidit. Hic nova Spes perditis Mortalibus allucet, quæ*

“ ple, a *valid Title* to the Promises, the Privileges, and——

Ther. “ Has thereby released me from all Obligation “ to Duty.”——Farewel then to our own Obedience. No more Occasion for any Holiness of Life. Fine Divinity truly! Should I not rather say? Downright *Antinomianism*!

Asp. No, my Friend: *CHRIST came not to destroy the Law, but to fulfil* †. He has fulfilled it, to the very uttermost, in his own Person. He has also merited for Us, and conveys to Us those Supplies of the SPIRIT, which alone can enable Us to yield faithful and acceptable Obedience. *Of his Fulness We all receive, and Grace for Grace* ‡: For every Grace in Himself, He stamps a corresponding Grace on his People, and so conforms them to the Example of his Holiness.

What is the Tenour of this Covenant? “ *I will put my Laws into their Minds, and on their Hearts will I write them* §. They shall *discern* such a Beauty and “ *Glory* in my Precepts, as will *engage* their Desires, “ and *win* their Affections. So that it shall be no longer their Burden, but their Delight, even their Meat “ and Drink, to do the Will of their FATHER in “ Heaven.”—This, this is one of the Privileges purchased by our great MEDIATOR. And to me it seems wondrous strange, that the Purchase of an Estate for any Person, should be reckoned the sure Means, to deprive him of the Possession, or debar him from the Enjoyment.

How often is this *weak Surmise* urged as an Argument? All whose Plausibility is owing, to a palpable Mistake, or an egregious Fallacy: to a supposed Separation of Things, which are absolutely inseparable; I mean

quæ eo gratior esse debet, quo inexpectatior obvenit. Hic Conditiones offeruntur, quibus æterna Salus annexa est; Conditiones non a Nobis rursus præstandæ, quod Animum despondere faceret; sed ab EO, qui Vitâ non excedet, antequam vere dixerit, Consummatum est.

De Oecon. Lib. II. Cap. 1.

† Matt. v. 17.

‡ John i. 16.

§ Heb. viii. 10, 11.

I mean, our Justification and our Sanctification *. You are a Philosopher, *Theron*. Try, if You can separate *Gravity* from the Stone, or *Heat* from the Fire. If those Causes and their correspondent Effects, if these Bodies and their essential Properties, are indissolubly connected; so are a genuine Faith, and a conscientious Obedience. To suppose them disunited, is as contrary to *sound Divinity*; as it would be contrary to *true Philosophy*, if you should talk of a burning Substance that has no Warmth, or of a solid Substance that has no Weight.—Never therefore, my dear Friend, repeat this *stale* Objection; never propagate this *ungrounded* Clamour; nor adopt a Caviel, which is altogether as unphilosophical †, as it is anti-evangelical.

Ther. We digress from the Point. My principal Objection is not satisfied. I was observing that, according

* See *Isai.* xlv. 24. 1 *Cor.* i. 30. 1 *Cor.* vi. 11. Where these Blessings walk Hand in Hand; and never *were*, never *will*, never *can* be parted.

† This puts me in mind of what *Theodorus* replied to *Philocles*; who was often insinuating, that He preached *licentious* Doctrine; because he enlarged, with peculiar Assiduity, upon Faith in *JESUS CHRIST*; and frequently chose such Texts as, *Believe in the LORD JESUS, and Thou shalt be saved.*

“ I preach Salvation by *JESUS CHRIST*; and give me “ Leave to ask, Whether You know, what Salvation by *CHRIST* “ means?”—*Philocles* paused. He began to blush; would have eluded the Question, and declined an Answer —“ No, said “ *Theodorus*: You must permit me to insist upon a Reply. Because, if it be a *right* one, it will justify me and my Conduct: “ if it be a *wrong* one, it will prove, that You blame You know “ not what; and have more Reason to inform yourself, than to “ censure others.”

This disconcerted him still more. Upon which *Theodorus* proceeded. “ Salvation by *CHRIST* means, not only a Deliver- “ ance from the *Guilt*, but also from the *Power* of Sin. *HE* “ *gave Himself for Us, that He might redeem Us from all Ini-* “ *quity; redeem Us from our vain Conversation, as well as deli-* “ *ver Us from the Wrath to come.*—Go now, *Philocles*, and “ tell the World, that by teaching these Doctrines, I promote “ the Cause of Licentiousness. And You will be just as *ra-* “ *tional*, just as *candid*, just as *true*, as if You should affirm, “ That the *Firemen*, by playing the Engine, and pouring in Wa- “ ter, burnt your House to the Ground, and laid your Furniture “ in Ashes.”

ing to *your* Manner of stating the Affair, Salvation is no longer free, but founded upon Works.—They are the Works of the Law, though *CHRIST* performs them. To maintain, that We are justified by these Works, is to confound the Difference between the Law and the Gospel.

Asp. Though We should admit your Premises, We cannot acquiesce in your Conclusion. The same Righteousness, by which We are justified, is both legal and evangelical. *Legal*, in respect to *CHRIST*, who was made under the Law, that He might obey all its Commands. *Evangelical*, in respect to Us, who work not Ourselves, but believe in the great FULFILLER of all Righteousness.—This is much of the same Nature, with that other momentous Distinction in Divinity; Salvation is freely given, yet dearly bought. *Freely given*, with regard to Us; *dearly bought*, with regard to *CHRIST*. So, We are justified by Works, if You look forward to our Surety: We are justified *without* Works, if You cast a retrospective View on Ourselves.

Theron was silent. *Aspasio*, after a short Interval, renewed the Discourse. I know not, whether my Friend is yielding to my Arguments, or searching after Objections; deliberating upon a Capitulation, or mustering his Forces for a fresh Sally. However, let me take this Opportunity of dropping a Hint, and suggesting a Caution.

The grand Reason, which inclines some People to reject this comfortable Doctrine, lies concealed, if not in an absolute Disbelief of our LORD's eternal Glory and GODHEAD, yet in *unsettled* Apprehensions of it, or an habitual *Inattention* to it.—If our SAVIOUR was not really GOD, as some Writers, unhappily mistaken themselves, endeavour to persuade the World; it would be a reasonable Practice, and intirely consistent with their Scheme, to disavow the Imputation of his Righteousness. Because, upon such a Supposition, his Obedience was no more than bounden Duty; in which there could not be the least Pretence to Merit, and which could be profitable to None but Himself.—

Whereas,

Whereas, if We verily believe Him to be the incarnate GOD, his Submission to the Law becomes an Act of *voluntary* Humiliation. Which Circumstance, together with the *transcendent* Dignity of his Person, render his Obedience, not meritorious only, but inexpressibly and *infinitely* meritorious.

As the Blood of *CHRIST* is called GOD's *own Blood* * ; so the Obedience of *CHRIST* was performed in the Person of that adorable MEDIATOR, *who is GOD over all* †. He acted through the whole Course of his Life, and suffered Death at the last, not merely as Man, but as GOD-Man ; as JEHOVAH-JESUS ; IMMANUEL.—Let me intreat You to remember, nay, let me intreat You never to forget, this *all-important* Article of our Faith. And may the blessed SPIRIT of Wisdom give Us an Understanding, to know the weighty, the extensive Influence of so glorious a Truth !

Ther. Far be it from me, to derogate from the Dignity of our SAVIOUR's Person, or to depreciate the Merits of his mediatorial Office. Place them as high, as Words can reach ; exalt them as far, as Thought can soar ; I stedfastly believe, You will still fall short, unmeasurably short of their real Worth.—But this Consideration seems to increase the Absurdity of your Notion. For, if *CHRIST*'s Righteousness, *his very* Righteousness be imputed ; then, the true Believers are altogether as righteous as *CHRIST* himself. Whereas, if You maintain, that his Righteousness is imputed only *as to its Effects*, You will keep clear of this Rock.

Asp. This, I fear, will be like keeping clear of *Scylla*, only to fall foul upon *Charybdis*.—What are the Effects of the MEDIATOR's Righteousness ? Pardon of Sin, Justification of our Persons, and the Sanctification of our Nature. Shall We say, These Effects, these Benefits are imputed ?—To *talk* of their Imputation, I think, is an Affront to sound Sense ; as, I am sure, to be *put off* with their Imputation, would be a fatal Disappointment of our Hopes.—All these Benefits

are

* Acts xx. 38.

† Rom. ix. 5.

are not imputed, but imparted ; they are not reckoned to Us, but are really enjoyed by Us ; ours they are, not barely in the divine Estimation, but by proper and personal Possession.

Yet, it does by no means follow, that Believers are altogether as righteous, as *CHRIST* Himself : unless You can prove, that to be the *Receiver* is, in all Respects, the same as to be the *Author* and *Finisher*.—The Righteousness of *CHRIST* arises wholly from *Himself*, the Source of ours subsists in Another. *CHRIST*'s Righteousness is originally and absolutely *his own* ; whereas, it is made ours in a way of Favour and gracious Imputation. Circumstances these, which create a material Difference, which yield Room for a vast Pre-eminence.

Ther. But if *CHRIST*'s perfect Obedience be accounted ours, methinks, We should have no more Need of pardoning Mercy, than *CHRIST* himself.

Asp. Yes ; because, *before* this Imputation, We were sunk in Guilt, and dead in Sins. Because, *after* it, We are defective in our Duty, and in many Things offend.

Ther. Does not this Doctrine render the *Intercession* of our SAVIOUR *superfluous* ? What Occasion have *they* for an Advocate with the FATHER, whose Righteousness has neither Blemish nor Imperfection ?

Asp. They stand in need of an Advocate ; first that they may be brought Home to the *REPAIRER* of *their Breaches* *, and made Partakers of his Righteousness by a living Faith. Next, that their Faith may be preserved, notwithstanding all Opposition, steadfast and immoveable ; or rather, may be carried on, victorious and triumphant, even to the End.

Ther. You say, *CHRIST* performed all that was *conditionary* ; then He repented for Us, and believed for Us. This must be admitted in Pursuance of your Principles. But this is so wild a Notion, so contrary to Reason and Scripture, that to mention it, is to refute it.



D I A L O G U E X. 309

Asp. *CHRIST* performed whatever was required by the Covenant of Works, both before it was violated, and after it had been transgressed. But neither *Repentance* nor *Faith* were comprehended in this Institution. It knew nothing of the One, and it would not admit of the other.—It was not therefore necessary, neither indeed was it possible, for our spotless and divine LORD to repent of Sin, or believe in a SAVIOUR. But he did unspeakably more. *He put away Sin by the Sacrifice of Himself*†; He is Himself the SAVIOUR of all the Ends of the Earth; and He has Power to bestow that blessed SPIRIT, which worketh Faith, and produceth Repentance.

Ther. However, from what You have advanced, *this* will unavoidably follow—That a Man is to be justified, under the Character of a notorious Transgressor of the Law; and justified under the Character of a sinless Observer of the Law. And what is this, but a *glaring Inconsistency*?

Asp. Not at all inconsistent, but absolutely needful, if We consider those distinct Branches of the divine Law, the *preceptive* and the *penal*. Both which, in case of Guilt already contracted, must necessarily be satisfied.—Not at all inconsistent, but perfectly harmonious, if We take in the two *constituent Parts* of Justification, The Acquittance from Guilt, and a Title to Life. The former supposes Us to be Transgressors of the Law; and such the highest Saints in the World are. The latter requires Us to be Observers of the Law; and such must the Inheritors of Heaven be.—Much less is this inconsistent, if We consider Believers in their *personal* and *relative* Capacity; as they are in themselves, and as they are in their Surety. Notorious Transgressors in Themselves, they have a sinless Obedience in *CHRIST*. The Consciousness of *that*, will be an everlasting Motive to Humility; the Belief of *this*, an inexhaustible Source of Joy.

All this is no more inconsistent, than the Union of a gloomy Contexture, and a lightsome Splendor, in those

† Heb. ix. 26.

310 DIALOGUE X.

those detached Clouds, which float amidst the Firmament. In themselves, they are a *louring* and *dark* Collection of Vapours; by the Impression of the Sunbeams, they are *fair* and *bright* as the polished Silver.

Ther. After all, the Imputation taught in Scripture, is not the Imputation of *CHRIST's* Righteousness, but of our *own Faith*. Agreeably to the Apostle's express Declaration, *Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed to Him for Righteousness**.

Asp. This Objection admits the Thing in Dispute, though it controverts the Way and Manner of obtaining it. Admits the Necessity of some *active, positive* Righteousness, in order to our Justification. In this Particular, I am glad to agree with my *The-ron*: and in this Particular, I believe, the Generality of serious People agree with Us both.—Whenever their Consciences are awakened, and seek to establish the Hope of eternal Life, they constantly turn their Eyes to *some* Righteousness: which, they apprehend, may, either in Whole or in Part, answer the Demands of the Law. Some look to their own *sincere* Obedience. Others call in to their Succour Works of *Supererogation*. My Friend would assign this Office to his *Faith*.

Ther. Is this a proper Answer to my Objection, *Aspasio*? The Text is point blank against Your Tenet. You do wisely therefore, not to confront, but to elude the Evidence.

Asp. I did not intend it for an Answer; only as an *occasional* Observation, which nevertheless has a pretty close Connection with the Subject.—Neither would I use so mean a Subterfuge, as to elude an Argument, which I could not confute. If my Friend had allowed me Leisure to explain myself, this should have been my Reply.

That a Man is not justified by Works, is a Position most clearly demonstrated, and a Doctrine most zealously inculcated by St. *Paul*. That Faith is a

Work,

* Rom. iii. 4.

DIALOGUE X. 311

Work *, exerted by the human Mind, is equally certain. Unless therefore We would render the Apostle inconsistent with himself, We must understand the Passage in a qualified Sense.—Why should We not suffer Him, to be his own Interpreter? Why should We not take the *Narrative* of his Experience, for a *Comment* on his Doctrine? He declares, that the Ground of his own Comfort, the Cause of his own Justification, was not the *Grace of Faith*, but *the Righteousness which is of GOD* by Faith. Not the Act of Believing, but that grand and glorious Object of a Sinner's Belief, *the LORD our Righteousness*.

Besides; what was that Faith of *Abraham*, to which the Apostle refers? and which He proposes as the invariable Model of our Justification?—It was Faith in the *promised Seed*; in *JESUS CHRIST* the Righteous ||. It was a firm Persuasion, that this illustrious Person should spring from his Loins; and be the Author of Forgiveness, Acceptance, and Salvation to Himself, and to a Multitude of Believers, numberless as the Stars of Heaven. Let Us tread in these Steps of the holy Patriarch, and We shall ascribe *little*, ascribe *nothing* to our Faith, but *all* to the infinitely excellent Obedience of our REDEEMER.

Ther. Sure, *Aspasio*, You will not presume to correct Inspiration! The inspired Writer makes no mention of a REDEEMER's Obedience. He says expressly and positively—*It*, that is, *Abraham's Faith*, and not any Thing else, *was counted unto Him for Righteousness*.

Asp. True, *Theron*; as those Windows are reckoned, are counted *the Lights* of your House. And why? Because they illuminate? No; but because they afford a Passage to the illuminating Rays. Through them, the first and best of Elements, is diffused into all your Habitation. So *We are saved by Grace through Faith*;
by

* So it is called by HIM, who knew what was in Man, and what were the Differences of Things; *This is the Work of GOD, that Ye believe on Him whom He hath sent.* John vi. 29.

|| Compare *Gen.* xv. 5, 6, with *Gal.* iii. 16.

312 DIALOGUE X.

by Grace imputing, through Faith accepting, the Righteousness of *JESUS CHRIST*. Grace is the magnificent Source of this nobler Light; Faith is the Means of transmitting it into all the Faculties of the Soul.

When our LORD declares to the diseased Woman, *Thy Faith hath made thee whole**: how are We to understand his Words? That the Patient's Belief, and not the Agency of *CHRIST*, wrought the Cure? To suppose this, would be extremely derogatory to the Power of our great Physician. And if We ascribe Justification to the Act of Believing, this will be equally derogatory to the Obedience of our great *MEDIATOR*. In the *former* Case, *CHRIST* and his omnipotent Operation, were All in All. In the *latter* Case, *CHRIST* and his infinite Merit, are All in All. In *both* Cases, Faith is only the Eye to discern, or the Hand to receive, the sovereign Good.

I would farther observe, That Faith is very particularly *distinguished* from the Righteousness which justifies. We read of the Righteousness which is *by* Faith, which is *of* Faith†. A Method of speaking which plainly denotes, that Faith itself is not our justifying Righteousness.—If Faith was the Cause of our Acceptance with GOD, then We should be justified by a Righteousness, which is confessedly *imperfect*. For, who has ever attained to the highest Degree of this Virtue? Or whose Faith is not mixed with an Alloy of Unbelief?—If Faith itself was the Matter of our Justification, I see not how Boasting could be *excluded*; how the Law could be *magnified*; or

* Matt. ix. 22.

† Rom. ix. 30. *Phil.* iii. 9. The Apostles, I believe, never make Use of such a Phrase as, δικαιωθεντες υπερ πισως, or δια την πισιν, but εκ πισως, or δια της πισως. Not *for*, or on *Account of*, our Faith, but *by* or *through* Faith. Making this Grace, not the procuring Cause, but only the Instrument of Application.—Such Language as the former, seems contrary to the sound Words of our LORD *JESUS CHRIST*. Yet, if *Tberon's* Sense of the Text under Debate were admitted, the Doctrine contained in this unscriptural and offensive Style, is the unavoidable Consequence.

or v
Th
er t
S
We
Conf
prev
Scri
A B
the
Fear
Act
Pass
the
lutel
strun
Th
mean
Let
not i
ble A
Barb
fitted
You
whic
emit
clude
As
Phras
that
whic
it fin
To
the f
We a
* p
contem
did O
sage m
† C
|| Psal.
Vo

DIALOGUE X. 313

or what Reason the Apostle could have, to account all Things, but the Righteousness of *C H R I S T*, meaner than Dross *.

Say not, that We presume to correct Inspiration. We only interpret the inspired Word in an *harmonious Consistency* with itself. This Sense is agreeable to the prevailing Doctrine, and to the current Language of Scripture — To the prevailing Doctrine; which is *A Believing in H I M, who justifieth the Ungodly* — To the current Language; As when *G O D* is called our *Fear* †, our *Hope* ‡, our *Joy* §. In these Places, the Act is undoubtedly put for the Object. So, in the Passage before Us, the *Act* of Faith seems to denote the *Object* of Faith. It is to be understood, not absolutely, but as some Divines speak, objectively, instrumentally, relatively.

Ther. In the Name of Wonder, what can You mean by this Heap of harsh and obscure Expressions! Let me intreat You, *Aspasio*, to speak in your own Style, not in the Dialect of *Aquinas*. I have an irreconcilable Aversion to these scholastic Terms. They are the *Barbarisms* of Divinity. I know but one Use they are fitted to serve; that is, to perplex and puzzle a Cause, You cannot maintain. Somewhat like the Liquor, which a certain Fish, when closely pursued, is said to emit: by which the Water is darkened, and the Foe eluded.

Asp. This, *Theron*, is the Meaning of our uncouth Phrases: It is not Faith itself, which justifies; but that Righteousness, which Faith continually *views*; which Faith delightfully *apprehends*; and on which it finally *terminates*.

To be plainer still — We are justified by Faith, in the same Manner, as We are fed by the Hand; or as We are said, to drink of a Cup. Neither the Hand

* *Phil.* iii. The original is *σκυβαλα*—A Word of the most contemptible Meaning; it signifies the *worthless* Scraps, and *for-did* Offals, that are cast to Dogs. The Reader may see this Passage more fully explained in *Letter V*.

† *Gen.* xxxi. 42. 53.

‡ *Psal.* lxxi. 5. *Jer.* xiv. 8

§ *Psal.* xliii. 4.

nor the Cup are the *Cause* of our Sustenance, but the *Instruments*, one of conveying it, the other of receiving it *. —If an Apostle affirms, *We are justified by Faith*: Faith itself declares, *In the LORD I have Righteousness*. Put these Passages together, and You will have the true Sense of our Doctrine, and the true Doctrine of the Gospel.

You remember, what recommended *Themistocles* to the Protection of King *Admetus*, when He fled from the Malice of his own Countrymen—Not his Name: that was obnoxious—Not his Actions; they had been hostile—But the Person of the *young Prince*; whom the distressed Refugee caught up in his Arms: and, charged with these Credentials, presented Himself to the royal Parent †. —So, Faith recommends to GOD, and justifies the Soul, not for itself, or its own Worth; but on Account of what it *presents*, and what it *pleads*.

Ther. Is not this a fanfiful Distinction, and an excessive Refinement? Has it any Foundation in Scripture?

Asp. It is implied in almost all the Representations of *CHRIST*, and all the Descriptions of Faith, which occur in the sacred Writings.

CHRIST

* Though I am intirely of *Thevon's* Mind and can by no means admire our *scholastic* Divines, or their *logical* Terms; yet a Remark from *Paræus*, couched in this Style, is so pertinent to the Purpose, and so full an Explication of the Point, that it would be an Injury to the Cause, not to make it a Part of my Notes. And some Readers I apprehend, not much acquainted with this old-fashioned Dialect, may be well enough pleased to view a Specimen; and like it, as they do the *Rust* of a *Medal*, merely for its Uncoothness and Antiquity.

“Faith justifies, says my Author, not *effectively*, as working an habitual Righteousness in Us; not *materially*, as though it were itself the constituent Cause of our Justification; but it justifieth *objectively* as it apprehendeth *CHRIST*; and *instrumentally*, as it applieth his Righteousness.”

† This, says *Plutarch*, was a Custom peculiar to that Country; was reckoned the most solemn Method of supplicating Favour; and *seldom* met with a Repulse. — To which I may add, It is a Custom that *Christians* should imitate, in all their Addresses to the GOD and FATHER of our *LORD JESUS CHRIST*. When thus used, thus improved, it will *never* fail of Success.

CHRIST is likened to *Clothing*; and Believers are said to *have put on CHRIST* *. Now, it cannot be the Act of putting on, that covers our Bodies, or keeps them warm; but the commodious Garment, which is wore.—He is compared to *Bread*: *I am the Bread of Life* †. Is it the Act of Eating, that strengthens the Constitution, and recruits our Spirits? No surely; but the Food eaten and digested.—*CHRIST* was typified by the *City of Refuge* ‡: and Sinners, by the obnoxious Man-slayer. Who, if He fled to one of those privileged Abodes, and there remained, was safe. No Prosecution against Him could be valid: He had nothing to fear from the Avenger of Blood. In this Case, was it the bare Act of flying, that screened the Criminal? By no Means: this *conveyed* Him to a Place of Security. But the *Place* || *itself* was his Sanctuary, his Asylum, his Safeguard.

Faith is stiled, *A Receiving of CHRIST* ¶: *As many as received Him, to them gave He Power*, or granted the Privilege, *to become the Sons of GOD*. The Office of Faith is, according to this Definition, not to contribute its Quota, much less to depostite the whole Sum, but to take and use the inestimable Gift.—Faith is called, *A looking unto JESUS* §; in Allusion, I suppose, to the famous Expedient, provided for the wounded *Israelites* †. Our crucified LORD was pre-

* Gal. iii. 27. † John vi. 35. ‡ Num. xxxv. 13.

|| This seems to be a very expressive Type of the REDEEMER. If We Sinners fly to *CHRIST* and abide in *CHRIST*, there is no *Condemnation* for Us. The Accusations of Satan cannot affect Us, nor the Curses of the Law reach Us.

¶ *John* i. 12. See also *Rom.* v. 17. Where a Critic of accurate Judgment, and delicate Taste (though little known in *England*) makes this Remark on the Word *λαμβάνοντες*, *Non justificat Actus sumendi, quatenus est Actus; sed illud quod sumitur aut apprehenditur.* Bengelius in loc.—His Annotations on the New Testament are comprised in a small Quarto Volume. They present the Reader with many refined Observations, on the Elegancies of the Style, and the Sublimity of the Doctrines. They are a Pattern of the *concise* Manner; and which is, perhaps, the *crowning* Excellency, they all along indicate a Heart warm and glowing with the Love of its Subject.

§ Heb. xii. 2.

† Num. xxi. 8.

316 DIALOGUE X.

figured by the brazen Serpent; our Guilt, by the Stings of the fiery Serpents; and our Faith, by looking to the miraculous Remedy. Did the healing Power, I would ask, reside in the mere Act of Viewing? No: but in the Emblem of a dying SAVIOUR, elevated on the Pole, and ordained for the Recovery of the People. *Here* all the Efficacy was lodged. *From hence* it was all derived. The Action of the Eye, like the Office of Faith, was only to fetch home, and apply the sanative Virtue.

Once more; Faith is represented as *laying hold on* GOD our SAVIOUR *; *leaning upon* our BELOVED †; *cleaving to* the LORD ‡.—Please to take Notice of yonder Vine. Its Shoots are weak, and its Branches flimsy. Being absolutely unable to support themselves, they are furnished with a very remarkable Set of *Claspers*. Which, like so many Fingers, lay hold on the Pegs of the Wall, or fasten themselves to the Poles within their Reach. Without such a Provision, the Boughs must lie prostrate on the Ground, and by exposed to the Insults of every Foot. Whereas, be this kind Contrivance of Nature, so *creeping* a Plant, will climb into the Air, and enjoy the Breeze; so *feeble* a Plant, will stand out the Winter, and defy the Storms.—An instructive Admonition to Sinners! And no contemptible Illustration of Faith, especially in its principal and most distinguishing Employ! Thus let Us apprehend the blessed JESUS; hold Us fast by our adored REDEEMER; cleave to His ineffable Worthiness, as those twining Tendrils, by repeated Circumvolutions, adhere to their substantial Supporters. Then shall We rise, by Merits *not our own*, from the most abject and miserable Condition, to a State of everlasting Honour and Joy.

Ther. Some People, I believe, would hardly forbear smiling at the Peculiarity of your Diction; and might be inclined to call your Discourse *Canting*, rather than *Reasoning*. For my own Part, I must acknowledge, that, as all your peculiar Phrases are derived

* *Isai.* xxvii. 5.† *Cant.* viii. 5.‡ *Acts* xi. 23.

rived from the Scriptures, I hear them with Reverence, rather than any Disposition to sneer. Was my Friend delivering a *Latin* Oration, it would be a sufficient Warrant for any of his Expressions, to prove that they came from the *Ciceronian* Mint. And will it not be, at least, an equally sufficient Authority, for any Modes of Speech used in a *theological* Essay, to alledge that they bear the Stamp of the *Bible*.

Though I make no Objection to your Language, I have yet another Scruple with regard to your Doctrine. —Do the *antient Fathers* acknowledge or inculcate this imputed Righteousness? If it was so important an Article of our Faith, surely it could not be *unknown* in those early Ages, which were so near the apostolical Fountain. It would not have been *omitted* by those zealous Preachers, who chose to endure all the Rigours of Persecution, rather than renounce their holy Profession.

Asp. I think, it were sufficient to answer this Question, by asking another—Do the Apostles, does the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD speaking in Scripture, inculcate this Doctrine, or display this Privilege? If so, We need not be very solicitous for any farther Authority. *To the Law, and to the Testimony**, is our grand, our final Appeal. Amidst all the Darkness and Uncertainty, which evidently run through the Writings of the best of Men, this is our unspeakable Happiness, That *We have a more sure Word of Prophecy; to which We do well to take heed*†.

However; to be a little more particular—It cannot be expected, that We should find many Passages in those pious Authors, very strong and very explicit, upon the Point. Because, in their Days, it was not so professedly opposed; and therefore could not be so exactly discussed, as in later Ages. Nevertheless, they have left enough behind them, to avouch the Substance of what We assert; That *a Man is not justified by any Works, Duties, or Righteousness of his own, but only by Faith in JESUS CHRIST*.—I cannot say, that I have charged my Memory with their very Words; and for

* *Isai.* viii. 20.

† *2 Pet.* i. 19.

that Reason, must not attempt at present to make any Citation. But, when a proper Opportunity offers, and their Works are before me, I may possibly produce a few of their Testimonies.

In the mean Time, I can mention a Set of Writers, whose Attestation will, I imagine, carry as much Weight with my Friend, as the united Voice of the *Greek* and *Latin* Fathers.

Ther. Who are they?

Asp. Our venerable *Reformers*. The Homilies composed by those excellent Divines, are as express to my Purpose, as they are unexceptionable in their Evidence. This is their Language——“ The true understanding
“ of this Doctrine, *We be justified freely by Faith with-*
“ *out Works*, is not, that this our *Act to believe*, or this
“ our Faith in *CHRIST*, doth justify Us: for that
“ were to count Ourselves to be justified by some
“ Act or Virtue, that is *within Ourselves*. But the
“ true Meaning thereof, is, That although We hear
“ GOD’s Word, and believe it; although We have
“ Hope and Faith, Charity and Repentance, and do
“ never so many good Works: Yet we must re-
“ nounce the Merit of all our Virtues and good Deeds,
“ as Things that be far too weak and insufficient to
“ deserve Remission of Sin, and our Justification. We
“ must trust only in GOD’s Mercy, and that Sacri-
“ fice which our High Priest and Saviour *JESUS*
“ *CHRIST*, the SON of GOD, offered for Us upon
“ the Cross.”

The Homily subjoins a very apposite Illustration; which may conclude our Discourse with perfect Propriety, and I hope with equal Efficacy.——“ So that
“ as St. *John Baptist*, although He were never so vir-
“ tuous and godly a Man, yet in the Matter of for-
“ giving Sin, He did put the People from him, and
“ appoint them unto *CHRIST*; saying thus unto
“ them, Behold! Yonder is the *LAMB of GOD*, which
“ *taketh away the Sins of the World*: Even so, as great
“ and as godly a Virtue as the lively Faith is, yet it
“ *putteth Us from itself*, and remitteth Us unto *CHRIST*,
“ for to have only by Him Remission of Sins or Justi-
“ fication.

“ fication. So that our Faith in *CHRIST*, as it were,
 “ faith unto Us thus, It is not I that take away your
 “ Sins, but it is *CHRIST* only; and to Him only I
 “ send You for that Purpose, forsaking therein all your
 “ good Words, Thoughts, and Works, and only put-
 “ ting your Trust in *CHRIST*.”

Ther. If there be any tolerable Sense of the Notion under Debate, I think, it must be understood as follows.—*CHRIST*’s Performance of the Law of his Mediation, or, in other Words, his unfinning Obedience to the moral Law, and the spotless Sacrifice of Himself to the vindictive Justice of GOD; these are the *only* valuable Consideration, on Account of which, the *gracious* GOD restores guilty Creatures to a State of Acceptance with his divine MAJESTY.

Asp. I am far from denying your Proposition. I rejoice in the Propriety of my *Theron*’s Sentiments. May his Faith, which is thus far advanced, be carried on by Grace, till it is completed in Glory!—That unfinning Obedience, and that spotless Sacrifice, are indeed the *only* valuable, they are also the *truly*, or rather the *infinitely* valuable Consideration; which has fully merited for Us the Remission of Sins, and the Enjoyment of Life; and this not only from the *gracious*, but even from the *just*, the faithful, the righteous GOD.

But then, they must be *imputed*, in order to furnish Us with a Claim, and invest Us with a Right, to the purchased Privileges.—Suppose them not imputed; and what becomes of our *Interest* in them? They are like a Medicine prepared, but not applied.—Suppose them imputed; and they lay a firm, an apparent, a rational *Foundation*, for every pleasing Hope, and for every heavenly Blessing.

Ther. I fear, I have acknowledged too much.—My Thoughts fluctuate. My Mind is unsettled.—I would not withstand the Truth. I would not disbelieve any Doctrine of the Gospel. Yet—what shall I say? While I *listen* to your Reasoning, I am half a Convert. When I *recollect* the Objections, I revert to my first Opinion.

Of this, however, I am convinced, That human Righteousness is *insufficient* for our Justification. Here your Arguments have carried their Point. I shall henceforth place my Hopes of everlasting Happiness, not upon any Works of my own, but upon the free Goodness, and unbounded Beneficence of the SUPREME BEING. Pursuant to that Maxim of Scripture, *The Gift of GOD is eternal Life.*

Asp. You do right, *Theron*, to expect eternal Life as the Gift of GOD, not as the Wages of your own obediential Service. But be pleased to remember; that all the Gifts of Grace, though perfectly *free* to Sinners, are founded upon a grand and inestimable *Price*, paid by their SAVIOUR.—Are they intirely absolved from Guilt? It is because *CHRIST* gave his Life for their Ransom.—Are they heard with Acceptance when they pray? It is because their exalted High Priest intercedes in their Behalf.—Are they completely justified, and instated in endless Bliss? It is because their REDEEMER's consummate Obedience, is the glorious Equivalent for this and every other Blessing.—Therefore, when You mention eternal Life as the Gift of GOD, You should not forget to add with the Holy Apostle, *through JESUS CHRIST our LORD.*

————— Well, *Theron*; what say You farther? Is your Quiver emptied? Are your Scruples satisfied? May I interpret this Silence, as an Act of Assent?

Ther. Observe, how the *Ranunculuses*, on yonder gay Parterre, have contracted their spreading Tufts, and the *Tulips* have closed their expanded Cups. While all the neighbouring Flowers, have shut their ivory Doors, or drawn their Velvet Curtains.—Such is the State of my Thoughts. They are all bent inwards; *collected* in themselves; and *pondering* upon your Discourse. Which has inclined me, before I was aware, to contemplate, rather than talk.—You will excuse my Thoughtfulness, *Aspasio*. Or, if it wants an Apology, You must blame Yourself. For, had your Reasons

sons been less cogent, my Attention had been more disengaged.

Asp. My dear *Theron*, I shall only wish, in Allusion to your own Simile, and in the Language of the best of Books; That these Truths may *distil as the Dew* * upon your Mind, and *lie all Night upon your Branches* †. This, I am persuaded, is the only Way to have all your Comforts *green before the Sun*, and all your Virtues *flourish as an Herb*. Whereas, under the Influence of any other Faith, I am afraid, they will be as the Garden, that is visited with a Drought; or as the Leaves, that are smitten with a Blast.

Ther. I shall attentively consider, both your Doctrine and your Arguments. Which that I may execute with more Ease, and to better Purpose, be pleased to *sum up*, in a few Words, the Substance of what has passed.— This done, it will be Time to withdraw. The Flowers, You see, are our Monitors. They have folded up their Robes, and veiled their Beauties. A Custom which they seldom use, till the *rising Damps* render it unsafe, for their Master to be among them; and the *surrounding Gloom* renders it difficult for his Eye to distinguish them.

Asp. You could not oblige me more, than by giving me such a Command.—We trust for Salvation,

Not on our own *external Duties*. This were to build our House upon the Sand. Which, when the Rains descend, when the Torrents pour, when the Winds blow with tempestuous Violence, will certainly fall; and bury the Builder, with all his vain Hopes, in irretrievable Ruin.

Not on the *Sincerity* of our *Hearts*. This, if opposed to *CHRIST*, and made the Rival of his Merits, will be a “despised broken Idol.” *Despised*, by the infinitely sublime and majestic RULER of the World. *Broken*, with regard to the Stresses We lay, or the Confidence We repose, on so deceitful a Prop. No more able to stand in the Judgment of the great Day, than

* Deut. xxxii. 2.

† Job xxix. 19.

322 DIALOGUE X.

Dagon was able to maintain his Station before the Ark of the LORD GOD of Hosts *.

Not upon our *Faith*. This is often weak, as the rickety Child: sometimes quite faint, like a Person in a deep Swoon: always imperfect, like every other Performance of ours. Alas! To what afflicting Fears, to what grievous Despondency should I, for my Part, be perpetually liable, if my own Faith was the Ground of my Justification. Blessed be the FATHER of Mercies! We have a surer Support. Not upon Faith, but upon its gracious AUTHOR, and glorious OBJECT, is the Hope of *Israel* founded. Yet

Not upon our LORD's Righteousness, considered only as passive; but upon his *active* and *passive* Obedience united. All that He *did*, in Conformity to the Commands of the Law; and all that He *suffered*, in Submission to its Penalty. Both which, immensely dignified by his divine Nature, are a Basis for our Faith, which nothing can shake; are a Foundation for our Affiance, which can never be removed.—Nothing else, in any Creature, or in all Worlds, could expiate the *least Sin*. This not only expiates all Sin, but gives a Title to *every Blessing*—to the Blessings of Grace, and of Glory—of evangelical Holiness, and everlasting Happiness.



DIALOGUE XI.

ASPASIO.

I HAVE often purposed, and as often forgot, to ask—What *Picure* You was so attentively surveying, when I stole unperceived upon You, in this favourite Arbour †.

Ther.

* 1 Sam. v. 3, 4.

† See Dialogue V. p. 129.

Ther. I was indulging a pensive Pleasure, in viewing the Ruins, and contemplating the Fate of *Babylon*. — that renowned and opulent City! Once the Residence of the *Assyrian* Monarchs, and Capital of one of the greatest Empires in the World. The Draught I held in my Hand, represented some of its Remains. And indeed this was the very last Subject, that employed my Thoughts. In the Morning, my Son brought me his Observations upon the Scene; which I have just now been reviving.

For, I frequently set Him, to exercise his Judgment, or display his Fancy, on remarkable Passages, which occur in History. — He was lately commissioned to determine a Controversy, between the illustrious *Leonidas*, and the less celebrated *Pædareus*. This was the Point in Debate: Which of them discovered the truest Generosity of Spirit, and the most heroic Love of their Country? The former, who willingly sacrificed his Life in its Defence? Or the latter, who, when He was a Candidate for a Seat amongst the *three hundred*, and lost his Election, instead of being chagrined or dissatisfied, went home unfeignedly rejoicing, *That there were found in Sparta, three hundred Men, more worthy than Himself?* — The Task of this Day was, To give a descriptive Picture of those wonderful Ruins.

Asp. Pray, let me have the Pleasure of hearing the young Gentleman's Performance.

Ther. It will be too *long*, and too *puerile*: tire your Patience, and offend your Taste.

Asp. I don't use to make either of these Complaints, when I am entertained with *Theron's* Compositions. And, as the Son has so much of his Father's Genius, I am not at all apprehensive of any such Disappointment. — We have a most agreeable Situation, and more than an Hour's Leisure. I must therefore repeat my Request.

Ther. 'Tis true, I have retouched the Sketch: which may render it somewhat more tolerable. And since You persist in your Demand, I will read the Paper. — Only desiring some Allowance for a little *Luxury*

324 DIALOGUE XI.

riancy of Imagination. Which, in young Writers it may be adviseable to indulge, rather than repress. As Age and Judgment will, probably, come with the pruning Knife, and make the proper Retrenchments.— I must farther observe, that, contrary to the Custom which prevails in our Schools, I generally chuse to have Him express his Sentiments in *English*. Because, it is in this Language he must communicate *his own*, and become acquainted with the Ideas of *Others*. Because, to acquire some good Degree of *Propriety* and *Fluency* in this his native Tongue, will be incomparably more serviceable, than to speak *Latin* with the *Terentian* Elegance, or to write it with the *Ciceronian* Copiousness.

Is this *Babylon*? The Glory of Kingdoms! The Beauty of the *Chaldean* Excellency*!

*Where once the gorgeous East, with richest Hand,
Shower'd on her Kings barbaric Pearl and Gold.*

How is She fallen! Fallen from the Height of Magnificence, into the Abyss of Confusion! What was once the Object of universal Admiration, is now a Spectacle of Astonishment and Horror.

The *Palace*, where Majesty sat introned like some terrestrial Deity, is a Heap of Rubbish: no longer distinguished by an Air of superior Elegance, but by stronger and more melancholy Marks of departed Dignity.—Where, the Nobles of that *sumptuous Court*, trailed along the Marble Pavements their Robes of Purple and Embroidery; there, the crested Snake hisses, or the fierce invenomed Adder glides.

How changed is the hospitable *Hall*, and how disgraced the *Room of State*! The first afforded a constant
and

* *Benjamin*, a Jew of *Tudela*, in his *Itinerary*, written about the Year of our LORD 1170, tells Us,—“ That He was upon the Place where this City formerly stood, and found it wholly desolated and destroyed. Only some Ruins of *Nebuchadnezzar's* Palace were still remaining; but Men were afraid to go near them, by reason of the many Serpents and Scorpions, that were then in the Place.”

and cordial Reception to the welcome Guests ; in the last, the great King gave Audience to his cringing, his adoring Vassals. Now, Thorns over-run the Circumference, and “ Desolation sits in the Threshold” of them both.—Where are the Roofs of Ivory, painted with *Vermilion*, and adorned with *Sculpture* ? The radiant Roofs, whose Lamps of burnished Silver, pendent in many a blazing Row, yielded Light as from another Sky ? Swept from their Foundations, they lie clotted with defiling Dirt, or clasped in tangling Briars.—*Musick* no longer pours her Harmony, through the spacious and extended Apartment ; but the Night-Owl, nestling in some Cleft of the Ruins, screams her harsh and portentous Dissonance. *Joy* no longer leads up the sprightly Dance, amidst the Lustre of that artificial Day ; but the solitary Batt flits in silent Circles, or flaps her sooty Wings. All those gay Delights—let the *Sons of Sensuality* hear the Tale, and take Warning from the Catastrophe!—all those gay Delights are extinguished, like one of their feeblest Tapers ; which, having illuminated for a while the festive Assembly, shone itself to the Edges of the exhausted Socket, and in a Moment flashed into Stench and Darkness.

The *Walls*, though cemented with Bitumen *, and consolidated into the Firmness of a Flint, are become like the broken Bubble. There was a Time, when the Inhabitants, confiding in the Strength of their Bulwarks, and their impregnable Towers, looked down with fearless Disdain on the Army of Besiegers. But now the Prophet’s Threatening is most terribly fulfilled : *The Fortress of the high Fort of thy Walls hath HE brought down, laid low, and brought to the Ground, even to the Dust* †.—Where are the *Gates*, the grand and

* The Walls were built of Brick, and cemented with a glutinous Kind of Slime ; which binds more firmly than any Mortar, and soon grows harder, than the Brick or Stones themselves.—They were, according to the Account given by *Herodotus*, in Breadth eighty-seven Feet, in Height three hundred and fifty Feet, and reckoned to be absolutely impregnable. Inasmuch that the Inhabitants, when besieged by *Cyrus*, insulted Him from the Walls, and laughed at his Attempt, as a vain impracticable Project. *Herodot. Lib. I.*

† *Isai. xxv. 12.*

and glittering Gates †, that admitted the triumphant Hosts, or poured forth their numerous Legions against the Day of Battle? Not one Trace remains, to tell the inquisitive Stranger; “Here the spacious “Avenues opened: Here the massy Portals rose.”—Commodious *Walks*, in which the clustering Merchants raised the busy Hum, and planned the Schemes of Commerce; ample Streets, in which Industry drove the toiling Car, or smote the sounding Anvil; are shrouded with matted Grass, or buried beneath the rankest Weeds. Silence, in both Places, a fullen Silence reigns; and Inactivity, a death-like Inactivity, slumbers.

What is become of those *Hanging-gardens*, which, for curious Contrivance and stupendous Workmanship, were never equalled in any Nation under Heaven? *Terraces*, that overlooked the tallest Houses! *Parterres*, exalted to the Clouds, and opening their flowery Beauties in that strange Region! *Groves*, whose very Roots were higher than the Tops of the loftiest Trees!—They are now smitten by a dreadful Blast. Their Beauty is gone like a withered Leaf. Instead of being the favourite Retreats of a Queen, and the Admiration of the whole World, they are a Nest for poisonous Reptiles, and a Kennel for ravenous Beasts. The Traveler, instead of expatiating with Delight, where this *penfile Paradise* flourished, is struck with Horror; keeps at a trembling Distance; and surveying the rueful Spot, cries out, *Righteous art thou, O LORD, and true are thy Judgments!*

Here stands an *Obelisk*, maimed by the Stroke of revolving Years, like a Mountain Oak shattered by the flaming Bolt. Another, all unhinged, and quite disjointed, seems to tremble before every Blast that blows.

† There were no less than a hundred Gates, all of *solid Brass*. Hence it is, that when JEHOVAH promises to make Cyrus Master of *Babylon*, He speaks in this very remarkable and particularizing Manner; *I will break in Pieces before Thee the Gates of Brass*. *Esa. xlv. 2.*

blows.—There the *Pyramid**; firm as the solid Rock, and stable, One would have thought, as the everlasting Hills; wrenched from its mighty Base, is tumbled headlong in enormous Ruin, and has crushed many a Structure by its Fall.—See yonder, the *triumphal Arch*; which exhibited, through its extensive and beautiful Bend, an advantageous View of the Firmament. It was, once, the graceful Memorial of some celebrated Victory; it is, now, converted into a Trophy of a very different Kind. Just retaining two uneven, battered, ragged Stumps, it serves to recognize the destructive Ravages of Time.—*Spires*, that pierced the Clouds, and shot into the Skies, are levelled with the trodden Soil. On *Pinacles*, to which the strong-winged Bird could hardly soar, the groveling Worm crawls, and the fordid Snail leaves her slimy Track.—*Baths*, that contained the translucent Wave, and were so often perfumed with odoriferous Unguents, are choked with Filth; the grand *Colonnade*, that surrounded them, is shivered to pieces; and the elevated *Dome*, that covered them, is dashed to the Ground. The public *Aqueducts*, that conveyed Cleanliness and Health along their crystal Currents, are degenerated into a stagnating Lake; while croaking Vermine swarm among the Weeds, and noisome Exhalations steam from the Mire.

August and stately *Temples*, that seemed to affect the Neighbourhood of Heaven†, are sunk to the very Dust.

* *Strabo* calls the Temple of *Belus* a *Pyramid*. Lib. XV. But if the Critics in History should question or deny the Existence of Pyramids among the *Babylonians*, for this and other Liberties used by our young Declaimer. *Horace* shall make an Apology;

——— *Pictoribus atque Poetis*

Quidlibet audendi semper fuit æqua Potestas.

† A Tower in the Temple of *Belus*, and dedicated to his Worship, was most amazingly high. It consisted of eight Towers, erected one above another. It arose to the Elevation of six hundred Feet perpendicular. And is thought, by the learned *Bechart*, to have been Part of that superb Work, which was begun when the whole Earth was of one Language: but miscarried, or rather was providentially defeated, by the Confusion of Tongues. In this Structure, there were doubtless very strong Traces of that arrogant Boast; *Let Us build Us a City and a Tower, whose Top may reach to Heaven.* Gen. xi. 4.

Dust.—Who can point the Spot, where the consecrated Victim bled, or the sacred Fire glowed? Where the sceptered Image lifted its majestic Head, or the venerating Clouds bowed the suppliant Knee*? Degraded are those splendid Vanities, and cast (according to the Denunciation of the sacred Oracles) *to the Bats and to the Moles* †. All is low; low as the spurious Dignity of the Idols they complimented; low as the *Straw, that is trodden down for the Dunghill* ‡.

Sepulchres, the once venerable Repositories of the Dead, awful Mansions, destined to everlasting Concealment; are cleft and rent asunder. They disclose the horrid Secrets of the Pit, and frightfully yawn upon the blasted Day. Possibly, some ravenous Creature lurks within, that has already rifled the Tomb of its Hero; given the putrid Bones a new Grave; and waits only for the Approach of Night, to repeat his funeral Dirge in Yells.—*Inscriptions*, designed to perpetuate some illustrious Character, or eternize some heroic Deed, are blended in the promiscuous Mass. In vain would the prying Antiquary search for a legible or consistent Sentence: in vain attempt to find the memorable Names of a *Nebuchadnezzar* or a *Nimrod*. These, though engraved on Plates of Brass, or cut in Blocks of Marble, are lost amidst the stupendous Lumber; as Prints on the unsteady Sand are effaced, when returning Tides smooth the furrowed Beach.

Here and there a straggling Cypress rises, as it were with funeral Solemnity, amidst the Waste §. Somewhat like the black Plumes, nodding over the mournful

* Alluding to that prodigious Instance of Profuseness, Ostentation, and idolatrous Madness, *the golden Image set up in the Plain of Dura: whose Height* (that is, the Height of the Statue and Pedestal taken together) *was threescore Cubits*. Dan. iii. 1. See *Pri-deaux's Connection*. Vol. I. p. 95. &c. p. 567, &c.

† Isai. ii. 20.

‡ Isai. xxv. 10.

§ *Rauwolf*, a German Traveler, who passed that Way, in the Year of our LORD 1574, says; "This Country is so dry and barren, that it cannot be tilled; and so bare, that I should have doubted, whether the potent *Babylon* did stand there, if I had not known it by several antient and delicate Antiquities, that are still standing hereabout in great Desolation."

ful Hearse, they augment the Sadness of the Scene, and throw a deeper Horror on all below.—No human Voice is heard, nor human Face seen, amidst these desolated Heaps. Too dreary, even for the Roam of hoary Hermit, or the Cell of gloomy Monk. Abandoned they are, totally abandoned, to the Dominion of Solitude; or else, to the unmolested Resort of shaggy Monsters, and feathered Hags; that stun the midnight Hours—*these*, with their importunate Shrieks—*those*, with their execrable Howls.

See! to what a despicable, what an abhorred State, the proudest Monuments of earthly Grandeur, and the most costly Apparatus for earthly Felicity, may be reduced! A pregnant and alarming Proof, that, for *lasting Honour*, or *real Happiness*,

They build too low, who build beneath the Skies.

Asp. I very much approve the Choice of your Subject. The Ruins of *Persepolis*, would have given Us a View of Magnificence in Abasement. The Ruins of *Palmyra*, might have shewed Us Elegance in the Dust. But the Ruins of *Babylon* display at once, Magnificence and Elegance under an Eclipse, *Scripture* and *Revelation* in their Glory.—The utter Destruction of this City, which was absolutely unequalled* in every Instance of Dignity, and seemingly invincible by any Enemy, must certainly have been looked upon as the *most improbable* of Events. Nevertheless its utter Destruction was decreed by JEHOVAH, and denounced by his Prophet, several Ages before the Execution took place. The awful Sentence was not only recorded, but is still remaining, in the public *Archives* of our Religion.

Ther. Where is this Sentence recorded?

Asp. In the Prophecy of *Isaiab*. And not only recorded, but in the most circumstantial Manner, and with a minute Detail of the horrible Desolations. These are the Words of the inspired Writer; *Babylon, the Glory of Kingdoms, the Beauty of the Chaldees Excellency, shall*

* *Unequalled*—Represented therefore by the golden Head, in *Nebuchadnezzar's* prophetic Dream, and emblematic Image. *Dan.ii.38.*

shall be as when GOD overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. It shall never be inhabited; neither shall it be dwelt in from Generation to Generation: Neither shall the Arabian pitch Tent there; neither shall the Shepherds make their Fold there. But wild Beasts of the Desert shall lie there, and their Houses shall be full of doleful Creatures, and Owls shall dwell there, and Satyrs shall dance there. And the wild Beasts of the Islands shall cry in their desolate Houses, and Dragons in their pleasant Palaces.*

In the two first Sentences, is comprized the most finished Picture of Prosperity and Grandeur. *The Glory of Kingdoms*; beyond every other Metropolis, spacious, ornamented, and wealthy; revered by many conquered and tributary Dominions, as their Mistresses, and their Sovereign.—*The Beauty of the Chaldees Excellency*: The Chaldeans, who excelled all the Nations of the Earth in Riches, in Splendor, and in Power, even they gloried in this wonderful City. This was the highest Honour of the most illustrious, and chief Strength of the most victorious People; fairest, where all was conspicuously fair; noblest, where all was supereminently noble.—Yet this distinguished, this crowning City, *shall*, at the blasting of the Breath of JEHOVAH, be destroyed as utterly, as when GOD overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.

In describing the overthrow of this great City, the Prophet is equally admirable; and rises, by a most judicious Gradation, into all the Pomp of Horror, *q. d.* “Now, indeed, it is thronged with Citizens; but, the Hour is coming, when it shall be intirely depopulated, and not so much as a single Inhabitant left.—” “Lest You should think, that in Process of Time it may be re-edified, and again abound with joyful Multitudes, *it shall never be inhabited more; no, never be dwelt in any more, from Generation to Generation*; but shall continue a dismal Waste, through all succeeding Ages:—So far from being rebuilt, that it shall be intirely useless. Not so much as the rude and roving Arabian shall pitch his Tent, or procure for Himself the poor Accommodation of a Night’s Lodg-

* Isai. xiii. 19, 20, 21, 22.

“ Lodging; where Millions of polite People basked in
 “ the Sunshine of profuse Prosperity. Neither shall
 “ the *Shepherds make their Fold*, or find so much as an
 “ occasional Shelter for their Flocks; where Kings,
 “ Grandees, and Crouds of Citizens, repose themselves
 “ in profound Tranquillity:—Yea, so far from be-
 “ ing habitable, that it shall be *inaccessible*: the Haunt
 “ of every doleful, horrid, and destructive Monster:
 “ and serve no manner of valuable Purpose, unless it
 “ be to stand as a Monument of divine Vengeance,
 “ and an Admonition to human Pride.”

All this is foretold in Scripture; and, though to human Appearance impossible, though to human Apprehension incredible, was, in the appointed Time, most minutely accomplished. The Memorials and Evidences of the Accomplishment remain to this very Day. They are so *authentic*, that the most inquisitive Curiosity cannot doubt; and so *incontestable*, that the most bigotted Incredulity will not deny. And should not this teach Us, to reverence the Authority, to admire the Wisdom, and confide in the Promises of that heavenly Volume?

I know, You are not fond of Compliments, *Theron*. Therefore, instead of speaking my Opinion of *Eugenio's* Performance, I will endeavour to return your Favour.—You have entertained me with an Account of the most memorable Ruins, extant in the material World. Let me present my Friend with a Picture of Ruins, no less *remarkable*, far more *deplorable*, and unspeakably *interesting* to Us all. I shall give it, in the Colouring of a great Master; whose Work, this very Day, I happened to be perusing.

The Passage displays a Doctrine, of the utmost Importance in the *Christian* Scheme; and by one of the finest Pieces of Imagery, to be met with in elegant Writing. I think, it may be looked upon, as a *practical Improvement* of *Eugenio's* Declamation. It pleased me so much, that I transcribed it; and I make no Apology for reading it, because I shall expect your Thanks.—Only let me hint, that it considers the human Soul, as
 origi-

originally an Habitation of GOD through the SPIRIT; and then, speaking of its fallen Condition, proceeds.

“ That He *hath withdrawn Himself*, and left *this*
 “ *his Temple* desolate, We have many sad and plain
 “ Proofs before Us. The *stately Ruins* are visible to
 “ every Eye, that bear in their Front (yet extant) this
 “ doleful Inscription; HERE GOD ONCE DWELT.
 “ Enough appears of the admirable Frame and Struc-
 “ ture of the *Soul of Man*, to shew the divine Presence
 “ did sometime reside in it; more than enough of vi-
 “ cious *Deformity*, to proclaim He is now *retired* and
 “ *gone*. The *Lamps* are extinct, the *Altar* overturned;
 “ the *Light* and *Love* are now vanished, which did the
 “ one *shine*, with so heavenly Brightness; the other
 “ *burn*, with so pious Fervour. The *golden Candlestick*
 “ is displaced, and thrown away as an useless Thing,
 “ to make room for the Throne of the *Prince of Dark-*
 “ *ness*. The *sacred Incense*, which sent rolling up in
 “ Clouds its rich Perfumes, is exchanged for a poi-
 “ sonous hellish Vapour; and here is, *instead of a sweet*
 “ *Savour, a Stench*. The comely Order of this House
 “ is turned all into Confusion. The *Beauties of Holi-*
 “ *ness* into *noisome Impurities*. The *House of Prayer* to
 “ a *Den of Thieves*, and that of the worst and most
 “ horrid Crime; for every *Lust* is a *Thief*, and every
 “ *Theft* is *Sacrilege*: Continual Rapine and Robbery
 “ is committed upon *holy Things*. The noble Powers,
 “ which were designed and dedicated to *divine Contem-*
 “ *plation* and *Delight*, are alienated to the Service of
 “ the most despicable Idols, and employed unto the
 “ vilest Intuitions and Embraces; to behold and ad-
 “ mire *lying Vanities*, to indulge and cherish Lust and
 “ Wickedness.

“ There is not now a System, an intire Table of
 “ *coherent Truths* to be found, or a *Frame of Holiness*,
 “ but some shivered Parcels. And if Any, with great
 “ Toil and Labour, apply themselves to draw out here
 “ *one Piece*, and there *another*, and set them together;
 “ they serve rather to shew, how exquisite the divine
 “ Workmanship was in the *original Composition*, than for
 “ present Use, to the excellent Purposes, for which
 “ the

D I A L O G U E XI. 233

“ the Whole was at first designed. Some Pieces
 “ agree, and *own one another*; but how soon are our
 “ Inquiries nonplus’d and superseded! How many At-
 “ tempts have been made, since that fearful Fall and
 “ Ruin of this Fabric, to compose again the Truths of
 “ so many several Kinds into their distinct Orders,
 “ and make up Frames of Science or useful Know-
 “ ledge! and after so many Ages, nothing is finished
 “ in any Kind. Sometimes, Truths are misplaced, and
 “ what belongs to *one Kind*, is transferred to *another*,
 “ where it will not fitly match; sometimes, *Falshood*
 “ *inserted*, which shatters or disturbs the whole Frame.
 “ And what with much fruitless Pains, is done by one
 “ Hand, is dashed in Pieces by another; and it is the
 “ Work of a *following* Age to sweep away the fine-
 “ spun Cobwebs of a *former*. And those Truths, which
 “ are of greatest Use, though not most out of Sight,
 “ are least regarded; their Tendency and Design are
 “ overlooked, or they are so loosened and torn off,
 “ that they cannot be wrought in, so as to take hold
 “ of the Soul; but hover as *faint ineffectual Notions*,
 “ that signify Nothing. Its very fundamental Powers
 “ are shaken and disjointed, and their Order towards
 “ one another confounded and broken. So that what
 “ is judged *considerable*, is not *considered*; what is re-
 “ commended as *eligible* and *lovely*, is not loved and
 “ chosen. Yea, the Truth which is after Godliness,
 “ is not so much *disbelieved*, as *bated*, *held in Unright-*
 “ *eousness*: and shines as too feeble a *Light*, in that
 “ malignant Darkness, which *comprehends it not*. You
 “ come, amidst all this Confusion, as into the ruined
 “ Palace of some great Prince, in which You see here
 “ the Fragments of a noble Pillar, there the scat-
 “ tered Pieces of some curious Imagery; and all ly-
 “ ing neglected and useless amongst Heaps of Dirt.
 “ He that invites You to take a View of the Soul of
 “ Man, gives You but such another Prospect, and
 “ doth but say to You, *Behold the Desolation*, all
 “ Things rude and waste. So that should there be
 “ any Pretence to the divine Presence, it might be
 “ said, *If GOD be here, why is it thus?* The faded
 “ Glory,

334 DIALOGUE XI.

“ Glory, the Darkneſs, the Diſorder, the Impurity,
 “ the decayed State in all reſpects of this Temple,
 “ too plainly ſhew, *The GREAT INHABITANT*
 “ *is gone* *.

Ther. Your Painter, I muſt own, is a Maſter in his Profeſſion ; and ſeems to have a peculiar Talent for a *Night-piece*.—But why, I beſeech You, ſo much of his Shades and Solemnity ? Has He no Colours, but the dark ? No Lineaments, but the ſour ? Could He not allow Us one bright Tint, one ſmiling Feature ? when he was copying the nobleſt Being in this ſublunary World ?—Is it for the Honour of the great CREATOR, to give ſuch a deformed Draught of his moſt finiſhed Workmanſhip ?

Aſp. It reflects no kind of Diſhonour upon the Architect of *Babylon*, that its Palaces are fallen, its Edifices demolished, and its Walls levelled with the Ground. They might have been built with the exacteſt Symmetry, and once embellished with every graceful Ornament ; notwithſtanding the Stroke of Violence, or the ſap of Years, have now reduced them to Heaps of Rubbiſh.—The human Soul, when recent from the Inſpiration of the ALMIGHTY, was bright with Knowledge, amiable with Virtue, and in every reſpect excellent. But *How*—to ſpeak in the Language of the mourning Prophet ; a Language, never more pertinent than on the preſent Occaſion—*How is the Gold become dim ! How is the moſt fine Gold changed !*

Ther. Man’s Soul is rational and eternal ; is the Offspring of the DEITY, and capable of reſembling its MAKER.

Aſp. What *Milton* allows to the fallen Arch-Angel, I can readily allow to fallen Man :

————— *He had not loſt*
All his Original Brightneſs.

The grand and diſtinguiſhing Faculties of the Soul remain. Juſt as, when a Fountain is poiſoned, the Waters

* See Mr. *Howe*’s Treatiſe, intituled *The living Temple*.

Waters continue to flow : but flow no longer with Health, flow rather with Death in the Stream. These very Faculties, unless renewed and regulated by the influence of Religion, must be our present Misery, and will prove our everlasting Curse.—*The Soul*, You say, *is rational, is eternal*. And do not even the Devils possess the Powers of Reason? Is not their Existence also of an endless Duration? Yet are they all Creatures, the most execrable and the most miserable.

You call the human Soul, the Offspring of the DEITY. And You call it properly. Must We not then adopt the Prophet's Exclamation, "*How art thou fallen O Lucifer, Son of the Morning!*" How "*art Thou degenerated O Man, Son of the MOST HIGH!*" Thy glorious Original serves only to set forth, with more glaring Evidence, thy deplorable "*Apostacy*."

Capable, You add, of resembling its MAKE R. This, I acknowledge, is a valuable Prerogative, In this the infernal Spirits have no Share. But this Capacity will always lie dormant; will never awaken into Act; never be established in Habit; unless Almighty GRACE intervene.

Ther. The most celebrated Philosophers of Antiquity, frequently exhort their Readers to *follow Nature*; as a certain Guide to true Excellence.—Many eloquent Writers of our own Country, inlarge upon the *Dignity* of human Nature; and from this Topic derive very forcible Arguments, for a correspondent Dignity both of Sentiment and Behaviour.—Upon what can those Principles of the antient Sages, and of our later Moralists, be founded?

Asp. Indeed, *Theron*, I am at a loss to tell. If they have any Foundation, it is merely imaginary; not laid in Truth, nor confirmed by Experience.—According to my Apprehension, they invert the Order of Things. They take that for a *Postulat*, which ought to be ranked among the *Desiderata*; and make an Axiom of a mere Figment.

Had Man continued, as he was created, to act according to Nature, and according to the Law of
G O D,

336 DIALOGUE XI.

G O D, would have been one and the same Thing. For which Reason, We find no Precepts of Religion, no Delineation of Morality, given to *Adam* in Paradise. Because, Religion and Morality were engraven on his Heart; or rather they resulted from the very Bent and Tendency of his perfect Frame.—But since the Fall it is quite otherwise.

Ther. Have not many of the antient Worthies been *living Confutations* of your Opinion? Wise Philosophers, judicious Lawgivers, and steady Ministers of Justice? Their Desires refined, their Affections benevolent, their whole Conduct upright.

Asp. I cannot forbear wondering, that You should instance in Lawgivers and Ministers of Justice. Since the very Institution of their Office presupposes the Depravity of Mankind. Was human Nature agitated by no irregular or vicious Inclinations, the Barrier of Laws would be as needless in civil Societies, as the vast Banks of *Holland* are needless in our upland Counties.

But this, You will say, is a digressive Observation. Your Question requires a positive Answer. And it is easy to answer, That the Painting is beyond the Life. If my Author has been too free with the *dark*, my Friend has been too lavish of the *glittering Colours*.—Those famous Men might aim, perhaps, at the Excellency You describe. Not one of them came up to the Mark.—Or, suppose they did, this would not invalidate my Tenet.

Ther. This not invalidate your Tenet! Then Demonstration carries no Conviction.

Asp. Pray, who is your greatest Favourite, among all the renowned Persons of Antiquity.

Ther. *Socrates*.—He stands at the Head of the Class; and was, indisputably, the wisest and the best of the Heathen World.

Asp. I think so too.—Be pleased, however, to recollect the Story of the *Physiognomist*; who pretended to discover the Disposition of the Mind, by the Cast of the Countenance. The Professor of this occult Science undertook, You know, to exercise his Skill

DIALOGUE XI. 337

Skill upon *Socrates*; and pronounced Him, after an Examination of his Features, lascivious, passionate, and morose.—This Judgment, so extravagantly wide of the Truth, was bringing a Storm of Ridicule and Repentment upon the poor Fortune-teller. When the ingenuous Philosopher interposed, and owned the Description to be exactly true. That *such* was his *natural* Temper; and if his Conversation had been of a different Turn, it was owing to the Aids of Philosophy.—So that, even in your most finish'd * Character, there was no *innate* Dignity. All was *adventitious*.

Ther. If Corruption was derived unto all Men from their Forefather *Adam*; methinks, all should be equally corrupt. But this is contrary to known Fact. Some We see naturally loving and lovely; gentle in their Manners; and subject to no inordinate Appetites.

Asp. Some Persons may be of *more composed*, or, if You please, of *less dissolute* Manners, than the Generality of other People. Thanks to a better Temperament of their Constitution, or a more watchful Care in their Education.—But shew me the unregenerate Man, that is subject to *no* inordinate Appetites? One vile Affection may check another, or a Sense of Decency may hold the Curb upon all. But it is one

* Though I love and admire the Character of *Socrates*, yet I cannot approve the whole of his Conduct. One Thing which gives me particular Offence is, the *habitual* Practice of *Swearing*, which occurs in all his Conferences with his Pupils. *Μα τα Δία, Νη Δι*, or some such Appeal to the D E I T Y is used, not only in every Discourse, but almost in every Page; and that upon the most *unnecessary* Occasions.—I have often wondered, that so polite a Writer as *Xenophon*, should admit this flagrant Impropriety into his Dialogues. Which, besides its *irreligious* Air, is somewhat like the *Crambe Repetita*; and recurs, and recurs, and recurs, till it is really tiresome. But much more I wonder, that his excellent Master, should suffer the Sanction of an Oath, to become so *trivial*; and the Honour of his *Jupiter* so *cheap*.

This proves the deplorable *Blindness* of human Reason; which could mistake so notorious a Profanation of the D I V I N E N A M E, for a genteel Embellishment of Speech.—It shews Us, likewise, our extreme Need of that *revealed Law*, which, among other refined Precepts, unknown to the Religion of Nature, injoins; *Above all Things swear not*—And *Thou shalt not take the Name of the L O R D thy G O D in vain*.

338 DIALOGUE XI.

Thing, to have the wild Beast in the Heart chained ; another, to have him expelled, or the Lion transformed into a Lamb.

Ther. Have We not often observed heroic Courage, and a Generosity of Spirit, where the Education has been none of the strictest ? To what can we ascribe these laudable Qualities, but to the innate Nobleness of the Temper, working without any auxiliary Succours ?

Asp. Virtue, *Theron*, is a complete Assemblage, not some disjointed Shreds, of laudable Qualities. Those You mention, if not accompanied with the whole Circle of amiable Accomplishments, are no more to be called Virtue ; than two or three scattered Fragments of an Edifice, are to be honoured with the Appellation of an House.—How often are those very Persons, with all their Fortitude, Slaves to ignoble Pleasures, or in Bondage to the basest Lusts. A most infallible Indication, that they have no uniform Generosity, nor any real Courage.—Desire of Fame, may prompt to many such Acts, as dazzle the superficial Eye : which yet are far, very far from genuine Virtue.

Ther. Do you then attribute the Grecian Politeness and the high Roman Spirit, all the gallant Actions of their Heroes and Generals, to a Desire of Fame ?

Asp. There is Reason to suspect, that they derived their Origin from some improper Motive. And no Motive was more artfully instilled, or more assiduously cherished, than the Spirit of Ambition.—View their Crowns, their Statues, their triumphal Solemnities.—Read their Orators, their Historians, their Poets —The former were the School, the latter were the Masters, to inculcate this grand Lesson.

Let Us consider the Romans a little more attentively ; and not amidst the Dregs of their Community, but in their very best Ages ; when their Republic subsisted, and their Scipios flourished. Many great and shining Deeds were undoubtedly performed. But did they spring from a reverential Regard to the SUPREME BEING ; from Obedience to his Will, or Zeal for his Honour ?

If

DIALOGUE XI. 339

If this Principle should be thought too refined, did they proceed from a *Love* to their *Fellow-creatures*? In case, neither of these Motives § actuated their Conduct, it can never be placed to the Account of Virtue.— Had Benevolence been their leading Principle, why such *Inhumanity* to *Carthage*? Why must that opulent City be laid in Ashes, and her numerous Citizens be put to the Sword? Were they Enemies to Mankind, or a Nuisance in the World? You well know, that they were only too industrious, and too powerful. By which means, they would be in a Condition, to eclipse the Magnificence of the *Roman* Name, and dispute the Prize of Sovereignty with the *Roman* State. For this Crime—a Crime, in Ambition's Eye, absolutely inexcusable—even *Cato's* upright Soul, shall doom them to utter Destruction; and *Scipio's* gentle Hand, shall execute the horrid Decree.

Is *this* Virtue? Does Virtue ravage Countries, from the mere Wantonness of Pride, or Lust of Pre-eminence? Does Virtue destroy Millions of Lives, only to aggrandize a particular People, or extend the Dominion of some favourite Empire? If *this* were Virtue, *Brutus* thought too honourably of her Character, when He termed Her an *empty Name*.—I am sure, my *Theron* has juster Notions of Things. He need not be informed, that true Virtue, far from personating the rapacious Harpy, acts as a Father to Others, as a Father to All. And, like H I M, who is both its Pattern and its Author, *goes about doing Good*.

Ther. The most elegant Cane, if plunged into yonder *Bason*, while the Waters are curled by the Breeze,

§ A Zeal for the Honour of GOD, and a Concern for the Good of our *Fellow-creatures*, are the true Sources of Virtue, 1 *Cor. x. 24. 31.* When our Actions flow not from these Principles, Reason will put a *Query* upon them, and Revelation Will *expunge* them from the List of Virtues.—They may be specious in themselves; they may be costly to the Performer; they may even be serviceable to Others. But can no more deserve the Title of *Virtue*, than the Activity of our *Sun-fire* Officers, in extinguishing the Flames on some insured House, can merit the Name of *Charity*

will appear both crooked and coarse. I cannot but think, the Accusers of human Nature examine her State with a *prejudiced* Understanding. Which has the same perverse Effect upon their Judgment, as those ruffled Waves have upon the Sight.—Or else, they contemplate her Condition with a *melancholy* Mind; which, like a jaundiced Eye, gives every Object a dis-tempered Aspect: darkens the chearful; discolours the beautiful; and hangs even the Sun in Mourning.

Asp. Rather let this be the Comparifon, to illustrate our Point.—View the meanest Piece of Earth, through the *Prismatic* Glafs; and it will appear, not beautiful only, but perfectly splendid. Remove the delufory Medium, and all the fophifticated Finery vanifhes. The Indigo, the Orange, the Violet are gone; and leave nothing to be feen, but a rude un-ornamented Lump of Clay.—So, if We confider human Nature, according to the *partial* Representations of Self-love; or contemplate it, in the *flattering* Mirror of fome popular Writings; it may feem regular, holy, excellent. But, if we behold it under the Light, the unerring Light of Revelation, its fanfied Charms difappear; it ftands cloathed with Deformity; and is a Spectacle of Commiferation, if not of Horror.

Ther. What Reason have You to father fuch a Notion upon the fared Writings?—The fared Writings inform Us, that Man was made *after the Image of G O D*. This, fure, could not be fo difhonourable and depraved a Pattern, as your Difcourfe would infinuate.

Asp. Far, very far from a difhonourable Pattern! The Image of G O D is the *confummate Standard* of all Perfection.—In conformity to this admirable Exemplar, our firft Parents were created; and in this noble Condition they continued, till by Transgreffion they *fell*. Fell from the moft holy and happy State, into Guilt, Condemnation, and Ruin.—Therefore when this fatal Cataftrophe had taken place, the fared Hiftorian varies his Style; and with a remarkable Peculiarity, as well as Propriety of Speech, fays, Adam *be-*
gat

gat a Son in his own *, not in the DIVINE likeness. That every Reader may advert to this melancholy, but important Truth ; it is marked more strongly still ; it is enforced by a very emphatical Repetition. *After his own Image †*, *Moses* adds ; as contradistinguished to the Image of GOD, mentioned in the preceding Verse. Which Expressions are evidently intended, to denote the Difference between the State, in which *Adam* was created, and *Seth* was begotten.

Ter Pray, let me have a succinct, but full Account of this tragical Story. Since all your orthodox Divines lay such a mighty Stress upon the Doctrine of the Fall.

Asp. GOD, having formed the human Body out of the Ground, animated the Structure with a living Soul ; and transcribed upon this Soul the Image of his blessed SELF. All was Light in the Understanding ; all was Rectitude in the Will ; and nothing but Harmony in the Affections.—Man, thus endowed, was placed in the delightful Garden of *Eden* ; and furnished with every Accommodation, that was necessary to support his Being, or desirable to gratify his Senses.—He was constituted Lord of this lower Creation ; and amidst numberless Indulgencies, received only one—*easy—negative* Command—*not to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil*.—From this He was to abstain, as a Pledge of his Subjection, and as an Exercise of his Obedience. Bliss and Immortality were to be the Reward of Duty ; Misery and Death the Punishment of Disobedience. *In the Day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die*, was the Sanction of the divine Law.

How equitable ! How gracious the Terms ! Yet, neither the Authority of GOD, could deter Him from breaking them ; nor the Goodness of GOD induce Him to keep them.—Unreasonably discontented even with such advantageous Circumstances, and presumptuously aspiring to be like the MOST HIGH,

† This is affirmed, not of *Cain*, but of *Seth*, the most excellent of *Adam's* Children, and Father of the holy Seed.

† בְּדִמְיוֹתָיו כְּצִלְמוֹ Gen. v. 3. *Corruptus corruptum*.

He hearkened to the Suggestions of the evil Spirit.—In a Word ; He violated the Precept, and incurr'd the Penalty. GOD was just, and Man was undone. He lost his Uprightness § ; became subject to Mortality ; and, as the nervous Original expresses it, *Died the Death.*

Ther. True ; He became subject to many bodily Infirmities, and to the Necessity of final Dissolution.—But, what has this Sentence, or what have these Sufferings to do, with *your* Notion of universal Depravity in the Mind ? The Death, which the Almighty LEGISLATOR threatened, can be imposed only to the Life, which the Almighty CREATOR gave.

Asp. Be it so.—The CREATOR gave, and Man possessed a Life, incomparably more excellent, than that which the Pulse imparts, or the Beasts enjoy. He possessed a *divine Life* ; which, according to the Definition of the Apostle, consisted in *Knowledge, in Righteousness, and true Holiness.* This—which was the distinguishing Glory, and the supreme Felicity of his Nature—this alas ! was extinct.

His Understanding, originally enlightened with Wisdom, was clouded and overwhelmed with Ignorance.—His Heart, once filled with religious Veneration, and warmed with heavenly Love, became alienated from GOD his MAKER.—His Passions and Appetites, instead of moving on, in orderly Array, according to the beauteous Measures of Truth and Duty, grew mutinous ; shook off the Government of Reason ; and ran wild, into the most lawless Extravagancies.—In a Word ; the whole moral Frame was unhinged, disjointed, broken.

Ther. What Cause have You to suppose, that all this Misery was either included in the Threatening, or introduced by the Fall ?

Asp. The *Ignorance* of fallen *Adam* was palpable. Witness that absurd Attempt, to hide Himself from the Eye of OMNISCIENCE among the Trees
of

§ ——— *Innocence, that as a Veil
Had shadow'd them from knowing Ill, was gone,
Just Confidence, and native Righteousness.*

Milt. B. IX. 1054.

of the Garden.—His *Aversion* to the all-gracious GOD was equally plain. Otherwise, He would never have fled from his MAKER; but rather have hasted, and on the Wings of Desire, into the place of the divine Manifestation.

A strange Variety of *disorderly Passions* §, were evidently predominant in his Breast.—*Pride*; for He refuses to acknowledge his Guilt, though He cannot but own the Fact—*Ingratitude*; for He obliquely upbraids the CREATOR with his Gift, as though it had been a Snare, rather than a Blessing; *The Woman, whom Thou gavest me*—*Want of natural Affection*; for, He endeavours to cast all the Blame upon the weaker Vessel; and to acquit his obnoxious Self, by impeaching the Wife of his Bosom.—The female Criminal acts the same unhumbled Part; neither takes Shame to Herself; nor gives Glory to GOD; nor puts up a single Petition for Pardon.

As all these Disasters ensued, upon the Breach of the Commandment; they furnish Us, I think, with the best Key to open the Meaning of the prohibitory Sanction. They prove, beyond any Argument, that spiritual Death, and all its Consequences, were comprehended in the Extent of the Threatening.

Ther. How could *one* Act of Disobedience produce such destructive Effects? Erase the fair Image of the GODHEAD; and stamp the Monster, stamp the very Devil, in its Stead?—And so *small* an Act of Disobedience too!

§ Milton speaking of the unhappy Pair, and describing the Consequences of their Fall, says

—Nor only Tears
Rain'd at their Eyes; but high Winds within
Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,
Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord, and shook sore
Their inward State of Mind; calm Region once,
And full of Peace; now tost and turbulent!
For, Understanding rul'd not, and the Will
Heard not her Lore! But, in Subjection now
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath
Usurping, over sovereign Reason claim'd
Superior Sway.

B. IX. 1121.

Q 4

Ass.

Asp. The *Prohibition*, if You please, was small; not so the Transgression. It was committed against the clearest Knowledge of Duty, and the strongest Obligations to Obedience. It argued Ingratitude for the richest Favours, and Unbelief of the most solemn Declarations. It was an Act of the most horrid Presumption in the Creature, and of the most impious Rebellion against the CREATOR.

As to the Smallness, or rather the *gentle* and *benign* Import of the Command, this aggravates, beyond measure, the Crime of Disobedience. Alluding to the Words, once addressed to the *Syrian* General, we may justly expostulate—"O thou *Adam*, if thy LORD " had bid Thee do some great Thing; in Submission " to such a high Authority, and out of Gratitude for " his unspeakable Goodness, oughtest thou not to have " done it? How much more when He says to Thee? " —Freely eat of all, except this single Tree. *Thou-* " *sands, thousands* of Honours, Privileges, and Gifts " be thine; only *one* Acknowledgment of thy Subjec- " tion, mine. And that the easiest, which thy Heart " can wish, or even thy Fancy conceive."

You ask, *How* could one Act of Disobedience produce such destructive Effects?—I answer; The *Reality* of the Fact, in numberless Instances of material Nature, is plain to a Demonstration; while the *Manner* of Operation, remains an impenetrable Secret. Every *Child* perceives the former; the great *Newton* is at a Loss for the latter.—For which Reason, I have always thought it better, to believe what GOD has taught, than attempt to explain, what He has concealed. Let Us forego this curious, perhaps fruitless *Inquiry*; and substitute a Remark, that naturally arises from the Subject, and may considerably edify our Minds.

Ther. Edify! Is it possible to render this *dishonourable* and *afflictive* Notion edifying? Can any generous Fruit spring from such a penurious Soil?

Asp. *Sampson*, I believe, had no Expectation of finding any Thing valuable, in the Relics of his slain Lion. But, to his agreeable Disappointment, *there was Honey*
in

in the Carcase *. If our Doctrine appear *ghastly* as the One, it may yield a Benefit *sweet* as the Other.

From hence We may learn (what, when rightly learnt, is more serviceable than all the Sciences) the *extreme Malignity* of Sin.—When *Volcanos* open their tremendous Jaws, and disgorge a fiery Inundation; they confine their Fury to a single Territory.—When *Famine* lifts her mildewed Hand, and destroys the Supports of animal Life; She is content with ruining a Kingdom or a Nation. When *War* drenches her Sword in Blood, or the *Pestilence* impregnates the Air with Poison; they also, even they observe some Limits, and never make the whole Compass of Nature the Scene of their Ravages.—But *Sin*, levelled its Blow at the *whole human Race*. *SIN* poured Contagion, and spread Destruction, through *all* Countries, and *all* Ages. One *single Act* of Sin brought Confusion and a Curse upon the material, and Miseries, *infinite Millions* of Miseries, on the rational World ||.—How then should We fear this *most pernicious* of all Evils! With what Carefulness guard against its insidious Allurements! With what Resolution fly from its killing Caresses!

Ther. I must observe, that you take for granted, what remains to be proved. For, supposing your Account true, with regard to *Adam*; yet, how does this affect his Children? Why must all his Posterity be contaminated, because their Forefather has played the Prodigal? Such a heavy Charge against the whole Body of Mankind will not be admitted, without very cogent Proofs.

Asp. The Proofs are cogent; perhaps irrefragable.—Reason offers to turn Evidence in the Case. Reason, in Concurrence with Revelation, demands; *Who can bring a clean Thing out of an unclean* †? If the Fountain

* Judg. xiv. 8.

|| *St. Chrysostom* calls the first Transgression, *η παντα λυμαίνουμένη αμαρτία*. Which is, in a manner, translated by *Milton*; who, speaking of the same tragical Act, says,

It brought Death into the World, and all our Woe.

† Job xiv. 4.

be polluted, how can the Streams be pure? And if the Root is corrupt, 'tis impossible to conceive, how the Branches should be sound, or the Fruit good †.

The scriptural Testimonies are almost innumerable. They pour their Evidence from every Quarter; and constitute, not two or three only, but a whole Cloud of Witnesses.—*GOD made Man upright*, says the royal Preacher; the human Nature, in its primitive State, was without any wrong Bias. *But* at, and ever since the first Transgression, *they have found out and followed many perverse Inventions* †.

Ther. I don't deny, but Multitudes of People, seduced by bad *Example*, or betrayed by their own *Inadvertency*, have departed from the Rule of Duty. Have, as the wise Man affirms, tried many foolish Experiments, to acquire Happiness, and devised as many idle Excuses for their Folly. But, this is no such irrefragable Proof, that they were *originally* bad. It only implies, that, not taking proper heed to their Ways, they warped from their native Uprightness. As yonder Tulips, though perfectly beautiful at present, if not attended with the necessary Cultivation, will degenerate into homely Flowers; and, at length, be no better than tawdry Weeds.

Asp. No, my Friend. Iniquity is not an adventitious Thing, caught from Example, or contracted by Carelessness. These may increase, but these do not occasion, the *moral Malady*. A sinful Disposition is as early as our Being: the very Mould, in which all our Faculties are cast.—*David* bears very express Testimony to this humbling Truth. *Behold!* He sets a N.

† *Milton* has anticipated *Theron's* Objection; and, in *Adam's* Soliloquy, very judiciously solved it.

——— *Ab! why should all Mankind
For one Man's Fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,
If guiltless? But from me what can proceed
But all corrupt, both Body and Mind deprav'd;
Not to do only, but to will the same
With me? How can they acquitted stand
In Sight of GOD?* B. X. 822.

† *Eccles. vii. 29.*

N. B. upon the Passage. 'Tis a sad, but certain Fact. Such as should never depart from my Memory, nor ever be omitted in my Confessions; and is much to be regarded by every Reader. *I was shapen in Wickedness, and in Sin did my Mother conceive me* ||. As though he had said—"Alas! LORD, this Crime, though extremely horrid, is but a little Part of my Guilt. I have not only sinned in Practice, but I am totally and universally corrupt in my very Nature."

This He acknowledges, not to extenuate his Offence, but to lay open his excessive Vileness. And indeed it is not possible, to form a *right Judgment* of Ourselves, or to be *duly humbled* before GOD, unless We add the *Depravation* of our *Nature* to the Transgressions of our Life. Just as it is impossible to discern, what monstrous and voracious Animals lie hid in the Ocean, if We only glance an Eye upon the Surface of the Waters.

Ther. This, You know, was written by the royal Penitent, under the Pangs of severe Remorse. Does not a Sense of his enormous Iniquity, and the Apprehension of divine Wrath, make his Hand shake, and lead Him to *aggravate* Features?—Or, suppose it were true of the adulterous King, is it equally applicable to Others, who have escaped such gross Pollutions?

Asp. It is no exaggerating Draught; but a faithful Delineation; and exactly represents every Child of *Adam*.—It was written with the utmost Deliberation; and therefore is introduced with that Call for peculiar Attention, *Behold!*—And, though *David* was scandalously criminal in his Intrigue with the Wife of *Uriah*; yet, the *general* Tenour of his Life was not only irreproachable, but *exemplary*. Who so zealous for the House of his GOD, or so devoted an Admirer of the divine Word? His Heart was an Altar, ever flaming with heavenly Love; and his Tongue a Trumpet, to sound the Praises of JEHOVAH through all Generations.—And if *He* had Reason to make this abasing Con-

Confession; who is the Person that can think himself aggrieved, by sharing in the Imputation?

One of our most eminent Martyrs, when He heard of any Malefactor, condemned to suffer an ignominious Death, used to lay his Hand upon his Breast, and say—"The Seeds of all those Villainies, which brought that unhappy Wretch to the Gibbet, were sown *Here*. And, if they have not sprung up into the same detestable Deeds, unto divine Grace, unto divine Grace *alone*, be all the Glory!"

Ther. Your Martyrs had *best* Hearts, but not always the *clearest* Heads. I admire their Zeal, and reverence their Memories: but I can no more receive their Opinion as an Oracle, than I can be persuaded to worship their Relics.

Asp. I have no Intention to palm Popery on my Friend, nor any Desire to calumniate the human Species. If it be disingenuous and sinful, to asperse a particular Character; how much more unjustifiable, to traduce our Nature in general!

My Account, dark and disgustful as it is, stands confirmed by a higher Authority, than any private Opinion. It is confirmed from an universal Survey of Mankind; taken by the Eye of the CREATOR Himself, and left upon Record in the Books of Revelation. *The LORD looked down from Heaven upon the Children of Men, to see if there were Any that did understand, and seek after GOD* *.—What is the Result of this grand Inquiry? It must, without all Peradventure, be infallibly true. Because GOD's Inspection is too keen, to be eluded; and his Judgment too impartial, to be biased. This is the Report, made by the infinitely wise OBSERVER: *They are all gone aside, they are altogether become filthy* †; *there is None that doeth Good, no not One.*

Ther.

* Psal. xiv. 2.

† *Psal.* xiv. 2, 3. The two original Words, *סר נאכלו* are metaphorical Expressions; taken from—*Wines*, that are become *sour*—and *Meats*, that are in a State of *Putrefaction*. I believe, it is impossible to find Images, more strongly expressive of a total Depravity, and of the utmost Degeneracy.

DIALOGUE XI. 349

Ther. This, I apprehend, is the Character of those besotted Creatures, those most egregious of all Fools, *Who say, there is no GOD.* To them the Psalm relates, and to them the abandoned Character is appropriated. They have it, if I may so speak, *Cum Privilegio.*

Asp. It is meant rather of *practical*, than of *speculative* Atheists. Who say, not *explicitly* with their Mouths, but *implicitly* in their Hearts, There is no GOD. Who live, as if there was no ALL-SEEING EYE, to take Cognizance of their present Conduct; no SUPREME JUDGE, to call them to a future Reckoning.—And I dare appeal to Experience, Whether this Instance of *Foolishness*, is not bound up in the Hearts of our Children†. Nay, whether it be not natural to Us all, both in Youth and Manhood, to forget our CREATOR?

In this Case, *Theron*, there is no Monopoly. *Your* Right and *mine*, are too strongly established by Experience, and too clearly expressed in the preceding Scripture, to admit of any Controversy.—If there were *Any*, that understood—They are *all* gone out of the Way—There is *None* that doeth Good—No, not *One*.—Could any Conveyancer in *Europe* have contrived a Form of Words, more fully to ascertain our unhappy Title?

Ther. There may be some Texts in Scripture, which seem to countenance your Assertion. But these refer to the worst of Men, in the worst of Times. And can You, with any Justice, ascribe the Properties of a few Reprobates, to the whole Species?

Asp.

† *Prov.* xxii. 15. Let None think, that by *Foolishness* the sacred Writer means only those *filly* Tricks, which discover a Weakness of Understanding in Children. *Solomon's* Fool is not the *Idiot*, but the *Sinner*; and the *Folly*, stigmatized throughout the Proverbs, denotes, not a Failure in the *intellectual*, but in the *religious* and *moral* Character.

The Words, in this Passage, are peculiarly forcible. *Foolishness* is in the Heart; implanted in the very Nature, sunk deep into the inmost Faculties.—And not only sunk deep, but adheres a'most inseparably: קשורה is *wrapt, tied, and bound*: twines like the Ivy, and is rooted like the Oak.

Asp. This very Passage, and others of a like Import, are adopted by St. Paul, and applied both to *Jews* and *Gentiles*: with this professed Design, *that every Mouth may be stopped, and all the World may be found guilty * before GOD.* Which evinces, I should think, beyond all Doubt, the *Universality* of its Extent.

If to the Universality, We add the *Antiquity* of this Fact, it will bear the two grand Characteristics of Truth. Far from being a novel Opinion, it was received as a Maxim, in the early Age of *Job.* *What is Man, that He should pretend to be clean? And he that is born of a Woman, that he should presume to be righteous?* Righteous before the infinitely JUST and HOLY ONE! *Behold! He putteth no Trust in his Saints,* though the most exalted of all rational Beings. *Yea, the Heavens,* those brightest Parts of the material Creation, *are not clean in his Sight.* *How much more abominable and filthy is Man †?* *Who drinketh Iniquity,* though loathsome to GOD, and worse than Poison to his own Soul: yet drinketh it *like Water*; without any Hesitation or the least Fear, with an eager and profuse Delight.

This, You will observe, was alledged in a Dispute, carried on with no small Vehemency. Yet is admitted, on all hands, as unexceptionably true.—Be pleased also to take Notice, That the Charge is not confined to some very notorious Sinners, but is laid against the whole Body of Mankind. Whatever Figure they may make, each in his own Conceit; they are all described in the Word of GOD—as *Beings*, insatiably athirst

* Rom. iii. 19. Ὑποδικῶς γενήται, "May become guilty," does not so exactly answer the Scope of the Context, neither does it so solidly establish the Apostle's Argument, as "may be found guilty;" be fully convicted, and apparently liable to most just Condemnation.—Those Things were written of Old, and were quoted by St. Paul, not to render Men criminal, but to prove them so.

† *Job* xv. 14, 15, 16. The immaculate Purity of the blessed GOD, and the utter Depravity of fallen Man, are Points of so great Importance in the scriptural System of Divinity, that they are inculcated no less than three Times, within the Compass of this single Book. And by much the same noble Contrast of striking Images. Chap. iv. 17, 18—xv. 14, 15, 16—xxv. 4, 5, 6.

athirst after Evil—from *Objects*, that We cannot endure to behold; or cannot behold without Abhorrence*.——*Such* is Man by Nature! People must have Eyes very different from mine, to discern any *Dignity* in this Draught.

Ther. As to innate Dignity, We will let it pass. But this I must insist upon, and several Writers of the first Repute are on my Side.——That we enter the Stage of Life, in a State of *Indifference* either to Good or Evil.——That the Affections are like a Balance, nicely poised, and preponderating neither one Way nor the other.——The whole Soul, like a Sheet of fair Paper is equally susceptible of straight or crooked Lines; and will as readily receive the amiable Features of an Angel, as the hideous Deformity of a Devil.

Asp. With regard to your first Illustration.——The Simile, I think, confutes the Sentiment. For, to be in *Suspence*, whether We shall love the LORD our GOD, the Giver of all Good, and the Source of all Perfection; this, surely, must be condemned as an irreligious Temper.——This is a criminal Halting between GOD and *Baal*.——A Neutrality, which is no better than Hostility.

I fear, the Writers You mention, pay but little Deference to the inspired Volume. Our Escutcheon is very differently blazoned, in that Office of spiritual Heraldry. *A Transgressor from the Womb* †, is one of our hereditary Titles. Transgressors We are, by strong internal Propensity; even before We transgress, in outward Act.

Observe

* The original Words are נתעב ונאלח—One is used to signify that *abominable* Practice, which the *Ægyptians* could not bear to see, *Exod.* viii. ver. 22. *Heb. Bib.* ver. 26. *Eng. Bib.*—The other denotes an Object, too *squalid* to be viewed without *loathing*.

† *Isai.* xlviii. 8. A Truth so apparent and undeniable, that *Seneca* could not but discern it, though He was an *unlightened* Heathen: could not but *acknowledge* it, though He was one of the proud *Stoic* Sect. *Hac Conditione nati sumus. Animalia obnoxia non paucioribus Animi quam Corporis Morbis.* *De Ira.* Lib. II. c. 9.

Observe the young *Hawthorn* Plants, that have unfolded their green Leaves, in yonder Nursery; but have scarce learned to spread the gay Blossom. Is there in those an equal Aptitude, to produce the luscious juicy Grape, or their own coarse and husky Berry? By no means. They will (unless grafted with some generous Scyon) *certainly, universally, constantly* bear the same harsh Fruit with their Parent Tree.—So certainly will the human Mind, if not renewed by the SPIRIT of *CHRIST*, branch out into ungodly Tempers, and bring forth wicked Practices.

Ther. The Nobleman, mentioned by *Xenophon**, when overcome by an alluring Temptation, devised for his Excuse the Notion of two Souls; one, that inclined Him to Vice; another, that prompted Him to Virtue. This was a moderate *Caricatura*†, compared with my Friend's. He will allow nothing regular or graceful in the human Heart.—You have metamorphosed the Master-piece of the Creation, into such a deformed Object; as may justly render Him a Terror to Himself. Can there be a grosser Libel upon the CREATOR, or a greater Discouragement to our Fellow-creatures?

Asp. If this be a distorted Piece, what will You call the following Description? *GOD saw that the Wickedness of Man, was great upon the Earth, and that every Imagination of the Thoughts of his Heart, was only Evil continually* || —This, perhaps, may be reckoned a more monstrous Drawing still. Yet it came from *that* Hand, which painted the Canopy of the Skies, and touched all the Pictures of Nature into such inimitable Perfection.

Pray, let us examine the most distinguishing Features in this Draught.—Not barely the Works of his Hand, or the Words of his Tongue, but the *Imaginations of his Heart*, are evil. The Contagion has spread itself through the inner Man. It has tainted the Seat of his

* *Cyropæd.* Lib. VI.

† A Term used by the *Italian* Painters, to signify a Resemblance deformed, horrid, or ridiculous.

|| *Gen.* vi. 5.

his Principles, and the Source of his Actions.—Is there not, You will say, some *Mixture* of Good? No; they are *only* Evil. There is no hopeful Tendency. Not so much as a little Leaven of Piety; that may have a Chance to diffuse itself, and meliorate the whole Lump. —But are there no *lucid Intervals*? No happy Moments, when Virtue gains the Ascendency? None: He is only evil *continually*. The Usurpation of Sin is total, and its Tyranny perpetual.

What I have advanced, therefore, is no Libel upon the CREATOR's Benignity. Because, it is the very Echo of his own Determination.—Neither is it so properly discouraging, as humbling and alarming to our Fellow-creatures. *Humbling*, to make Us sensible of our Ruin: *Alarming*, to make Us desirous of a Recovery.

Ther. Is not this Description peculiar to the Men of that wicked Generation; whose Guilt was as unparalleled as their Punishment?

Asp. It is applicable both to them and their Successors. The Wisdom of GOD *repeats* the Charge, and fixes it upon the Race that survived the Flood. The Depravity of human Nature continued, nor could the Waters of an universal Deluge purge it away. So deep alas! is the Stain, and so incorrigible the Virulency of original Corruption; that it will yield to nothing—To nothing will it yield, but to the *Washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the HOLY GHOST**. Till this takes place, every Heart of Man must wear the Prophet's stigmatizing Motto, *Deceitful above all Things, and desperately wicked*.

Ther. This Passage, I am informed, is not rightly translated; especially, in the *last* Expression. The Hebrew Original does not bear so hard upon the human Character as the *English* Version.

Asp. You allow then, that the Heart is *deceitful*. And of this We have a glaring Proof, in the Conduct of *Hazael*. He thought it impossible, that He should ever perpetrate such horrid Barbarities, as the Prophet foresaw. *Is thy Servant a Dog, that he do this great Thing†?* Yes, *Hazael*; however thou mayest imagine Thyself

* Tit. iii. 5.

† 2 Kings viii. 13.

354 DIALOGUE XI.

Thyself gentle as a Lamb, thou art fierce as a Dog, and savage as a Tyger.—Which was most terribly demonstrated by the Event.

Suppose, we translate the other Word more accurately. The little Alteration will be of less Service to your Cause. Instead of *desperately wicked*, You may, if You please, read *deplorably disordered**. This is the exact Import of the Phrase.—It is a Metaphor, derived from a very distempered Body. In which, the whole Head is sick, and the whole Heart faint. *From the Crown of whose Head, to the Sole of whose Feet*, there is nothing but consuming Disease, and enfeebling Langours†.—The Rules of Civility may set a spacious Varnish on the Conversation. But until Grace, sanctifying Grace administers the Remedy, the most civilized Heart will be like the pale emaciated Cheek, that is poorly invivened with Paint.

Ther. What say the Writers of the New Testament? Is not *their* Way of thinking more liberal and benign? —If human Nature wore so *hideous* an Aspect, under the legal Dispensation; since the Coming of our LORD, and the Publishing of his Gospel, One may expect an *improved* and more *pleasing* Face of Things.

Asp. Human Nature in *every* Period of Time, and under every Dispensation of Religion, is still the *same*. It was the SPIRIT of CHRIST, who indited the Old Testament, and He cannot vary from Himself, in the Declarations of the New.

I am very much inclined to believe, That all the *bodily* Diseases, which our divine PHYSICIAN healed, during his Abode on Earth, were so many emblematical Representations of *spiritual* Disorders. Which, like certain Family Distempers, may be said to run in the Blood of all Mankind.—Will you give me leave, *Theron*, to explain myself? I don't like to ingross the Discourse. Yet I would willingly inlarge upon this Subject.

Ther.

* Jer. xvii. 3. *WJN.*

† *Isai.* i. 6. Agreeable to this Doctrine, and consonant to this Metaphor, is the Confession of our Liturgy. *There is no Health in us.*

Ther. By all means. The Laws of Argument, separate from the Indulgencies of Friendship, give you a Warrant to urge, whatever may support your Cause. — Besides, I shall be glad to hear your Sentiments upon a Point so curious.

Asp. The poor *Lepër*, covered with noisome Sores, is the very Picture of a *polluted Sinner*. Was the One, for his contagious Impurities, separated from the Society of his Fellow-citizens? So shall the other, for his abominable Uncleaness, be banished from the beatific Presence: Unless He be cleansed by the Blood, and justified by the Righteousness of *JESUS*.

You pity the Condition of that unhappy Creature, who was born *blind*. His Eyes rolled, but rolled in vain, to find the dawning Ray. Such is the benighted State of the human Mind, till ALMIGHTY GOODNESS command the Scales of Ignorance to fall off, and pour heavenly Day through all the intellectual Faculties. Then, and not till then, we begin to know the Holiness, the Justice, the adorable Excellencies of GOD. — We see the sublime Purity of his Law, and the extreme Depravity of our own Souls. — We are brought acquainted with the transcendent Glories of our REDEEMER's Person, and apprehend that most comfortable Mystery of his Substitution in our Stead. We discern the ineffable Perfection of his Merits, and the divinely rich Freeness of his Grace*. Truths, incomparably more delightful to the Soul, than all the delectable Scenes of Creation are to the Sight.

The Paralytic's *enervated* Limbs too truly represent the Impotence of our Nature. Was He unable to grind at a Mill; to run in a Race; or to turn Himself on His Bed? So unable are We, to fight the good Fight of Faith; to exercise the Graces of *Christianity*; or even to turn Ourselves unto GOD. — Do not *you*, my Friend, experience something of this Inability? For *my* Part,

* This and the preceding Particulars, are Lessons of the last Importance in the *Christian* School. The Knowledge of them deserves to be most solicitously sought, both by attentive Contemplation, and by earnest Prayer. For, to know them; is to be *truly wise*; to be influenced by them, is to be *substantially happy*.

356 DIALOGUE XI.

Part, I must lay my Hand on my Breast, and daily, hourly confess, "*The Palsy is Here.* Though not altogether dead in Sin (blessed be *CHRIST JESUS*, and his quickening *SPIRIT*!) yet how languid is my Zeal, how enfeebled my Industry, in the great Affair of everlasting Salvation! I would fain believe the Promises of the faithful *JEHOVAH*; but how often do I stagger through Unbelief! I would fain love the *LORD* my *GOD* with all my Heart; but Oh! what Coldness benumbs my Affections! I wish to be humble in every Thought; heavenly in all my Desires; and wholly resigned to the divine Will. But, alas! my Sufficiency for these Things, is like the *flaccid Sinew*, or the *withered Arm*."

It would be endless to particularize all the Maladies, which were Emblems of our Misery, and the Triumphs of our *LORD*'s Power. Let me only remark — That *their* Bodies were afflicted with a *single* Disorder, *our* Souls labour under a *Complication* of Evils. — They *felt* their Affliction, and were desirous, importunately desirous of Relief. We are, till awakened from above, insensible of our calamitous Case. We add, to all our other Indispositions, a stupefying Lethargy, or an extravagant Delirium.

Ther. Such allegorical Expositions of Scripture are pretty enough. But, I presume, You yourself cannot reckon them *demonstrative*. For my own Part, I must appeal from the Surmises of Fancy, to the Verdict of Reason.

Asp. I cannot think, that the allegorical Sense, when *soberly* introduced, is unworthy our Regard, or without its Weight. However, I have no Design to preclude your Appeal. — Will the avowed, will the reiterated Decision of an Apostle, satisfy my Friend, and be admitted as the Verdict of Reason? — *St. Paul* has declared of Himself; *in me, that is, in my Flesh*, or unrenewed Nature, *dwelleth no Good**; no good Temper, nor so much as any good Desire. — Elsewhere he affirms; That *the carnal Mind*, or unregenerate Soul, *is not subject to the Law of GOD*. Nay, is an Enemy, or

ra-

* Rom. vii. 18.

rather *Enmity* itself † — against what? — Against Sin? That were a noble Antipathy. — Against the World? That were a laudable Disaffection. — No; but against GOD and his Law. Amazing Perverseness! To be Enmity against GOD; who is boundless Benignity, and consummate Goodness. Enmity against his Law; which is the Transcript of his amiable Perfections, and the faultless Model of all Virtue.

Ther. This I suppose, is the Character of *Saul* the *Pharisee*, not of *Paul* the Apostle. Descriptive of his Condition, when He was “ a Blasphemer, a Persecutor, and injurious.”

Asp. It relates not to Himself alone, but is applicable to All, who continue in a State of Nature. — The blessed AUTHOR of our Being, speaking of Mankind in general says; That *He is even Flesh* *: He is incapable of relishing heavenly Things, and wholly enslaved to fleshly Appetites. — The beneficent RESTORER of our Happiness, pronounces the same Sentence, in the very same Words: *That which is born of the Flesh, is Flesh* †: The Faculties which Men receive by their natural Birth, have a carnal Bias; incline to nothing, but sordid Pleasures, and ignoble Pursuits. — Our SAVIOUR reinculcates the Admonition, and illustrates it by a very remarkable Allusion. You cannot forget his Answer to a procrastinating Disciple; *Let the Dead bury their Dead* ‡: Intimating, that as many as are unsanctified by the HOLY GHOST, though possessed of an animal, are destitute of the divine Life: are no more fit for the Kingdom of Heaven, for its converse or its Joys,

† Rom. viii. 7.

* *Gen.* vi. 3 The Word *Flesh*, by which the all-wise CREATOR characterizes Man, signifies, among the sacred Writers, whatever is *dishonourable* in itself; *provoking* to GOD; or introductory to the *Ruin* of Man. — The *Works of the Flesh*, are a Compendium of all Iniquity. *Gal.* v. 19, 20, 21 — To *walk in the Flesh*, is the very Reverse of walking in the SPIRIT; diametrically opposite to the divine Law, and true Holiness, *Rom.* viii. 4 — To be *carnally minded*, or to have the Influence, the Savour, the Relish of the Flesh (*φρονημα σαρκος*) predominant in our Minds, is the spiritual Death of the Soul; and a Prelude of eternal Death, both in Body and Soul, *Rom.* viii. 6.

‡ John iii. 6.

§ Matt. viii. 22.

358 DIALOGUE XI.

Joys, than a pale Corpse in the Coffin, or dry Bones in the Charnel-house, are qualified to transact any secular Business.

St. Paul sets the Seal of Heaven to this momentous Truth, in various Passages of his Epistles. From a Multitude, let me select one, and recommend it to your serious Consideration. *You, that were sometime alienated and Enemies*: The *Colossians*, and all Mankind were alienated from the living GOD; had no true Knowledge of Him; and, what is worse, had no sincere Desire after Him. Nay; they were not only Strangers, but Enemies; in a State of Hostility to his holy Nature and heavenly Will.—What can express a greater Degeneracy? Nothing, unless it be the following Clause: *by a Mind intent upon wicked Works* *. A Mind, not only averse to all Good, but passionately prone to all Evil.

Ther. A few picked Passages, of a figurative Import, and artfully cogged by some dexterous Interpretation, may seem to support your Cause.

Asp. Ah! Theron, there is no need to use Sleight of Hand. He that runs, may read this Doctrine in the sacred Authors. It is *interwoven* with the whole Series of their *historical*, and makes a *professed* Part of their *practical* Writings.

What is more common with the inspired Penmen, than to express a profligate Course of Life, by *following our own Imaginations, and walking in our own Ways*? When Immorality and Licentiousness were predominant in *Israel*; knew no Restraints, and kept no Bounds; how does the unerring Historian describe this horrible State of Things? *Every One did that which was right in his own Eyes* †. Nothing can more strongly imply the total Depravity of Mankind, than such a Phraseology. Which makes it one and the same Thing,

* *Colos. i. 21.* Τη διαβολα εν τοις εργοις τοις πονηροις, *Mente malis Operibus intenta.* An eminent Critic would thus point, and thus translate the Words. And assigns, for his Alteration, the following Reason; *Mens enim dicitur esse in ea Re, quam semper cogitat, ad quam Cupidine fertur & inclinatur.* Davenant in loc. —Let the Words be pointed and translated, either in *this* or the *received* Manner, they speak the Language, and confirm the Sentiments of this whole Dialogue.

† *Judg. xvii. 6.*—See also *Psal. lxxxi. 12. Eccles. xi. 9. Acts. xiv. 16.*

to pursue our *natural* Inclinations ; and to act the abandoned Sinner.

St. *Jude* cannot write a few Lines, but He must touch upon this Subject ; must teach this humbling Lesson. *Sensual*, † He says, *not having the SPIRIT*. According to *his* Estimate, not to be actuated by the Power of *especial* Grace, is to remain under the Dominion of Sensuality. *Every* Man, while unrenewed by the divine SPIRIT, is governed by Flesh and Sense. Can *any* Man then pretend to be originally free from the Influence of Corruption ?

St. *Paul* exempts not Himself, no, nor the highest Saints, from the opprobrious Charge: *We all walked according to the Desires of the Flesh and of the Mind*. Which Desires in *Us*, as well as in the idolatrous *Heathens*, were base, sordid, and contaminating. Inasmuch that We, who are *Jews* by *Birth* ? who are Sons of GOD by our *new* Birth ; even We were by Nature the Children of Wrath ‡.

Ther. What says St. *James* ? I had almost forgot his Testimony ; though it is so very pertinent to my Purpose, and so very explicit in my Favour. *Men, who are made after the Similitude of GOD*.—The Similitude of GOD signifies, in the sacred Books, those moral Endowments, which distinguish the Possessor both from the Brute and the Devil. And if Men are made after this Image, or vested with these Endowments, *where* is your Doctrine of original Sin ?

Assp. I began to flatter myself, that your Objections were exhausted. But, since I am mistaken in this Particular, surely it must be as great a Mistake to imagine, that the Apostle would maintain an Opinion, so repugnant to the aforementioned Texts, and so contrary to universal Observation.—Do not You perceive the very reverse true, with regard to your own *Children* ? Why do You address them with such tender Intreaties ; such warm Exhortations ; such repeated Arguments ?

† *Jude* 19. The original Expression is *Ψυχικοί*, and denotes Persons, who have no higher Principle, than the *animal* Life, and *rational* Soul.

‡ *Eph.* ii. 3. *Hoc uno Loco*, says *Beza*, *quasi Fulmine, totus Homo, quantus quantus est, prosternitur. Neque enim Naturam dicunt læsam, sed mortuam, per Peccatum ; ideoque Iræ obnoxiam.*

360 DIALOGUE XI.

ments? Why do You allure them to Duty by Promises, and deter them from Transgression by Threatnings? Is all this Regimen, all this Discipline necessary for Creatures, that bear the holy Image of GOD?

They made after the Similitude of GOD!—Then they have no need of the *renewing* Influences of the HOLY GHOST, in case they live; and no need of the *Atonement* of CHRIST's Blood, in case they die. Would *James* the LORD's Brother assert such an egregious Error; as not only opposes a single Article, but undermines the whole Constitution of *Christianity*? Sets aside the Sanctification of the DIVINE SPIRIT, and the Propitiation of the REDEEMER's Death?—Impossible for Him to assert! Impossible, I should think, for Us to suppose!

St. *James* speaks of a Fact that is *past*: speaks of Men *collectively*, as they were all included in their first Parent. The Passage, I apprehend, should be translated, not, Men that *are*, but, Men that *were* * created, &c. —The Scripture considers *Adam*, as the common Parent of Us all: nay more, considers Us all as existing in our great Progenitor, Which is so far from overthrowing, that it establishes, the Point in Debate. For, if We were all created after the Similitude of GOD, in and with *Adam*; it must follow, that We all fell from our Conformity to GOD, in and with *Adam*. And if so—let me for once retort my Friend's Interrogatory—Where is *not* original Sin?

I am very sure, it runs through our *Liturgy*; is an essential Part of our *Articles*; and most strongly delineated in our *Homilies*. Shall I produce some of those Testimonies; which are as clear, as they are copious?

Ther. No more of your Testimonies, good *Appasio*. Inform me rather, what *Advantage* can accrue from your inculcating, or my adopting such a Doctrine. Suppose, it were undeniably true; disagreeable Truths, like disagreeable Objects, should be consigned over to Obscurity,

* *Jam.* iii. 9. That this is the precise Signification of the Participle *γεγονοτας*, may be gathered from 1 *Tim.* v. 9. Where *γεγονυια* is translated *having been*; and must necessarily refer, not to the *present*, but to the *past* Condition of the Widow.

DIALOGUE XI. 361

scurity, not obtruded upon our View. — On such an Occasion, the Reply of *Themistocles* should be mine. One of the *Literati* of *Greece*, offered to communicate an elaborate and curious Invention. By means of which, his Memory should be so wonderfully strengthened, as to retain whatever he read or heard. *My Friend*, replied the Hero, *You quite mistake the Way to serve me. I want to learn the Art, not of remembering, but of forgetting.*

Asp. If to forget our Disease, were a likely Method to *restore* our Health, I should readily concur in your Hero's Way of Thinking. As this will hardly be allowed, I cannot but judge it more adviseable, to remember our Disease, that We may inquire after a Remedy.

Ther. Where is this Remedy to be had?

Asp. Not on Earth, but from Heaven. — The Schools of Science cannot discover it. The Courts of Kings are unable to procure it. The College of Physicians know not how to prescribe it. But the Gospel of our Salvation both prescribes and dispenses it. The Language of *CHRIST* in his holy Word is, * *I will bring her Health and Cure.* And the Beginning of our Cure is, to be sensible of our Disorder.

Hence We are taught to be *humble*. — To review the Catalogue of our *actual* Transgressions, is a mortifying Employ. But that which lays the Soul in the lowest Abasement, is the Conviction of *inbred* Iniquity. This strikes at the Root of human Vanity, and cuts asunder the very Sinews of Self-conceit. Blindness in the Understanding; Impotency in the Will; Disorder in the Affections; these are not *Visitants*, but † *Inhabitants*; congenial with our Frame, and ingrained in our Constitution. How then — O! how can *We* be vain of our mortal Beauty, who have an hereditary Defilement cleaving to all our Faculties? Surely, this must banish the *Pharisee* from our Breast, and inspire Us with the Sentiments of that sincere Penitent, *Be-*

* Jer. xxxiii. 6.

† Called therefore *οικετα εν εμοι αμαρτια*, Sin that dwelleth in me. Rom. vii 17.

362 DIALOGUE XI.

bold! I am vile †! Must teach us the Language of the abashed Leper, Unclean! Unclean †!

Ther. I should think it would make Us *melancholy*, rather than humble. Serve no other Purpose, than to introduce an afflictive Sense of extreme Wretchedness.

Asp. Did We intend to rest Here, your Apprehensions would be just. But We urge the Doctrine of original Corruption, as a *Preparative* for the Redemption of *CHRIST*.

It is observable, that very Few applied to the blessed *JESUS* in the Days of his Flesh, but the Sons and Daughters of Affliction. The Levee of that PRINCE of PEACE, was crouded by the Lame, the Blind, the Maimed. These, being sensible of Distress, and longing for Relief, fell as humble Supplicants, at his Feet. While Others, who were firm in their Health, and gay in their Spirits, rejected Him with contemptuous Scorn.—When We perceive “the Plague of our Heart,” and feel those worse than ulcerous Sores, which overspread our Nature; We also shall ardently seek to *the LORD our Healer*. When We find Ourselves subject to the Curse of the Law, in Bondage to the Tyranny of Satan, and liable to everlasting Damnation; *then* the divine REDEEMER will be precious indeed.—Whereas, if We remain insensible of our Misery, the Gospel, which is *saving Health* to the contrite Soul, will be an *unaffected Story* to our Ears. We may hear it, We may read it, as an amusing Narrative; but shall not *receive* it, as a sovereign Remedy.

Ther. Not receive the Gospel! I hardly understand what You mean. I often study the Gospel; I believe it to be a divine Revelation; and endeavour to follow its Directions.—I look upon it, as containing the most refined System of Morality; as enforcing every Virtue, by the strongest Motives; and recommending all, by the most amiable Example.

Asp. But what think You of one grand Doctrine, one very distinguishing Privilege of the Gospel? I mean the

† Job xl. 4.

† Lev. xiii. 45.

the Doctrine and the Privilege of *spiritual Regeneration*. Exclusive of which, all your Endeavours to possess Virtue and practice Morality, are like Endeavours to fly without Wings, or to run without Feet.

While unimpressed with a Sense of our original Depravity, We shall probably sit down contented with some *superficial* Reformation, and not aspire after a Renewal of the Heart. *Civility* will pass for *Sanctity*, and a *temperate* Disposition for a *gracious* Habit.— Why is the New Birth, why are all the saving Operations of the blessed SPIRIT, disregarded by some, derided by others? Because, these Persons are insensible of their utter Impotency to all Good, and their abject Slavery to all Evil. Therefore, they see no Reason for *this* divine Agency, or for *that* universal Change.

You also, my dear Friend, while unacquainted with your natural Corruption, cannot apprehend either the Reasonableness or the Necessity, of being *renewed in the Spirit of your Mind* *. But when Experience has taught You the former, You will want no Arguments to convince You of the latter.—Can Creatures, who are *blind* in their Understandings, discern the Things which belong to their eternal Peace?—Can Creatures, who are *dead* in Sin, exercise the Graces, or discharge the Duties of a *Christian* Life?—Can Creatures, whose Hearts are *Enmity* against GOD, either delight to do his Will Here, or be meet for his beatific Presence Hereafter?

Under the Influence of such Convictions, that New Birth, which the Gospel of *CHRIST* promises, which the SPIRIT of GOD produces, will appear as necessary for your State, and be as welcome to your Soul, as these gentle *Dews* are necessary for the languishing Herbs, and welcome to the thirsty Soil.

Ther. The Dews, though refreshing to the Flowers, may be too chilly for our Constitutions. And see! the Star of Evening, by proclaiming the Approach of Night, has given Us a Warning to quit our Arbour.—Some other Time We must resume this Inquiry. For

* Eph. iv. 23.

364 D I A L O G U E XII.

I am by no means satisfied, that your Theory agrees with Experience.

Asp. I fear, I have already kept you out too long. Let me just observe, as We go in—that the Doctrine, however disagreeable in itself, is conducted to a *beneficial* Issue. It is productive of a much more substantial Consolation. than History assigns to the great but exiled *Marius*. When he fled with his ruined Circumstances, to linger out the poor Remains of Life among the Ruins of *Carthage*, what was his chief Support? “Contemplating, says my Author, that famous City in the Dust, He was the less afflicted with his own Down-fal *.”

We have not been put off with such cold Comforts, such *negative* Benefits. The Belief of original Sin has a Tendency——To make Us *humble*——To shew Us our *Need* of *CHRIST*——To create in Us a Hunger and Thirst after the *renewing* Influences of his *SPIRIT*, and the justifying Merit of his Righteousness.—So that it must be owing to our own Perverseness, or our own Negligence, if We do not levy a *Tax* upon our *Loss*, and *rise* even by our *Fall*.



D I A L O G U E XII.

THE Sun was fiercely bright, and the Sky without a Cloud—Not a Breath fanned the Woods; not a Gale curled the Stream.—The Fields, exposed to all the fiery Beams, were like a glowing Hearth.—The little Birds, overcome by the potent Influence, lost for a while their tuneful Notes. Nothing was heard in the Garden, but the drowsy Hum of Bees, and the Moan-

* *Inopem Vitam in Tugurio Ruinarum Carthaginensium toleravit : cum Marius aspiciens Carthaginem, illa intuentes Marium, alter alteri possent esse Solatio.*
Vell. Paterc.

D I A L O G U E X I I . 365

Moan-like Buz of winged Insects.—All Nature seemed to *languish*. The flourishing Meads looked sickly; the gayest Blossoms began to fade; and the sprightliest Animals, if not reposed under some cooling Shelter, panted for Breath, amidst the all-surrounding Blaze, and the unsufferable Heat.

Aspasio disappeared ever since Dinner, and none could tell, whither He was gone — *Theron*, as soon as the Tea-Equipage was removed, took his Way to the *Wood*. Desirous of the thickest Shade, He hastened to the Center. A serpentine Walk composed the Avenue; which, after several Windings, delivered Him into a large circular Area: not covered with a *Græcian* or *Roman* Temple, unmeaning Imitation of Pagan Idolatry: but surrounded with aged and princely Oaks. The Coalition of whose Branches, threw over the grassy Plat a majestic rural Dome; and their unpierced Foliage, *imbrowned the Noon-tide Hours*.

In the Midst, and elevated on a square Base, was a Statue representing the venerable *Elijah*—on his bended Knees—with Hands stretched out, and Eyes lifted up to Heaven. His Attitude, his Air, his every Feature, were a most lively Comment on those strong energetic Expressions of Scripture; *take hold on GOD**; *wrestle with the ALMIGHTY†*; *pour out your Hearts before him†*.—On one Side of the Pedestal, were engraven the Priests of *Baal*; in frantic Emotions calling upon their senseless Deity, and gashing themselves with un-availing Wounds.—On the other was exhibited in Basso-relievo, the adoring *Tisbite's* Altar; his Victim burning with Fire from the LORD, even while the Water ran from every Limb, and overflowed the Trench below.

A remote Cascade tumbled from a craggy Rock. The Stream, after having wasted its silver Foam in a winding Progress, straggled into this grand Arbour. Here, it just appeared, gliding down a gentle Slope, with a flaunting Air, and a prattling Noise. Impressed,

* *Isai. lxiv. 7.*

† *Psal. lxii. 8.*

† *Coloss. iv. 12. Αἰνεῖτε τὸν κύριον ἐν ταῖς ψαλμοῖς καὶ ὕμνοις.*

as it were, with the unexpected *Solemnity* of the Scene, it seemed to check its wanton Waves, and turned aside into a more sequestered Path. As some *heedless* Trifler, that bolts unawares into the royal Presence, stands struck with Reverence and Awe, or retires with Precipitance and Confusion.

The deep Gloom, shedding a Kind of Night, even while the Sun glared in the Sky.—Not a Whisper stirring, among so many Millions of Leaves; and all their warbling Natives hushed in Silence.—The sonorous *Toll* of the distant Cascade, and the tinkling *Chime* of the nearer Rill.—The profound Adoration, and fervent Devotion, that lived in the Lineaments of the impassioned Stone.—All these Circumstances rendered the Place prodigiously august and striking. Not much unlike the antient *Oratories**; where holy People retired from the giddy Ring and the bustling Croud, to ennoble their Minds with sublime Contemplation. Where, they bid a temporary Adieu to the tumultuous World, its gay Impertinence, and solemn Dulness; in order to maintain a more uninterrupted Communion with that MIGHTY BEING, who *sitteth upon the Circle*

* It is thought by some eminent Critics, that when our LORD continued all Night *ἡ προσευχὴ Θεῷ*, Luke vi. 12. The Phrase denotes his Continuance in an *Oratory*; a Place set apart for Prayer, and a devout Intercourse with GOD.

That there were Places of this Kind among the *Jews*, is indisputable; and that the Opinion is ingenious, cannot be denied. But I very much doubt, whether it gives Us the true Meaning of the Evangelist.—Having mentioned a *Mountain*, it would hardly suit his concise Manner, to be more particular with regard to the Place; neither was the Circumstance so important, as to deserve a second Mention—I am apt to think also, that *such a Place* would have defeated the Design of our SAVIOUR's Retirement, which seems to have been Privacy; and that *such a Title*, as GOD's Place of Prayer, was wholly appropriated to the Temple.

I apprehend, We shall have a more *defensible*, and I am certain, We shall have a more *exalted* Sense, if We suppose the Expression to signify—the Copiousness and Fervour of our LORD's Devotion—the vast Importance, and the unequalled Success, of this his solemn Prayer. Which could no way be more emphatically declared, than by the Addition of the Divine Name.—See *Alfasi's Remark*, p. 29.

D I A L O G U E XII. 367

*Circle of the Earth, and the Inhabitants thereof are as Grasshoppers before Him. **

Welcome to *Theron*, was the shady Bower ; welcome the cool Aspect, and the musical Flow of the Water ; but more welcome than all, was the Sight of his Friend. Who lay reclined at the Foot of an Oak ; with a Book half open in his Hand, and his Eye fixed upon the Statue.

Ther. I know not, *Aspasio*, whether I must make an Apology, for breaking in upon your Retirement, or call You to an Account for depriving the Ladies of your Company at the 'Tea-table.

Asp. Indeed, *Theron*, I have been so much delighted with the Place ; with the Companion in my Hand ; and the noble Object before me ; that I scarce observed how the Time stole away. And I flatter myself, if You will take a Seat by my Side, and share my Entertainment, You will be more inclined to excuse, than to aggravate my Fault.

Ther. Is *Tully* then (for I observe his Name on the Volume) your Companion ? And can such a devoted Admirer of the *Bible*, be so highly charmed with a *Heathen Classic* ? *St. Augustine* somewhere declares, that, though passionately fond, before his Conversion, of *Tully's* Writings ; yet, after his Conversion, He could not relish those admired Compositions ; because they were not *sweetened*, as he expresses himself, with the *mellifluous* Name of *JESUS*.

Asp. I am far from pretending to such an exalted Pitch of Devotion, as that seraphic Father attained. I can spend a vacant Minute on the delicate Odes of

* *Isai.* lx. 22. What a noble *Image* is here, and what an exquisitely fine *Contrast* ! GOD, the great GOD, sitteth on those lofty and immense Heavens, which, at an inconceivable Distance, surround this pensile Globe. From that most sublime and magnificent Throne, he looks down upon the Inhabitants of the Earth.—Who in all their Pomp and Splendor—amidst all their admired Works, and boasted Acquisitions—are *mean* and *impotent* in his Sight. Mean and impotent as the poor Insects, that wander over the parched Heath for Sustenance ; that spend all the Day, in idle insignificant Chirpings ; and, at Night, take up their contemptible Habitation on a Blade of Grass.

Horace; and taste a refined Entertainment in *Virgil's* beautiful Poem. But when I hear a *Sermon*, or peruse a *religious* Treatise, that borrows neither Dignity nor Charms from that amiable and glorious Name, I own myself extremely disappointed. Without the Person, the Offices, or the Grace of *CHRIST*, the Sermon and the Treatise appear as *defective*, as a Body that is neither adorned with the Head, nor invlivened with the Heart.

Ther. I suppose then You cultivate an Acquaintance with the *Grecian* and *Roman* Authors, in order to improve your Taste, and polish your Style.

Asp. These, and I am apt to think, more considerable Advantages than these, may be derived from an occasional Application to their Works. They may serve as so many Shades, to set off, with *heightened* Lustre, the Beauty and Glory of the sacred Oracles.

While I peruse *Plato's* ornamented Page, or listen to *Cicero's* flowing Periods, I am somewhat like the Person, who amuses himself in a Gallery of *painted* Flowers. He is pleased with the curious Creation of the Pencil. But, finds none of that *delicious* Fragrance, none of those *breathing* Sweets, which meet him in the Garden, and regale his Sense from the blooming Parterre. — So, here are brilliant Sentiments, and a florid Diction; delicate Touches of Wit, and bold Strokes of Description. But, no Discovery of *CHRIST JESUS*—no Displays of his ineffable Love—no Overtures of Reconciliation with the blessed GOD. Nothing to yield Us *solid* Comfort, in our present State; or any *joyful* Expectations, with regard to the approaching Eternity.

Besides; when I converse with those celebrated Geniuses of Antiquity, that were at once the most erroneous, and the most judicious—the *most judicious*, in their Taste of polite Literature; the *most erroneous*, in their Apprehensions of invisible Things; they shew me, what they never intended, the inexpressible Need of *Revelation*. They teach me to set a higher Value on that inestimable Gift. I bless the distinguishing Goodness of Providence, which has cast my
 Lot,

Lot*, not at *Athens*, but in IMMANUEL's Land. I say, with Wonder and Gratitude—"Why did "not *my* Existence commence, in those *Æras* of religious Dotage? Why was not *my* Portion confined, "to those Regions of Barbarism and Delusion? Why "am not I burning Incense to Idols; paying senseless "Adoration to sculptured Stone; or worshipping, "with detestable Ceremonies, a Set of lascivious, debauched, and scandalous || Deities?"—Surely, *Theron*, from every Perusal of those Volumes, attended with such a Reflection, We shall have the utmost Reason to magnify *the tender Mercies of our GOD*; *whereby the Day-spring from on high hath visited Us* †, and brought Us out of Darkness into the marvelous Light of the Gospel.

Permit me to mention another Benefit, that may result from a Correspondence with those masterly Writers.—The Streams may lead us to the inexhaustible Fountain. Lead Us to admire the *only wise* GOD our SAVIOUR, who has given such a shining Vein of Ingenuity to his rational Creatures. As I read their Works, and am charmed with their Beauties, I would frequently reflect—"If the Essays of a finite Mind, "and the Compositions of a mortal Pen, yield such "high Satisfaction; what exquisite, what unknown "Delight must arise, from an uninterrupted Communion with infinite Wisdom? To stand—not at the

* Alluding to the Story of the Philosopher, who used to bless the Gods for three Privileges—That He was made, not a *Brute*, but a *rational* Creature.—That He was born, not in *barbarous* Climes, but in *Greece*.—That He lived, not in the more *uncultivated* Ages, but in the Time and under the Tuition of *Socrates*.

|| This, I think, gives Us the most deplorable and horrid Idea of the *Blindness* of our fallen Nature. The Heathens, even amidst all the Politeness of their Taste, and notwithstanding their superior Advancement in the Sciences, were *Haters* of the true GOD, and robbed Him of his Honour: nay, what is unspeakably worse, they paid it to *Monsters*—Monsters of Lewdness and Treachery, Vice and Immorality. Egregious, sottish, almost incredible Stupidity! To *worship* those Beings, which deserved universal *Abhorrence*! To *deify* those Characters, which could never be sufficiently *detested*!

† Luke i. 78.

“ Feet of *Homer*, and attend the Flights of his elevated
 “ Imagination—not in the Presence of *Socrates*, and
 “ hear the Dictates of his sagacious Soul—but, to
 “ stand in the Courts of the LORD, and before the
 “ Throne of the LAMB. There to contemplate,
 “ without any interposing Veil, the Counsels of his
 “ unerring Providence; to see the Mysteries of his re-
 “ deeming Love, laid fully open to our View; and
 “ receive the brightest Manifestations of all his amia-
 “ ble, his adorable, his unspeakable Attributes!”

Ther. These are Advantages, truly desirable, and
 equally obvious. Methinks, it *surprises* me, that I should
 never so much as propose them; and *grieves* me, that
 I should so long be deprived of them. A View to such
 very superior Improvements will, I hope, render my
 future Intercourse with those favourite Authors, still
 more agreeable, and abundantly more beneficial.

But let me ask, what Passage was engaging your At-
 tention, this Afternoon?

Asp. The great Orator's Treatise, concerning the
Nature of the DIVINE BEING *. That Part especi-
 ally, which proves his Existence and Perfections, from
 the Formation of the *human Body*.

Ther. And do not You perceive, that He is almost
 as deficient in the Knowledge of his Subjects; as He
 is mistaken in his Ideas of the supreme Cause?—The
 exquisite Contrivance and inimitable Workmanship of
 the human Frame, were, in those early Ages, but dimly
 discerned. It was the *Infancy* of Anatomy: when the
 very Professors had scarcely the Qualifications of a mo-
 dern Graduate. Many of the received Notions, were
 childish; almost all of them, superficial.

Asp. Will my *Theron* then entertain me, with a
 more accurate Description of this wonderful Struc-
 ture?

Ther. How could You take Occasion, *Aspasio*, from
 the Hint I dropped, to conceive any such Expecta-
 tion? It is one Thing to *discover*, another to *correct*,
 what is amiss. Many Spectators can point out an ac-
 cidental Defect in some celebrated Statue, or a small
 Inde-

* *De Natura Decrum.*

Indelicacy in some valuable Piece of Painting; who are absolutely incapable of retouching the One, or supplying the Other.

Asp. Since We are fallen upon this Point, You must give me leave to renew and urge my Request. I shall be extremely glad to hear your Remarks upon the Subject. Especially, as You have made this *Branch* of Science, a Part of your Amusement; and not without the Advantage of *anatomical* Dissections. Whereas, I have very seldom applied my Thoughts to the former, and never had an Opportunity of being present at the latter.

Let me also observe, that our very Situation favours, or rather suggests such a Topic of Conversation. All the fine Prospects of the Country are excluded. We have scarce any Thing left, but *Ourselves*, to contemplate. And shall this be the only Theme We neglect?

Ther. It is somewhat preposterous, I must confess, to pry into the Archives of Colleges; to ransack the Cabinets of the *Virtuosi*; to carry our Search through the whole Compass of external Nature; and, at the same Time, overlook the far more surprising Curiosities, which abound in the Composition of our own Bodies.

Since you insist upon it, my Observations, crude and extemporaneous as they are, shall submit themselves to your Judgment, Provided, You will be content to receive, only a *few* of the *Outlines*, and nothing like a *finished* Draught,

Asp. Let me just hint, that the more *circumstantial* your Account is, so much the more welcome will it be to your Friend, and so much the more honourable to our common CREATOR. For, I really think, that *Galen's* Declaration upon this Head is perfectly just: which I have read in my favourite Commentator *Beza*, and which speaks to the following Effect||.—

“ Such

|| Ιερὸν λόγον ἐγὼ, τὴ δημοιργησαντῶν ἡμᾶς ὑμῶν ἀληθινόν, συντιθεμί· καὶ νομίζω τὰτ' εἶναι τὴν οὐλῶς εὐσεβείαν ἔχει εἰ ταυρῶν ἐκλιτομέας αὐτῶν παμπολλὰς καὶ ἀθυσαίμιν, καὶ τὰ ἄλλα μυρία
μυρία

“ Such Treatises, as display the Excellencies of the
 “ great CREATOR, compose one of the noblest
 “ and most *acceptable* Hymns. To acquaint Ourselves
 “ with his sublime Perfections; and point out to O-
 “ thers his infinite Power, his unerring Wisdom, and
 “ his boundless Benignity; this is a more *substantial*
 “ Act of Devotion, than to slay Hecatombs of Victims
 “ at his Altar, or kindle Mountains of Spices into In-
 “ cense.” *Theron*, after pausing a few Minutes, thus
 resumed the Discourse.

Ther. When some Master-builder undertakes to e-
 rect a magnificent Edifice, he begins with the less de-
 corated, but more solid Parts. Those which are to *sup-*
port, or those which are to *contain* the rest. This Or-
 der, if You please, We will follow, in considering
 “ the earthly House of our Tabernacle ||.”

First, You have a System of *Bones*; cast into a Variety
 of Moulds; enlarged or contracted into a Variety of Sizes.
 All *strong*, that they may commodiously bear up the
 fleshy Machine; yet *light*, that they may not depress the
 Animal with an encumbering Load.—*Bored* with an
 internal Cavity, to contain the moistening Marrow;
 and *perforated* with exceedingly fine Ducts, to admit the
 nourishing Vessels — Insensible themselves, they are
 covered with a Membrane § of exquisite Sensibility.
 Which warns them of the Approach, and secures them
 from the Annoyance, of any injurious Friction:—and,
 at

μυρα θυμιασαιμι, κ' κασιας. ΑΛΛ' εἰ γνοίην μὲν αὐτό, ἐπεὶ ἴα
 δε κ' ἀλλοῖς ἐξηγησαιμην, οἱ μὲν ἐστὶν τὴν σοφίαν, οἱ δὲ τὴν
 δύναμιν, οἱ δὲ τὴν χρηστότητα. Vid. Bez. Annot. ad
 Rem. i. 20.

|| 2. Cor. v. 1. *St. Paul* very pertinently compares the bodily
 Structure to a House. And adds, in the Strain of godly Edifying,
 which runs through all his Writings, our *earthly and tent-like* Ha-
 bitation, ἐπιγίγεται οἰκία τῶ σκηνῆς. Referring to its *mean Original*,
 as it was formed out of the Dust; and to its *short Continuance*, as it
 must soon return to Dust again. Being though commodious as a
 House, yet transitory as a Tent: not like the *everlasting Moun-*
tains, which stand fixed and rooted to the Centre; but like those
portable Tenements, which are set up in the Evening, taken down
 in the Morning, and then their Place is known no more.

§ The Peristœum.

at the same time, preserves the muscular Parts, from being fretted in their Action, by the hard and rough Substance of the Bones.—Their *Figures* are always most precisely fitted to their Uses. They are generally larger at the Extremities, than in the Middle; that they may be joined more firmly, and not so easily dislocated.—The Manner of their *Articulation* is truly admirable †, and remarkably various: yet never varied, without demonstrating some wise Design, and answering some valuable End. Frequently, when two are united, the one is nicely rounded, and capped with a smooth Substance; the other is scooped into a Hollow of the same Dimensions, to receive the polish'd Knob; and both are lubricated with an unctuous Fluid, to yield the readiest Rotation in the Socket.

The *Feet* compose the firmest and neatest Pedestal: infinitely beyond all that Statuary or Architecture can accomplish; capable of altering its Form, and extending its Size, as different Circumstances require. Besides performing the Office of a Pedestal, they contain a Set of the nicest Springs; which help to place the Body in a Variety of graceful Attitudes, and qualify it for a Multiplicity of advantageous Motions.—The under-most Part of the Heel, and the Extremity of the Sole, are shod with a tough, insensible, sinewy Substance. This We may call, a kind of *natural Sandal*. It never wears out; never wants Repair; and always prevents that undue Compression of the Vessels, which the Weight of the Body, in walking or standing might otherwise occasion.—The *Legs* and *Thighs*, are like substantial and stately Columns ‡; articulated in such a Manner, that

† *Mirabiles Commissuras habent.* Cicer.

‡ Styled therefore by the sacred Philosopher, *The strong Men*, Eccles. xii. 3.—And compared, by the same beautiful Writer, to *Pillars of Marble*. Cantic. v. 15. As these are the strongest Parts of the Body, and the Support of all the other, hence, I presume, arose that *proverbial* Expression, which occurs in the History of *Sampson*, שוק על-ידך *Judg.* xv. 8. Rendered by the *Septuagint*, ὡς ἐπὶ ὤμων σου, by our *English* Translators, *Hip and Thigh*. I believe the Word שוק signifies Here, as in many other Places, what the *Latins* call *Armus*. And that the Image is taken from some

that they administer most commodiously to the Act of Walking, yet obstruct not the easy Posture of Sitting. The Legs swell out, towards the Top, with a genteel Projection; and are wrought off towards the Bottom, with neat Diminutions. Which Variations lessens their Bulk, at the same Time that it increases their Beauty.

The *Ribs* turned into a regular Arch, are gently moveable, for the Act of Respiration. They form a secure Lodgement for the Lungs and the Heart: which, being some of the most distinguished and important Organs of Life, have their Residence fortified by this strong semicircular Rampart †. — The *Back-bone* is intended, not only to strengthen the Body, and sustain its most capacious Store-Rooms; but also to bring down that Communication of the Brain, which is usually termed the *spinal Marrow*. As an open Channel, it conveys, as a well-closed Case, it guards this vital Silver†; and, by several commodious Outlets, transmits the animating Treasure into all the inferior Parts. Had it only been large, straight, and hollow, it might have served these several Purposes. But then the Loins must have been inflexible, and every Man impaled (not by the Executioner, but by Nature) on a stake co-eval with his Existence. To avoid which, it consists of very short Bones, closely knit together by intervening Cartilages. This Peculiarity of Structure prevents Dislocation; gives the main Pillar of our Frame the *Pliancy* of an *Ofer*, even while it retains the *Firmness* of an *Oak*. — By this means, it is a Kind of continued Joint; capable of various Inflexions, without bruising the soft medullary Substance,

that some robust and fierce Animal, whose *Shoulders* before, and whose *Thighs* behind are broken in Pieces. Then what Mischief can he do? What Resistance can He make? He is utterly disabled. So that the Expression seems to denote, (and might perhaps without Violence to the Original, be translated) *A total Overthrow*.

† *Thou hast fenced me*, secured my inward and vital Parts, with *Bones and Sineus*, Job. x. 11. — *Crates Pectoris*, is *Virgil's* Expression.

† This is supposed to be the Part, which *Solomon* describes by *The silver Cord*: and is indeed like a Cord, on Account of its *Shape*; like Silver, on Account of its *Colour*, Eccles. xii. 6.

that fills its Cavity ; without intercepting the nervous Fluid, which is to be detached from this grand Reservoir ; or diminishing that Strength which is necessary to support all the upper Stories.—A Formation so very peculiar in any other of the Solids, must have been attended with great Inconveniencies. Here, it is unspeakably serviceable. Is, both for Workmanship and Situation, a Master-piece of creating Skill, never enough to be admired.

The *Arms*, pendent on either Side, are exactly proportioned to each other ; that the Equilibrium of the Structure may not be disconcerted. These, being the Guards that defend *, and the Ministers that serve the whole Body, are fitted for the most *diversified* and *extensive* Operations. Firm with Bone, yet not weighty with Flesh ; and capable of performing, with singular Expedition and Ease, all manner of useful Motions. They bend inwards, and turn outwards ; they rise upwards, and stoop downwards ; they wheel about, and throw themselves into whatever Direction We please. —To these are annexed the *Hands* ; and all terminated by the *Fingers*. Which are, not like the Arms, of the same Length, and of an equal Bigness ; but in both Respects different. Which gives them a more graceful Appearance, and a much greater Degree of Usefulness. Were they all Flesh, they would be *comparatively* impotent ; were they one intire Bone, they would be *utterly* inflexible. But consisting of various little Bones, and a Multitude of Muscles, what Shape can they not assume ? What Service can they not perform ?—Being placed at the End of the Arm, the Sphere of their Action is exceedingly enlarged. This advantageous Situation realizes the Fable of *Briareus* ; and renders a Pair of Hands as serviceable as an Hundred.—The Extremities of the Fingers, are an Assemblage of fine tendonous Fibres, most acutely sensible †. Which,

* Called, in *Solomon's* figurative but elegant Sketch of Anatomy, *The Keepers of the House*, Ecclef. xii. 3.

† So very acute is the Sensibility of these Parts, that, I am informed, it furnishes the *Tribunal of Inquisition*, with one of the most refined

376 DIALOGUE XII.

Which, notwithstanding the Delicacy of their Texture, are destined to almost incessant Employ, and frequently exercised among rugged Objects. For this Reason, they are overlaid with the *Nails*, a Sort of horny Expansion: which, like a Ferule, hinders the Flesh from being ungracefully flattened; and, like a Sheath*, preserves the tender Parts from injurious Impressions.

In the Ministry of the Hands, and Activity of the Fingers, We possess a Case of the *finest Instruments*, or a Collection of the *noblest Utenfils*. Qualifying Us for the Execution of every Work, which the projecting Genius can devise, or the lavish Fancy crave.—To these We are obliged for the beautiful Statues, which have often entertained our Eyes, in yonder solitary Walks; and even for that melodious Trumpet, which now addresses our Ears, from the Summer-house on the Fish-pond.—These raise the lofty Column, and turn the spacious Arch. These swell the majestic Dome, and adjust the commodious Apartment. Architecture, with all her striking Beauties, and all her rich Benefits, are the Creation of the human Hand.—Yielding to the Strength of the Hand, the tallest Firs fall to the Ground, and the largest Oaks descend from the Mountains. Fashioned by the Dexterity of the Hand, they accommodate the Sailor with a *floating Warehouse*; and circulate from *Britain* to *Japan*, the Productions of Nature, and the Improvements of Art.—Obedient to the human Hand, Metals ascend from their subterranean Beds; and compose the most substantial Parts of that *curious Machine*||, which transmits far and near, to the Monarch's Palace and to the Peasant's

refined Expedients in the *Art of Torture*. A strong Quill, sharpened by the Penknife, and dipped in some inflammatory Liquor, is thrust deep between the Nail and the Finger. When the Quill has cut its Way through the shivering Nerves; and stands planted, like a Dagger, amidst the gushing Blood; some barbarous Hand sets fire to the Extremity. The keen Point, the slow Flame, and both in the Seat of the most lively Sensation, put the miserable Sufferer to the most excruciating Pain.

* *Digitis Munimina.*

|| The Printing-Press.

D I A L O G U E XII. 377

fant's Hut, such Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge, as *the Gold and Cryſtal cannot equal* *.

Among the *Egyptians*, the Hand was the Symbol of Strength; among the *Romans*, it was an Emblem of Fidelity: and I think it may, among all Nations, be looked upon as the Enſign of *Authority*. It is the original and the univerſal Sceptre; that which not only represents, but aſcertains our Dominion, over all the Elements, and over every Creature.—Though Providence has not given Us the Strength of the Horſe, the Swiftneſs of the Greyhound, or the ſagacious Scent of the Spaniel; yet, directed by the Underſtanding, and enabled by the Hand, We can ſubject them to our Will; turn them to our Advantage; and, in this Senſe, make them all *our own*.—Theſe Hands (ſurpriſing to relate!) theſe *ſhort* Hands have found out a Way, whereby they can dive to the Bottom of the Ocean; can penetrate the Bowels of the Earth; and reach from Shore to Shore. Theſe *feeble* Hands can manage the Wings of the Wind; can arm themſelves with the Rage of the Fire; and preſs into their Service the forcible Impetuofity of the Waters.—How eminent is the Dignity! How extenſive the Agency of the Hand †! It would require more Eloquence than your Orator poſſeſſed, to diſplay the former; and more Pages, than your Book contains, to deſcribe the latter.—How greatly are We indebted to our indulgent CREATOR, for accommodating Us with this noble, this diſtinguiſhing, this invaluable Member!

Above all, is the *Head*; a majeſtic Dome, deſigned for the Reſidence of the Brain. It is framed in exact Conformity to this important Purpoſe; ample to receive it; ſtrong, to uphold it; and firm, to defend it. As it reſembles the *General's* Tent in an Army, or the *Monarch's* Palace in a City; it has a Communication eſtabliſhed with all, even the moſt inferior and remote
Parts

* Job xxviii.

† Επειτα τοις μεν αλλοις ερπετοις ποδας εδωκαν, οι το πο-
ρευεισθαι μονον παρεχουσιν ανθρωπω δε κ' χειρας προσεδεσαν,
αι τα ωλεισα, οις ευδαιμονεστερα εκεινων εσμεν, εξεργαζονται.

Socrat. Mem. L. i. c. 4.

378 DIALOGUE XII.

Parts of the System. Has Outlets and Avenues, for the ready Dispatch of Couriers to all Quarters; and for the Reception of speedy Intelligence, on every interesting Occasion. It is furnished with Lodgments, wherein to post centinels of various Characters, and appointed for various Offices.—To expedite their Operations; whether they are employed in reconnoitring what passes *without*, or examining what claims admittance *within*; the whole turns upon a curious Pivot, most nicely contrived, to afford the largest and freest Circumvolutions.

This stately Capital, is screened from Heat; defended from Cold; and at the same time very much beautified by a copious Growth of Hair. Which flows down from the parted Forelock in decent Curls; and hangs mantling on the Cheeks, clustering on the Shoulders.—A Decoration *, incomparably more *delicate*, than any or all the Orders of Architecture can supply; and so perfectly *light*, as no Way to incumber or incommode the Wearer.

While many Animals creep on the Ground: while all of them are prone in their Posture or their Aspect: the Attitude of Man is *erect*.—Which is by far the most *graceful*; has an Air of Dignity, and bespeaks Superiority.—It is by far the most *commodious*; fits Us for the Prosecution of every grand Scheme, and facilitates the Success of all our extensive Designs.—It is likewise attended with the greatest *Safety*; being, if not less than any other Position exposed to Dangers, yet more happily contrived to repel or avoid them †.

Asp.

* *Abfalom's* Hair was reckoned a distinguishing Part of his Beauty, 2 *Sam.* xiv. 26.—The Amiability of the Church, in the exemplary Conversation of true Believers, is displayed by the same Ornament, *Cant.* iv. 1.—And *Homer*, in his so much admired Representation of *Jupiter*, makes the Motion of his Ambrosial Locks a principal Embellishment of the Picture;

Ἀμβροσίου δ' ἀγα χαιταί ἐπερρῶσαντο ἀνακτῶ.

† Η δὲ οἰδομένη (says *Socrates*) καὶ πρὸς ἄλλων πλείων ποιεῖ δυνασθαι, καὶ τὰ ὑπερδυνάμειον θιασθαι, καὶ ἥτιον κακοπαθεῖν.

Memorab.

D I A L O G U E XII. 379

Asp. May it not likewise be intended, to remind Us of our noble Original, and our sublime End*? Our *Original*, which was the Breath of the ALMIGHTY, and the Spirit of the MOST HIGH. Our *End*, which is not the Soil We tread on, or any of its low Productions, but the Heaven of Heavens, and the *Things that are above*.

But not to divert from our Subject; which, in my Friend's Manner of handling it, is as entertaining, as it is instructive.—The Bones (to carry on your own Allusion) are only the *Rafters*, the *Beams* †, the *Shell* of the living Edifice. You have laid the Floors, have made the proper Divisions, and left the necessary Apertures. But, in every finished House, the Roof is covered, and the Rooms are wainscoted. The Sashes are hung, and the Doors turn upon their Hinges. The Grates are fixed, and the Stairs either wind or fly. *Within*, the Lodgings are furnished; *without*, the Front is ornamented. All is rendered commodious for domestic Use, and graceful to the external View.

Ther. This likewise is executed by the great, the DIVINE ARTIFICER.—Here are *Ligaments*; a tough and strong Arrangement of Fibres; to unite the several Limbs; and render, what would otherwise be a disjointed unweildy Jumble, a well-compacted and self-manageable System.—*Membranes*; or thin and flexile Tunics; appointed to inwrap the fleshy Parts; to form a Connection between some, and make a Separation between others ‡.

Arteries, the grand Rivers of our little World §, or the noble Aqueducts of the organized Metropolis.
Some

* *Pronaque cum spectent Animalia cœtera Terras,
Os Homini sublime dedit, Cœlumque tueri
Jussit, & erectos ad Sidera tollere Vultus.*

Ovid.

† *Vivæ Tigna Domus & Sustentacula Molis.*

‡ The Intestines are *fastened* to each other by the *Mesentery*. The Breast is *divided* into two Cavities by the *Mediaſtinum*. Both which are reckoned among the Membranes.

§ A human Body was called by the Antients, The *Microcosm*; that is, a little World, or the World in Minature.

380 D I A L O G U E XII.

Some of which ascend to the Head: others spread themselves over the Shoulders: some extend to the Arms: some descend to the Feet: and striking out, as they go, into numberless smaller Canals, visit the Streets, the Alleys, and every *individual* Apartment of the vital City.—These, being wide at their Origin, and lessening as they branch themselves, check the rapid Impetus of the Blood. To sustain this Shock, they are endued with uncommon Strength: by performing this Service, they oblige the crimson Current to pass into the *narrowest* Defiles, and distribute itself into all Quarters.—The Blood, thrown from the Heart, dilates the Arteries, and their own elastic Force contracts them. By which means, they *vibrate*, in proper Places, very perceivably against the Finger; bring Advices of the utmost Importance to the Physician; and very much assist Him, both in discovering the Nature of Diseases, and prescribing for their respective Cures.—The larger the Arteries, where-ever the Body is formed for Incurvation, are situate on the *bending* Side: left, being stretched to an improper Length by the Inflection, their Dimensions should be lessened, and the circulating Fluid retarded.—They are not, like several of the considerable Veins, laid so near the Surface, as to be protrusive of the Skin; but are deposited to a *proper Depth* in the Flesh. This Situation renders them more secure from external Injuries. It conceals likewise those Starts and Reversions of the Pulse, which, if apparent, would discompose the most sedate, and disfigure the most comely Countenance.—Could We cast our Eye upon the River, that runs through the neighbouring Meadow, We might observe several Mills intersecting the Stream. The Waters at those Places, if not intirely stopped, drain away very slowly. In consequence of this Obstruction, the lower Channels would be sunk dry, and the upper Ones swelled into a Flood. To obviate both these Inconveniencies, *Low-shots* are provided: which, carrying off the Surcharge, prevent a Glut above, and supply the Banks below. In those Parts of the Body, which are most liable to Pressure, much the same Expedient takes place. The Arteries

in-

inofculate ; or, breaking into a new Track, they fetch a little Circuit, in order to return and communicate again with the main Road. So that, if any Obstacle blocks up or straitens the direct Passage; the Current, by diverting to this new Channel, eludes the Impediment; maintains an uninterrupted Flow; and soon regains its wonted Course*.

Veins are appointed to receive the Blood from the Arteries, and reconvey it to the Heart.—Small at their Rise, and enlarging as they advance, they are void of any Pulsation. In these, the Pressure of the circulating Fluid, is not near so forcible as in the arterial Tubes: for which Reason, their Texture is considerably slighter. Such an exact *Oeconomist* is Nature, even amidst all her *Liberality*†!—In many of these Canals, the Current, though widening continually, and acquiring a proportionable Increase of Gravity, is obliged to push its Way against the Perpendicular. By which Circumstance, it is exposed to the Hazard of falling back, and overloading the Vessels; if not of surpressing the animal Motion. For a Security against this Danger, *Valves* are interposed at proper Distances. Which are no Hindrance to the regular Passage, but prevent the Reflux; sustain the augmented Weight; and facilitate a Progress to the grand Receptacle. This auxiliary Contrivance comes in, where the Blood is constrained to climb; but is dismissed where the steep Ascent ceases, and such a Precaution would be needless.

Here are *Glands*, whose Office it is, to filtrate the passing Fluid. Each of these Glands is an Assemblage of Vessels, complicated and intervolved, with seeming Confusion, but with perfect Regularity. As some kind of Sieves transmit the Dust, and retain the Corn; others bolt out the Meal, and hold back the Bran; so some of these glandulous Strainers draw off the
finest,

* *Cicero* speaking of the Arteries and Veins, has this very just Remark; *Utræque autem crebriæ, multæque toto Corpore intertextæ, Vim quandam incredibilem artificiosi Operis divinique testantur.*

De Nat. Deor. L. II.

† A parallel Instance of Frugality is observed in the Arteries. Whose Coats are spun *thinner*, as the Diameter of the Vessels become *smaller*, and the Pressure of the Blood *weaker*.

382 DIALOGUE XII.

finest, others the *grossest* Parts of the Blood. Some like the Distiller's Alembic, *sublimate**; others, like the common Sewers, *defæcate*†. Each forms a Secretion, far more curious than the most admired Operations of Chemistry; yet all, necessary for the Support of Life, or conducive to the Comfort of the Animal. — *Muscles*, wove in Nature's nicest Loom; composed of the slenderest Fibres, yet endued with incredible Strength; fashioned after a Variety of Patterns, but all in the highest Taste for Elegance, Conveniency, and Usefulness. — These, with their *Tendons* annexed, constitute the Instruments of Motion. The former, contracting their Substance, operate somewhat like the Pulley in Mechanics. The latter, resembling the Cord, are fastened to a Bone, or some Partition of Flesh; and, following the muscular Contraction, actuate the Part into which they are inserted. This, and all their Functions they execute, not like a sluggish Beast of Burden, but quick as the Lightning. — *Nerves*, surprisngly minute Tubes; derived from the Brain, and permeated by an exquisite subtle Fluid. Which, gliding into the Muscles, sets them on work; diffuses the Power of Sensation through the Body; or, returning upon any Impression from without, gives all needful Intelligence to the Soul. — *Vesicles*, distended with an unctuous Matter; in some Places, compose a soft Cushion‡ for Nature; in other Places they fill up her Vacuities,

* The glandulous Substance of the *Brain*; which secretes the animal Spirits.

† The *Liver* and *Kidneys*. The former of which separates the *Gall*; the latter drains off a *Fluid*, which, being sufficiently known, need not be named. I could wish, it had not been so explicitly and coarsely mentioned, in our Translation of the best of Books. But that We had rendered the Original, in *Kings* xiv. 10. *Every Male*; in *Isai.* xxxvi. 12. *Eat and drink their own Excrements*.

‡ The *Calf* of the *Leg*, for Instance. Whose large Collection of Muscles, interminged with Fat, is of singular Service to those important Bones. It flanks and fortifies them, like a *strong Bastion*. It supports and cherishes them, like a *soft Pillow*. And what is no less pleasing to observe, it accommodates and defends them on that very Side, where they most frequently rest their Weight, and where they are least capable of being guarded by the Eye.

DIALOGUE XII. 383

Vacuties, and smoothe the Inequalities of the Flesh. *Inwardly*, they supple the several Movements of the active Machine. *Outwardly*, they render its Appearance plump, well proportioned, and graceful.

The *Skin*, like a curious Surtout *, exactly fitted, is superinduced over the whole. Formed of the most delicate Net-work; whose *Mesbes* † are minute, and whose *Threads* ‡ are multiplied, even to a Prodigy.—The *Mesbes* so *minute*, that nothing passes them, which is discernable by the Eye; though they discharge, every Moment, Myriads and Myriads of superfluous Encumbrances from the Body. The Steam, arising from the warm Business transacted within, is carried off by these real, though imperceptible Funnels ||. Which constitutes, what We usually call, *insensible Perspiration*.—The *Threads* so *multiplied*, that neither the Point of the

* *Thou hast clothed me with Skin and Flesh.* Job. x. 11.—The Word *Surtout* is used according to the *French* Etymology; signifies a Garment, coming *over the whole* Body; and is most beautifully expressed by our LORD's ἀμφιένυσσι. Matt. vi. 30.

† The Pores of the Cuticula.

‡ The nervous Fibres, and other Vessels of the Cutis.—Nature is somewhat like *Solomon's* virtuous Woman. *Who is not afraid of the Snow for her Household, because her Household are clothed in Scarlet*: or, as it may be rendered, are clothed *with Pairs*, have two Coats a-piece. *Prov.* xxxi. 21. (See *Gen.* xi. 19, 20. where the Word עֲשֵׂי is thus translated)—The Body also is accommodated with a *double* Covering. The outermost is that soft whitish Tegument, which rises in the Pustule of a Blister. The innermost is that reddish and exquisitely tender Part, which appears when the Blister is broke, and the dead Skin is taken off.—The first is void of Sense, and intended to screen the second, not only from the Stroke of Injuries, but even from the Impressions of the Air: which, mild as it may feel to the *sheathed*, would be too rough and sharp for the *naked* Nerves.

There seems to be an Allusion to this Particular, in that remarkable Expression, *Skin for Skin*, עֹר בְּעֹר Job ii. 4. *Skin even unto Skin*; the very inmost Skin, which cannot be taken away, without the greatest Loss, and severest Pain. Yet, even this *Loss* a Man would suffer, this *Pain* He would endure, in order to *preserve* precious Life.

|| There are somewhere prettily stiled, *cutaneous Chimneys*; and are indeed inexpressibly fine, if, as Mr. *Leuwenboeck* affirms, a single Grain of Sand will cover no less than 125,000.

384 D I A L O G U E XII.

the smallest Needle, nor the incomparably nicer Spear of a Gnat, nor even the invisible Lancet of a Flea, can pierce any single Part, without causing an uneasy Sensation and a Suffusion of Blood : consequently, without wounding, even by so small a Puncture, both a Nerve and a Vein*.

The Veins, either pervading, or lying parallel with, this fine transparent Coat, *beautify* the human Structure ; those Parts especially, which are most conspicuous, and intended for public View. The pliant Wrist, and the taper Arm, they variegate with an Inlay of living Sapphire. They spread Vermilion over the Lips †, and plant Roses in the Cheeks. While the Eye, tinged with glossy Jet, or sparkling with the Blue of Heaven, is fixed in an Orb of polished Crytal. In-
somuch that the earthly Tabernacle exhibits the nicest Proportions, and richest Graces. Such *nice Proportions*, as afford the most correct Model for Statuary : such *rich Graces*, as the Canvass never bore, as Painting imitates in vain.

Asp. How just in itself, and how pertinent to our Purpose, is that well-known Acknowledgment of the sacred and royal Anatomist ; “ *I am curiously wrought † !* ” “ There is a Variety, an Elegance, and a Delicacy, in “ the Texture of my Body ; in the Formation and Ar-
“ rangement

* A *Blood Vessel* at least. Compared with these Vessels, the fine *filmy Threads*, which, on some bright and autumnal Morning, float in the Air, or hang on the Stubble, are *large* as a Bell-rope, or *bulky* as a Cable.—Such Tubes, One would think, should *burst* at every Breath We draw, or even *break* with their own Fineness. Yet they are the Conduit-pipes, which convey the vital Fluid from and to the grand Reservoir. And so exquisite, so wonderful, is their Texture, that they will out-last the Strength of Lead, or the Heart of Oak : *these* wearing away, *those* growing stronger, by Use

† *Thy Lips are like a Thread of Scarlet.* Cant. iv. 3. Like a Thread, for their delicate *Shape* ; like a Thread of Scarlet, for their glowing Colour.

‡ The Original רָקְמָתִי signifies *finely wrought*, or *elegantly flourished with a Needle*.—The Translation adopted by our Liturgy is, in this Place, flat and inexpressive. The *Engl:sh* Word *fashioned*, has just the same Inferiority to the be utiful *Hebrew* Phrase, as the *Badge* tacked upon some poor Pensioner's Coat, has to the *Star* embroidered on a Nobleman's Breast. *Psal.* cxxxix. *ver.* 14.

“ rangement of these Bones and Muscles, these Veins
 “ and Arteries;—resembling shall I say?—rather,
 “ infinitely surpassing the most costly and admired
 “ Pieces of Embroidery.”

It is one of the finest Similitudes, that the whole Circle of polite Arts could afford. Yet every Comparison, fetched from the Performances of Mankind, must necessarily debase the noble Subject. All the Enrichments, that the Needle can give, or the most splendid Silks receive, are rude, are coarse, are mere Sack-cloth, when set in Opposition to the exquisite Fineness of the fleshy Web. As indeed all the celebrated Palaces, Amphitheatres, Temples, that ever adorned the most magnificent Cities in the World, are but a Heap of Confusion, if compared with the Symmetry and Beauty of the bodily Fabrie.—And, what is beyond Measure marvelous, all these Wonders of Mechanism and Decoration arose—not from the purer Elements—not from the more refined Parts of the Creation—but from the Dust of the Ground. How easily, *Theron*, can that stupendous ARTIFICER renew our Hearts, and transform our Souls into his own Image; who could raise such delicate and stately Edifices, from Particles—despicable Particles of the trodden Soil *!

I could not forbear interposing this Remark. Because, it tends to manifest our CREATOR's Glory, to encourage our Hopes, and strengthen our Faith. Otherwise, I should be angry with myself, for interrupting your Discourse.—Pray, go on with your Description of the animal Oeconomy. Only let me observe, That such a Course of incessant Action, must exhaust the Fluids; must waste the Solids; and, unless both are supplied with proper Recruits, must gradually weaken, and at length totally destroy, the Machine.

Ther. For this Reason, it is furnished with the Organs, and endued with the Powers of Nutrition.—

* Never was the Poet's Remark so signally exemplified;

—— Materiem superabat Opus.

386 DIALOGUE XII.

Teeth; the foremost, thin and sharp; fitted to bite afunder the Food, or cut * off such a Portion, as the Mouth can conveniently manage. The hindermost, broad and strong; indented, like the Surface of a Mill-stone †, with small Cavities, and jagged with little Asperities. Which qualify them to grind in pieces, whatever is transmitted to their Operation.—Were the Teeth, like our other Bones, covered with the usual Membrane, the Act of *Chewing* would always occasion great Uneasiness; and, when any hard Substance is eaten, might even lacerate the tender Tegument. Were they left without any Sort of Covering; they would suffer from the Inclemencies of the Air, and be liable to the Penetration of Liquors. In which Case, they must soon become soft and unfit for Service, or be corrupted and intirely perish. To guard against these Disadvantages, they are curiously *glazed*, or overlaid with a neat *Enamel*; as white as Ivory, and harder than the Bone itself. Which renders them an Ornament to the Mouth ‡; secures them from various Injuries; and exempts them from Pain in the Office of Mastication.

As the Rims and Cushions of a Billiard-Table, keep the Ball from flying off; and send it back into the green Area, for repeated Essays of Skill; so the *Lips* prevent

* Called therefore, *Incisivi*.

† Styled accordingly, *Molares*.—We find neither of these Kinds in the new-born Babe. As Milk is, for a considerable Time, its appointed Food, Teeth would be of no Service to the Infant itself; as it is to press the tender Nipple for this milky Sustenance, Teeth would be painful and prejudicial to the Nurse. Therefore Nature has *postponed* the Formation of these fine Implements, till they become both necessary and beneficial.

‡ This ornamental Furniture of the Mouth, is, in the grand oriental Manner, described by Solomon. *Thy Teeth are like a Flock of Sheep, that are even shorn, which come up from the Washing*, Cant. iv. 2. Growing, not single, like the Nose; not in Pairs, like the Eyes; but in Rows considerably numerous, *like a Flock*.—None rising higher than the other; none standing prominent beyond another; but all set as true, as if they were ranged by the Compass; and making as regular an Appearance, as the Flocks *that are even shorn*.—They are clean also as the Fleeces that have no Spot, and white as the Colour of the purest Wool, *like the Flocks just come up from the Washing*.

prevent the Food from slipping out of the Mouth; and, assisted by the Tongue, return it to the renewed Attrition of the Grinders.—While the Lips, in Concert with the Cheeks, are employed in this Work, their Motion compresses the circumjacent Glands; and, from innumerable little Orifices, a thin *pellucid Liquor* exsudes. Which moistens the attenuated Food, and prepares it for more easy Digestion.—When the Mouth remains inactive, these Fountains of Spittle are, in a manner, closed. But, when it is exercised, either in speaking or eating, their Moisture then being peculiarly necessary, they never fail to give out a sufficient Quantity.

When the Soldier charges his Carbine, the Cartridge could not make its way to the Bottom, without the Protrusion of the Rammer*. Neither would the Food, which We receive at the Mouth, descend, by the Force of its own Weight, through a narrow and clammy Channel, into the Stomach. To effectuate therefore, and expedite its Passage, Muscles, both *strait* and *circular*, are provided. The former, enlarge the Cavity of the Throat, and afford a more easy Admittance; the latter, closing behind the descending Aliment, press it downwards, and finish the Deglu-

* This, and the other Similitudes, are undoubtedly *too mean* for the noble Occasion. Neither do they, in *every* Circumstance, *quadrate* with the Functions described. The Motion of the Muscles, which minister to the Act of Deglutition, is different from the perpendicular Protrusion of the Rammer. And it is mentioned, only to demonstrate the Necessity of *some propelling* Force, in order to convey the Aliment into the proper Receptacle.

When We descant upon a Subject, of such extensive Contrivance, and such finished Perfection, as the human Structure; it is scarce possible to find Similitudes, that will correspond in *all* Particulars, or that can rise to the *Dignity* of the Original. Yet if they tend, in any tolerable Degree, to explain its Formation, to display its Uses, and render its wonderful Oeconomy somewhat more intelligible, perhaps they may be allowed to take place.

I hope, it will be remembered, that *Theron* speaks, not as an Adept in the Science, but as One whose highest Pretensions are, to admire the Work, and adore the ARTIFICER. Which Acknowledgment may intitle Him to some candid Indulgence, in case He should offend against the *præcise anatomical* Exactness, either of Sentiment, or Expression.

388 D I A L O G U E XII.

tition.—Before the Food enters the Gullet, it must of Necessity pass over the Orifice of the *Wind-pipe*; consequently, must be in very imminent Danger of falling upon the Lungs, Which would, if not intirely obstruct the Breath, yet occasion violent Coughing *, and great Inconveniencies. To obviate this Evil, the all-foreseeing CONTRIVER has placed a *moveable Lid*, or hung a *cartilaginous Draw-bridge* †. Which, when any the smallest Particle of Food advances to enter the Stomach, is pulled down and shut close; but, as soon as ever the Morfel is swallowed, is let loose and stands open. By this two-fold Artifice, the important Passage is always barred and made sure, against any noxious Approaches; yet, always left free for the necessary Accession of Air, and commodious for the Purposes of Respiration.

When the Malster prepares his Grain for the Transmutations of the Brew-house; He suffers it to lie, several Hours, steeping in the Cistern; before it is fit, to be spread upon the Floor, or dried on the Kiln. The Meat and Drink likewise must remain, a considerable Time, in the Stomach; before they are of a *proper Consistence* and Temperature, either for the tender Coats, or the delicate Operation of the Bowels. For which Purpose, that great Receiver is made—strong to bear—capacious to hold—and so curiously contrived, as to lay a *temporary Embargo* ‡ upon its Contents. Here, they are lodged in the very Center of Warmth, and concocted by the most kindly Combination of Heat and Humidity. Here, they are saturated with other fermenting or diluting Juices; and are kneaded, as it were, by the Motion of the Stomach, and Compressi-
on

* This is what We experience, when, in eating or drinking, any Thing goes (as is commonly, and not improperly said) the *wrong Way*.

† Called the *Epiglottis*.—Tully, speaking of the Wind-pipe and its curious Cover, says; *Tegitur quasi quodam Operculo, quod ob eam Causam datum est, ne siquid in eam forte Sibi incidisset, Spiritus impediretur.* De Nat. Deor.

‡ Which is quite *contrary* to the Oeconomy of the Gullet; tho' they are not only contiguous to each other, but a Continuation of the *same Tube*.

on of the neighbouring Parts. So that every the minuteſt Fragment is ſeparated; the Whole is reduced to a *Tenuity*, abundantly finer than the exacteſt Grinding could effect; and all is worked up into the ſmooth-eſt, moſt *nicely mixed* Pulp imaginable.—From hence it is diſlodged, by a gently acting Force; and paſſes, by a gradual Tranſition, into the Cavity of the Inteſtines.

Near the Entrance, punctual as a Porter in his Lodge, waits the *Gall-bladder**; ready to tranſuſe its acrimonious, but ſalutary Juices, on the advancing Aliment. Which diſſolve its remaining Viſcidites; *ſcour* the Paſſage of the Inteſtines; and keep all its fine Apertures clear.—This Bag, as the Stomach fills, is elevated by the Diſtenſion; as the Stomach empties, is proportionably depressed. The former Poſture brings on a Diſcharge, the latter occasions a Suppreſſion, of the *Bile*. It is furniſhed alſo with a Valve, of a very peculiar, but moſt convenient Form†; through which the deterſive Liquid, cannot haſtily pour, but muſt gently ooze.—Admirable Conſtruction! Which, without any Care or Conſciouſneſs of ours, prohibits an *immoderate* Effuſion, yet aſcertains the *needful* Supply.

Sufficiently charged with this adventitious Fluid, the nutritive Maſs purſues its Way through the *Inteſtines*. Whoſe wonderful Meanders, are incomparably more curious, than the Mazes of the *Dædalean* Labyrinth. They are actuated with a wormlike or undulatory Motion‡ which protrudes the received Aliment, and forces its fine milky Particles into the *Lacteal Veſſels*. Theſe are a Series of the moſt delicate *Strainers*; ranged, in countleſs Multitudes, all along the Sides of the winding Paſſage. Each ſo nicely framed, as to admit the nutrimental balmy Juices, and reject the groſs excrementitious Dregs.—Had this alimentary Tube

* The Gall-bladder is ſituate upon the lower Margin of the Liver; and to ſcrete the *bilious* Juice, is ſuppoſed to be the principal Uſe of that largeſt of Glands.

† A ſpiral Form.

‡ Stiled *vermicular* or *peristaltic*.

been *strait* or *short*, the Food might have gone through it, without resigning a sufficient Quantity of its nourishing Particles. Therefore, it is artfully convolved, and greatly extended; to afford Nature an Opportunity, of *sifting* more thoroughly whatever passes, and of detaining whatever may serve her Purposes.—Lest such Lengths of Entrails, should be intangled among themselves, or be cumbrous to the Wearer, they are packed into the neatest Folds, and lie within a narrow Compafs. They are at least six Times longer *, than the Body that contains them. Yet are they *lodged*, not *crouded*; in a *Part*, not in the *whole* Region, of the lower Belly. And amidst this small Space, have sufficient Room to execute the nicest and most important Functions.—Though the alimentary Substance can never mistake its Way; yet it may, thro' some accidental Impediment, attempt to return backward.—In this Case, a Valve intervenes; and renders, what would be extremely pernicious, almost always impracticable.—As the whole proceeds in this serpentine Course, it is perpetually sending off Detachments of *nutritious* Juices. In consequence of which, it would lose its soft Temperature; might become rugged, and pain the tender Parts; perhaps, be hindered from sliding on to its final Exit. To prevent such an Obstruction, Glands are posted in proper Places †, and discharge a *lubricating* Fluid; which aids the Progress of the Mass, and renews the Secretion of the Chyle. Till all that remains of the One, is clean drawn

* According to this Calculation, they must measure, in a pretty tall Man, more than *thirty-six Feet*.—The Substance of the Bowels, though *thin* to a Delicacy, is *strong* to a Wonder. The Skin of an Ox-gut, I am told, will endure the Blows of the Gold-beater's Hammer, for many Months, nay for several Years.

† In the Bowels, that lie *nearest* the Stomach, these Glands are *smaller* or *fewer*: because, in those Parts, the Aliment is copiously furnished with Moisture. Whereas, in the Bowels, which are more remote from the Stomach, and receive the Food drained off a considerable Quantity of its Chyle, the lubricating Glands are either *multiplied* or *enlarged*. A most admirable Provision! finely diversified, according to the several Changes of the Aliment; yet exactly adapted to the Exigencies of the Animal.

drawn off*; and the Other——But here you must excuse me; and for my Neglect of farther Particularity, your Author shall make an Apology; *Quemadmodum autem Reliquiæ Cibi depellantur, tum astringentibus se Intestinis, tum relaxantibus, haud sane difficile dictu est: sed tamen prætereundem est, ne quid habeat Injucunditatis Oratio*†.

The Chyle, drawn off by all the secretory Orifices, is carried along Millions of the finest ‡ Ducts, and lodged in several commodious Cells ||. As a Traveler, by baiting upon the Road, and taking proper Refreshment, is better qualified to pursue his Journey: so the Chyle, diverting to those little Inns, is mixed with a thin, diluting Lymph, which renders it more apt to flow, and more fit for Use.—From hence it is conveyed to one common Receptacle §: and mounting through a perpendicular Tube, instils itself into the left subclavian Vein. This perpendicular Tube, not having sufficient Force of its own, borrows Assistance from its Neighbour. It is laid contiguous to the great Artery; whose strong Pulsation drives on the Fluid, which might otherwise stagnate; enables it to overcome the steep Ascent, and unload its precious Treasure at the very Door of the Heart.

* As *Theron* avoids meddling with a Subject, that is become useless and putrescent, I think myself obliged to imitate his *Delicacy*. Only I would add one Remark in the Notes, and shall beg leave to express it in *Greek*. That if it should prove, in any Degree, disgusting; it may have, at least, the negative Merit, not to offend many Readers. *Επει δὲ τὰ ἀποχωρεῖν δυσχερὲς, ἀπεσφύζετο τῆς τῶν οὐχέως ἢ φύσις, καὶ ἀπηνεγκεν ἢ δύνατον προσώλῳ ἀπο τῶν αἰθησίων.* *Socrat. Memorab.*

† Cicero *De Nat. Deor.*

‡ Fine indeed! Since their *Orifices*, through which they admit the Chyle, are not discoverable even by the very best *Microscopes*. To this prodigiously nice Constructure it is owing, that nothing enters the Substance of the Blood, but what is smaller than the smallest Arteries in the Sytem: and thereby fitted to pass thro' the finest capillary Vessels, without causing any Obstruction.

|| The Glands of the Mesentery.

§ The *Receptaculum Chyli*; a Reservoir, placed near the left Kidney.

The *Blood*, through every Stage of its ample Circuit, having sustained great Expences ; being laid under Contribution, by every Gland in the whole System ; and having supplied Myriads of the capillary Vessels, with Matter for insensible Perspiration ; must be very much impoverished. But is most opportunely recruited, by this Accession of Chyle.—Yet though *recruited*, it is not *refined*. In its present crude State, it is absolutely unqualified to perform the vital Tour, or carry on the animal Functions. Therefore, by a grand Apparatus of muscular Fibres, it is wasted into the *Lungs* ; and pours a thousand, thousand Rills into either Lobe.—In the Cells, the spongy Cells of this *amazing Laboratory*, it imbibes the Influences of the external Air ; its heterogeneous Parts are thoroughly incorporated ; and its whole Substance is made cool, smooth, and florid.—Thus improved, thus exalted, it is transmitted to the left Ventricle of the HEART ; a *strong, active, indefatigable* * Muscle ; placed in the very Center of the System. Impelled by this beating Engine, Part shoots upward ; and sweeps, with a bounding Impetus, into the Head. There, it impregnates the prolific Fields of the Brain ; and forms those *subtile spirituous Dews* †, which impart Sense to every Nerve,

* *Indefatigable*—This is a very *distinguishing*, and no less *amazing* Property of the Heart. The large Muscles of the Arm, or the much larger of the Thigh, are soon wearied. A Day's Labour, or a Day's Journey, will exhaust their Strength. But the Muscle, which constitutes the Heart, toils through whole Weeks, whole Months, whole Years, and never becomes weary. Is equally a Stranger to *Intermission* and *Fatigue*.

† These are, what We call, *The animal Spirits* ; and it is generally supposed, that Sensation is caused by the *undulatory* Motion of this nervous Fluid—Though some imagine, it is performed by the *vibratory* Motion of the Nerves themselves.—Others think, that neither of these Opinions will comport, with the Texture of those fine Tubes, or with the Nature of the Fluids they contain.—It is, I believe, one of those *Mysteries* in the material World, which may reconcile *thinking* and *unprejudiced* Minds, to the Mysteries of the *Christian* Revelation. Why should any One wonder, to find some Doctrines in the BIBLE, that surpass the Reach of human Understanding ; when there are so many Operations in the Body, confessedly and absolutely inexplicable by the most acute Anatomist ?

Nerve, and communicate Motion to every Limb. Part flows downward ; rolls the reaking Current through all the lower Quarters ; and dispenses the nutrimental Stores, even to the meanest Member, and the minutest Vessel.

Observe, how the stately *Thames*, and the rapid *Rhine*, refresh the Forests and the Groves ; water the Towns, that croud their Banks ; and make the Meadows they intersect, laugh and sing. So, only with an incomparable richer Fluid, and with infinitely *more numerous* Streams, this human River laves the several Regions of the Body. Transfusing Vigour and propagating Health, through the Whole.

But, how shall a Stream, divided into Myriads of Channels, and pervading innumerable Tracts, how shall this be brought back again to its Source ? Should any Portion, like your *Lake-Waters* after a Land-Flood, deviate from their Course, or be unable to return—Putrefaction would take place—A Nuisance would arise—Death might ensue. Therefore the all-wise CREATOR has connected the Extremity of the Arteries, with the Beginning of the Veins. So that the same Force, which *darts* the crimson Wave through the former, *drives* it through the latter. Thus it is reconducted, without the least Extravasation, to the great salient Cistern *. There played off afresh, it renews and perpetuates the vital Functions.

Where two *opposite* Currents would be in Danger of clashing, a fibrous Excrescence interposes † ; which, like a projecting Pier, breaks the Stroke of each, and throws both into their proper Receptacle.—Where the Wasture is to be *speedy*, the Channels either for-

* Solomon makes use of this Similitude—*Or ever the Pitcher be broken at the Fountain ; or the Wheel broken at the Cistern.* The two *Ventricles* of the Heart, replenished with Blood, are fitly represented by a *Cistern* ; and the *contractile* Force of their Fibres, acts like the *Water-wheel* in Hydraulics.—The *Pitcher*, which receives the Water at the Spring-head, and conveys it away for the Owner's Service, may probably signify the *Aorta*, and the *pulmonary* Artery ; whose Functions correspond with the Uses of such a Vessel. *Eccles. xii. 6.*

† In the Point, where the Streams, from the *Vena cava* and *Vena ascendens*, coincide.

bear to winde in their Course †, or to lessen in their Dimensions ‡. When the Progress is to be retarded, the Tubes are twined into various Convolutions ||, or their Diameter is contracted into a narrower Size.— Modeled by these judicious Rules; guarded by these wise Precautions; the living Flood never discontinues its interchangeable Tide: but, Night and Day, whether We sleep or wake, still perseveres to sally *briskly* through the Arteries, and return *softly* through the Veins.

Such astonishing Expedients are used, to *elaborate* the Chyle—to *blend* it with the Blood—and to *distribute* both through the Body! By means of which, the animal Constitution is maintained. In Youth, its Bulk is increased; in Age, its Decays are repaired; and it is kept in tenantable Condition for the Soul, during the Space of seventy or eighty Years.

These are a few, and but a *very few* Instances of that Contrivance, Regularity, and Beauty, which are observable in the human Frame. Attentive Inquirers discover *deeper* Footsteps of Design, and *more refined* Strokes of Skill. Discover them, not only in the grand and most distinguished Parts, but in every Limb, and in every Organ: I may venture to add, in every Fibre that is extended, and in every Globule * that flows.

Asp. What a *various*, but *uniform* System, is the Body! I see the greatest Multiplicity of Parts, yet the most perfect Harmony subsists between them all. No one hinders, but each assists, the Operation of another; and all conspire to the Benefit and Preservation of the Whole.—Most judiciously has the great Apostle touched this Subject; and most happily applied it, to

† In the great Artery, that descends to the Feet.

‡ In every Interval, between all the Ramifications.

|| In the Vessels, that carry the Blood to the Brain; that form the viscous Secretions; and indeed constitute all the Glands.

* The extreme *Minuteness* of the Globules, which form the red Part of our Blood, is one Exemplification of this Remark. If, as Mr. *Leuwenhoeck* computes, every Globule be 25000 times smaller, than the smallest Grain of Sand.

illustrate the Reasonableness, and enforce the Practice, both of *personal* and *social* Duties, of private Content and public Concord †.

The Body, he observes, *is not one Member, but many.* To each of which some peculiar and needful Office is assigned. So that the *Foot*, though placed in the lowest Order, and destined to serve on the very Ground, has no Reason to reckon itself a worthless Outcast; or to say, *Because I am not the Head, I am not of the Body.* Neither has the *Head*, in its elevated Situation, and amidst its honourable Functions, any Cause to despise the inferior Limbs; or to say, with Contempt and Self-sufficiency, *I have no Need of You.*—If there were no Feet, what would become of the loco-motive Faculty? Or how could the Body convey itself from one Place to another? If there were no Hands, what should we do for the Instruments of Action? Or how could the animal Frame be defended and accommodated?—Nay, the Parts, *which seem to be less honourable*, are necessary. Even those, which form or throw off the Dregs, are of the last Importance to Life and its Comforts. Should those be obstructed in their Action, the most intense Torment ensues; should the Obstruction continue, Death is the inevitable Consequence.—By this wise Adjustment, *there is no Schism in the Body*; no separate or interfering Ends are pursued by the Members; but the Safety and Support of each are the one undivided Care of all.

Thus should it be among Men, and among Christians; in the Civil Community, and in the Catholic Church. There is in both a *Subordination* of Persons, but a *Concatenation* of Interests. For which Reason, a general Agreement should take place, and a mutual Subserviency to each other's Welfare.—The *Meanest* have no Cause to be dissatisfied with their Condition; but to acquiesce in the unerring Disposal of Providence, and cheerfully contribute their Share to the common Good.—The *Highest* should condescend to Men of low Estate; and maintain a Regard

to

† See 1 Cor. xii. 12, &c.

396 D I A L O G U E XII.

to the Well-being of the Poorest, as that which is intimately connected with their own.—In a Word; *each* should feel a tender Concern for all; rejoicing in their Happiness, and studying to establish it; sympathizing with their Miseries, and endeavouring to heal them.

I am sure, my *Theron* will be pleased with this fine Comparison, used by the Apostle; and adapted to Purposes, at once so noble and so benevolent. Especially, as it receives additional Propriety and Force from his own Observations.—But I have one more Inquiry to make.

Your System, though *organized*, though indued with a Principle of *Motion*, and furnished with the Powers of *Nutrition*, is still destitute of *Sense*.—The Creation abounds with Objects, fitted to yield the most refined Entertainment. The Sun impurples the Robe of Morning, and Stars bespangle the Curtains of Night. Flowers of silver Whiteness, and of golden Lustre, enamel the Ground. Fruits of all radiant Hues, and of every delicious Taste, hang amiably dangling on the Boughs.

*Airs also, vernal Airs,
Breathing the Smell of Field and Grove, attune
The trembling Leaves.*

But We hear of no Capacities, formed for the *Enjoyment* of these various Delights. Without which, the Breath of Fields must lose its reviving Fragrance; the whispering Grove must degenerate into sullen Silence; and Nature's Book of Knowledge, all fair and instructive, be no better than a vast unmeaning Blank.

Ther. Therefore, the great CREATOR, profusely gracious to Mankind, has made Us a Present, an inestimable Present of the *Senses*. To be the Inlets of innumerable Pleasures, and the Means of administering the most valuable Advantages.

High in the Head, bright and conspicuous as a Star in the Brow of Evening, is placed the *Eye*. In
this

this elevated Situation, like a Centinel posted in his Watch-tower, it commands the most enlarged Prospect.—Consisting only of simple Fluids, inclosed in thin Tunicles, it conveys to our Apprehension all the Graces of blooming Nature, and all the Glories of the visible Heavens.—How prodigiously wonderful ! That an Image of the *biggest* Mountains, and a Transcript of the most *diversified* Landscapes, shall enter the small *Circlet* of the Pupil !—How surprisngly artful ! That the Rays of Light, like an inimitable Pencil, should paint on the optic Nerves ; paint in an Instant of Time ; paint in their *truest* Colours, and *exactest* Lineaments, every Species of external Objects !

The Eye is so tender, that a slight Accident, scarcely perceived by some other Parts of the Body, would be very injurious to its delicate Frame. It is guarded therefore with peculiar Care : with a Care, proportioned to its nice Texture, and extensive Usefulness. It is *intrenched* deep in the Head, and *barricaded*, on every Side, with a strong Fortification of Bones.—As the Incurſion of the ſmalleſt Fly would incommode the poliſhed Surface, it is farther protected by two ſubſtantial *Curtains*, hung on a moſt ſlender cartilaginous Rod. Which ſecure it, not barely from Blows, and from any hurtful Attrition, but alſo from every troubleſome Annoyance. In Sleep, when there is no Occaſion to exerciſe the Senſe, but an abſolute Neceſſity to guard the Organ, theſe Curtains *ſpontaneouſly* cloſe, and never fail to lie ſhut. At any Time, they will *fly* together with a Motion, quick as the Alarm of Fear, I had almoſt ſaid, quicker than Thought itſelf. At all Times, they are lined with an extremely fine Sponge*, wet with its own *native Dews*. Which lubricate the Eye-ball ; oil, as it were, its Wheels ; and fit it for a Courſe of uncommon Activity.—At the End of this ſkinny Man-
telet

* The *Glandula Lacrymalis* and its Duſts ; opening on the inner Part of the Eye-lid, and ſecreting the Fluid, which *Theron* calls his Oil ; becauſe it irrigates the Eye-ball, and facilitates its Motion.

398 DIALOGUE XII.

telet (if I may use the military Style) is planted a Range of bristly *Pallisadoes*†. Which keep out the least Mote; ward off even the straggling Atom; and moderate the otherwise too potent Impressions of the Sun-beams †.

The Brows are a kind of natural *Pent-house*, thatched and arched with curious Wreaths of Hair. The Thatch is intended to divert the Sweat, from trickling into the Eyes, and offending them with its Brine. The *Arches* are so finely coloured, and so elegantly turned, that they set off the Whiteness of the Forehead, and bestow additional Grace on the whole Countenance.—Because, in our waking Hours, there is almost an incessant Call for those little Orbs, they run upon the finest *Casters*; rolling upwards or downwards, to the Right-hand or to the Left; with the utmost Speed, and with equal Ease. Which Circumstance, added to the Flexibility of the Neck, renders our *two* Eyes as useful, as if the whole Body, like the living Creatures in St. *John's* Vision, was *full of Eyes before and behind**.

The *Ear* consists of an outward Porch and inner Rooms, with Tools of the most admirable Contrivance and finished Workmanship. The Contrivance and the Workmanship incomparably nicer, than the Designs of *Palladio*, or the Architecture of *Solomon's* Temple; though the former were drawn from the magnificent Monu-

† The Hairs, that arise upon the Extremities of the Eye-lash, grow only to a certain convenient Length, and never need cutting.—They are not flaccid and pendulous, like those of the Head; but *stiff* and *elastic*, like Bristles. The first would have been troublesome, the last are beneficial.—Add to this, that their Points stand out of the Way; those of the upper Eye-lid being bent upwards, and those of the lower downwards.—So nice is Nature, even in such small Matters!

‡ The tender, the incessant, the more than fatherly Care, which the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY takes of his People, is represented in Scripture by this extraordinary Provision, made for the Security of the Eye. Which is one of the *finest* Images, that Fancy can form; and one of the most *consolatory* Truths, that Faith can believe. *He kept him as the Apple of his Eye*, Deut. xxxii. 10 — *He that toucheth You, toucheth the Apple of his Eye*, Zech. ii. 8.

Monuments of *Rome*, though the latter was built in the Taste of *Heaven*. Yea; so consummately nice is the Structure of this Organ, that GOD, the only Wise GOD, is not ashamed to be called its Artificer: *He that planted the Ear* †, is to be found among the Titles of the exalted JEHOVAH.—In one very remarkable Peculiarity, this minute Fabric resembles that renowned Edifice, the Porch being loftier * than any other Part of the Building.

The *Porch* I call that semicircular Lodge, which stands somewhat prominent from the Head; and is, not *soft* and *sinking* as *Flesh*, lest it should absorb the Sound, rather than promote its Repercussion; not *hard* and *stubborn* as *Bone*, lest it should occasion painful Inconveniencies, when We repose Ourselves on either Side—but of a *cartilaginous* Substance, covered with a tight Expansion of Membranes, and wrought into sinewous Cavities. Which, like circling Hills, or surrounding rocky Shores ‖, collect the wandering Undulations of the Air; and transmit them, with a vigorous Impulse, to the finely stretched Membrane of the Tympanum ‡.—The *Avenue*, or narrow Entry, is secured from the insinuating Attempts of little Insects, by a *Morass* (shall I say?) of bitter and viscous Matter: disgusting to their Taste, and embarrassing to their Feet.—The *Hammer* and the *Anvil*; the *Stirrup* and the *Drum*; the winding Labyrinths §, and the sounding Galleries; these, and other Pieces of Mechanism, all

† Psal. xciv. 9.

* Compare 1 *Kings* vi. 3. with 2 *Chron.* iii. 4.

‖ Alluding to those expressive Lines, where *Echo* seems to live in the Sound, as well as in the Sense!

———*Vocemque inclusa volutant*
Littora, pulsati Colles Clamore resultant. Virg.

‡ So called, because it resembles a *Drum*, both in Figure and Use. Being a fine Skin, expanded upon a Circle of Bones, and over a polished reverberating Cavity.—It is affected by the Vibrations of the external Air, as the Covering of the War-drum is by the Impressions of the Stick.—It is also furnished with *Eraces*, that strain or relax at pleasure; and accommodate its Tension either to loud or languid Sounds.

§ Of this Kind is the auditory Tube; intended to *soften* and *qualify*

all instrumental to the Power of Hearing, are beyond Description curious.

Amazingly nice must be the Formation, and inconceivably exact the Tension of the auditory Nerves: since they correspond with the smallest Tremors of the Atmosphere, and easily distinguish their most subtle Variations. The ruder Blasts, perceivable by the whole external Body, have very little Effect upon these delicate Strings. Whereas, they are perfect *Unisons* with those fine, those *significant* Agitations of the Air, which the acutest Touch is unable to discern. These living Chords, tuned by an ALMIGHTY HAND, and diffused through the echoing Isles, and sonorous Cells—these receive the Impressions of Sound, and propagate them to the Brain. These † give Existence to the Charms of Music, and reciprocate the rational Entertainments of Discourse. These treat my *Aspassio* with the Melody of the Woodland Choirs, and afford *me* the superior Pleasure of my Friend's Conversation.

The Eye perceives only the Objects that are *before* it; whereas, the Ear warns Us of Transactions, that pass *above* Us, *behind* Us, all *around* Us.—The Eye is useless, amidst the Gloom of Night; and cannot carry its Observation, through the bolted Door, or the closed Window-shutter. But the Ear admits her Intelligence, through the *darkest* Medium, and the *minute*

qualify the rushing Sound. Lest, if the Incurſion were direct, it might be too impetuous, and injure the delicate Expanse of the Tympanum.—While this is designed to moderate, the Concavities of the inner Structure are prepared to *heighten* and *invigorate* the Sound, by calling in the auxiliary Force of an Echo.—Such Intentions, so *varying*, nay so *opposite*, concur to form this admirable Organ!

† Elegantly styled, *The Daughters of Music*. For this Phrase may refer, as well to the Organs which *form*, as to those which *distinguish* the harmonious Accents. *Ecclef. xii. 4.*—Methinks, I am always desirous to add any *apposite* Expression, or *parallel* Passage from the *Bible*. As I find, Writers of Taste and Politeness are studious to embellish their Works, with Quotations from the *Classics*. And I persuade myself, the Reader will allow me to gratify this favourite Inclination. Because, every Portion of that inestimable Book, however minute, is like the Filings of Gold, or the Sparks of a Diamond. Is sure, when properly applied, to add *Worth*, and impart *Beauty*.

minuteſt Cranny.—The Eye is upon Duty, only in our waking Hours; but the Ear is always expanded, and always acceſſible*: a Courier, that never tires: a Centry, ever in his Box.—To ſecure a Reſource, in caſe any Miſfortune ſhould diſable *one* of the hearing or ſeeing Organs, our all-gracious MAKER has given Us *Duplicates* of each.

As there are tremulous Concuffions impreſſed upon the Air, diſcernable only by the Instruments of Hearing; there are alſo *odoriferous* Particles, waſted by the ſame aerial Vehicle, which are perceivable only by the *Smell*.—The Noſtrils are wide at the Bottom, that a large Quantity of Effluvia may enter; narrow at the Top, that, when entered, they may cloſe their Ranks, and act with greater Vigour.—Fine, beyond all Imagination, are the Steams which exhale from fetid or fragrant Bodies. The very beſt Microscopes, that diſcover *thouſands* and *thouſands* of Animalcules in a Drop of putrified Water, cannot bring *one* Individual, among all theſe evaneſcent Legions, to our Sight. They fail, in numberleſs Squadrons, cloſe to our Eyes, cloſe by our Ears; yet are ſo amazingly attenuated, that they elude all our Search. Nevertheleſs, ſo judiciously † are the *oſfactory* Nets laid, and ſo artfully their Meſhes ſized, that they catch theſe vaniſhing Fugitives. They catch the roaming Perfumes, that fly off from the opening Honeyſuckle; and take in the ſtationed Sweets that hover round the expanded Roſe. They imbibe all the balmy Fragrance of Spring, all the aromatic Exhalations of Autumn, and enable Us to banquet even on the *inviſible* Dainties of Nature.

Fur-

* *Auditus autem ſemper patet. Ejus enim Senſus etiam dormientes egemus. A quo, cum Sonus eſt acceptus, etiam e Somno excutimur.*
De Nat Deor.

† The *Keenneſs* and *Sagacity* of this Senſe, furniſhed the evangelical Prophet with a beautiful Metaphor, to diſplay the *Accuracy* of the MESSIAH's Judgment, and his unerringly nice Diſcernment in ſpiritual Things. *ה' י'ו' י'ו'* literally rendered, ſignifies *Shall make him to ſmell*: which is accommodated to our Language, and properly enough tranſlated, *Shall make him of quick Underſtanding*. Iſai. xi. 3.

Furnished with these several Organs,

————— *Not a Breeze*
Flies o'er the Meadow, not a Cloud imbibes
The setting Sun's Effulgence, not a Strain
From all the Tenants of the warbling Shade
Ascends, but whence our Senses can partake
Fresh Pleasure†.

Another Capacity for frequent Pleasure, our bountiful CREATOR has bestowed, in granting Us the Powers of *Tasse*. By Means of which, the Food that supports our Body, feasts our Palate; first, treats Us with a pleasing Regale; then, distributes its beneficial Recruits.—The Razor, whetted with Oil, becomes more exquisitely keen. The *Saliva*, flowing upon the Tongue, and moistening its Nerves, quickens them into the liveliest Acts of Sensation.—This Sense is circumstanced, in a Manner peculiarly benign and wise; so as to be a standing, though silent Plea for *Temperance*. Without recurring to the Vengeance of GOD, or the Terrors of eternal Judgment, it is a powerful Dissuasive from irregular and excessive Indulgencies. Because, the Exercise of Sobriety, sets the finest Edge on its Faculties; and adds the most *poignant* Relish to its Enjoyments. Whereas, Riot and Voluptuousness *pall* the Appetite; blunt its Sensibility; and render the Gratifications extremely languid, if not perfectly insipid.—The Sight, the Smell, the Taste are, not only so many separate Sources of Delight, but a joint Security to our Health. They are the *vigilant* and *accurate* Inspectors, that examine our Food, and inquire into its Properties; whether it be pleasant or disagreeable; wholesome or noxious. For the Discharge of this Office, they are excellently qualified, and most commodiously situate. So that nothing can gain Admission through the Mouth, till it has undergone their Scrutiny, and obtained their Passport.

To all these, as a most necessary and advantageous Supplement, is added the Sense of *Feeling*. Which renders

† See that very elegant Poem, *The Pleasures of Imagination*, B. III.

renders the whole Assemblage complete.—While other Senses have a particular Place of Residence ; this is diffused throughout *the whole Body* *. In the Palms of the Hands, on the Tips of the Fingers, and indeed through all the *extreme* Parts of the Flesh, it is most quick and lively : as the advanced Guards, or Scouts upon the Frontiers, are or ought to be peculiarly attentive and wakeful. Scouts did I say ? The whole Army of *Xerxes*, drawn out in Battle array, with his *Millions* of supernumerary Attendants †, were but like a few *Gleaners* straggling in the Field ; if compared, either in Number or Order, with those nervous Detachments, which pervade the Texture of the Skin, and minister to the Act of Feeling.—How happily is this Sense tempered between the two Extremes ! Neither so *acute*, as the Membranes of the Eye ; nor so *obtuse*, as the Callus of the Heel. The former would expose Us to continual Pain ; render our Clothes galling, and the very Down oppressive ‡. The latter would quite benumb the Body, and almost annihilate the Touch.—Nor this alone, but *all* the Senses are exactly adapted to their respective Offices, and to the Exigencies of our present State. Were they *strained* to a much higher Tone, they would be Avenues of Anguish. Were they *relaxed* into greater Insensibility, they would be so many useless Encumbrances.

Asp. How admirable and gracious is this Provision, which the blessed GOD has made, to accommodate
Us

* *Tactus autem toto Corpore æquabiliter fusus est, ut omnes ictus, omnesque nimios & Frigoris & Caloris Appulsus sentire possimus.*

De Nat. Deor.

† The Soldiers and Attendants of *Xerxes*, amounted to five Millions two Hundred and eighty Thousand. Another Army, so large and numerous, occurs not in all the Records of History.

Vid. Herod. Lib. VII.

‡ Mr. *Pope* has illustrated this Observation, with a Delicacy peculiar to Himself.

Say, what the Use, were finer Optics given,
Th' inspect a Mite, not comprehend the Heaven ?
The Touch if tremblingly alive all o'er,
To smart and agonize at every Pore ?
Or quick Effluvia darting through the Brain,
Die of a Rose in aromatic Pain ?

Eth. Epist. L

404 DIALOGUE XII.

Us with delightful Sensations, and instructive Ideas! —The Taste, the Touch, and the Smell, are somewhat *straitned* in the Extent of their Operations. The Ear carries on a Correspondence with a *larger* Circle of Objects. But the Sight most amply supplies, whatever is wanting in all the other Senses. The Sight spreads itself to an *infinite* Multitude of Bodies; and brings within our Notice some of the *remotest* Parts of the Universe.—The Taste, the Touch, the Smell, perceive nothing but what is brought to their very Doors. Whereas, the Eye extends its Observation, as far as the Orbit of *Saturn*; nay glances, and in an Instant of Time, to the inconceivable Distance of the Stars. The Compass of the Earth, and the Immensity of the Skies, are its unlimited Range.

From this remarkable Variety, with regard to the *Sphere* and *Activity* of the Senses, *St. Paul* forms one of the finest, boldest, and most important Comparisons in the World. By this He illustrates the Difference between the Wisdom, which is derived from the Word of divine Revelation; and the Wisdom, which is acquired by Dint of human Application.—In his Oration to the *Athenians*, speaking of their most celebrated Sages, He says; *If so be, they might feel after, and find HIM**. In his Epistle to the *Hebrews*, speaking of the Man *Moses*, our Author observes; That *He endured as seeing Him who is invisible*†. Writing to his *Corinthian* Converts. He adds, as a farther Heightening of the Contrast; *We all beholding with open Face the Glory of the LORD*‡. —The Knowledge of the *Philosopher*, is like that obscure and scanty Information, which is to be obtained by groping with the Hand, in a dark Night. The Knowledge of the *Christian* is like that copious Influx of clear and enlarged Ideas, which We receive by the Mediation of the Eye, amidst the Shining of a bright Day.

Tully, We find, has, in the Book before Us, hit upon some of the most general and obvious Uses, to which the several Parts of the human Body are adapted.

Yet

* Acts xvii. 27.

Εἰ ἀρα γε Ψηλαφησειαν αὐτον.

† Heb. xi. 27.

‡ 2 Cor. iii. 18.

Yet how *superficial* and *deficient* appears his Penetration, when We take in the much deeper Discoveries, and the much higher Improvements of our modern Philosophy! Thus, and abundantly more defective, is his Knowledge of moral Duties and divine Doctrines; when compared with what is taught Us, in the *plain* Sermon on the Mount, and the unstudied Epistles of the *Jewish* Tentmaker.

Therefore, though I would bless the beneficent GOD for the Ministration of all the Senses, and particularly for the noble Organs of Vision: I would be more especially thankful for that Light of the World, CHRIST JESUS and his glorious Gospel; as well as for that *spiritual Eye**, by which the One is understood, and the other seen — a *lively Faith*. I would also long for that Place of beatific Enjoyment, where our Views of the adorable GOD-H E A D, and our Acquaintance with the sublimest Truths, will as much transcend all our present Apprehensions, as the most inlightened *Saint* exceeds the benighted *Gentile*.

Ther. The crowning Gift——That which improves the Satisfaction, and augments the beneficial Effects, accruing from all the Senses, is *Speech*.—Speech makes me a Gainer, from the Eyes and Ears of other People; from the Ideas they conceive, and the Observations they make. And what an admirable Instrument, for articulating the Voice, and modifying it into Speech is the *Tongue*! —The Tongue has neither Bone nor Joint; yet fashions itself, with the utmost Volubility, into every Shape, and every Posture, that can express Sentiment, or constitute Harmony. This little Collection of muscular Fibres, under the conducting Skill of the C R E A T O R, is the Artificer of our Words†.

By

* Luke xxiv. 45. *Then opened he their Understandings, that they might understand the Scriptures.* Διηνοούειν is the Word used in this Place, and the Word used by the evangelical Historian, when He relates that *supernatural* Act, which gave Sight to the Blind.

† I am sensible, that the *Glottis* has a considerable Share in modulating the Sound, and forming the Voice. But, as the Nature and Office of this most *curious Aperture*, are very little known by the

406 D I A L O G U E XII.

By this We communicate the *Secrets* of the Breast, and make our very *Thoughts* audible. By this we instruct the Ignorant, and comfort the Distressed; we glorify G O D, and edify each other*; the Academic explains the abstrusest Sciences, and the Ecclesiastic preaches the everlasting Gospel.—This is likewise the Efficient of *Musick*. It is soft as the Lute, or shrill as the Trumpet; It can warble as the Lyre, or resound like the Organ. Connecting the sacred Anthem with its tuneful Strains, We sooth the Cares, and beguile the Toils of Life: We imitate the Angelic Choirs, and anticipate in some Degree, their celestial Joys.—As the Tongue requires full Scope, and an easy Play, it is lodged in an ample Cavity; and surrounded with Reservoirs of Spittle, always ready to distil the lubricating Dews. It moves under a concave Roof, which serves as a *Sounding-board* to the Voice; giving it much the same additional Vigour and Grace, as the Shell of a Violin adds to the Language of the Strings.

Wife—wonderfully wise, and eminently gracious is the Regulation both of *spontaneous* and *involuntary* Motion. Was this Regulation reversed, what deplorable Inconveniencies would take place; nay, what unavoidable Ruin would ensue!—*Deplorable Inconveniencies*, if the Discharge of the Bowels, or Evacuations, of the Bladder, were quite independent on our Leave. *Unavoidable Ruin*, if the Action of the Heart, required the Co-operation of our Thoughts; or the Business of Respiration, waited for the Concurrence of our Will.

The Will, in some Cases, has not so much as a single Vote. In others, She *determines* and *commands*,
like

the Generality of People; We choose to follow the popular Opinion, so neatly described by the Poet,

Dædala Lingua,
Lingua figurat: ix Verborum, Opifexque Loquelæ.

Anti-Lucret.

* The articulating Tongue is called *Our Glory*, Psal. lviii. 8. And such indeed it is, when devoted to these Purposes. It is then a Distinction, not only of Man from the brutal Head, but of the Righteous from the Congregation of the Ungodly. It is then like choice Silver, or as a Tree of Life.

*Who would not bless for this the Gift of Speech,
And in the Tongue's Beneficence be rich?*

D I A L O G U E XII. 407

like an absolute Sovereign ; nor is there a Monarch upon Earth so punctually obeyed, as this Queen of the human System. If She but intimate her Pleasure, the Spirits run, they fly, to execute her Orders ; to stretch the Arm, or close the Hand ; to furrow the Brow with Frowns, or dimple the Cheek with Smiles. —How *easily*, as well as *punctually*, are these Orders carried into Execution ! To turn the Screw, or work the Lever, is laborious and wearisome. But We move the Vertebrae, with all their appendent Chambers ; We advance the Leg, with the whole incumbent Body ; We rise from our Seat ; We spring from the Ground ; and, though much Force is exerted, though a very considerable Weight is raised, We meet with no Difficulty, We complain of no Fatigue.

That all this should be effected, without any Toil, and by a *bare Act* of the Will, is very surprising. But that these Motions should be made, renewed, continued, even while We remain *intirely* ignorant of the *Manner*, in which they are performed, is beyond measure astonishing. — Who can play so much as a *single* Tune upon the Spinnet, without learning the Difference of the Keys, or studying the Rudiments of Music ? Impossible ! Yet the Mind of Man touches *every* Spring of the human Machine, with the most masterly Skill ; though She knows nothing at all, concerning the Nature of her Implements, or the Process of her Operations.

Put a *German* Flute into the Hand even of a sensible Person : without a Master to instruct Him, He is at a loss to make the Instrument Speak : much less is He able to modulate the Sound, into a Variety of harmonious Notes. — But We are self-taught in the Method of *forming, regulating, and varying* the Voice. Naturally, and with unpremeditated Fluency, We give it the languishing Cadence of Sorrow, or the sprightly Airs of Joy ; the low faltering Accents of Fear, or the elevated Tone and rapid Sallies of Anger.

The Eye of a Rustic, who has no Notion of Optics, or any of its Laws, shall *lengthen* and *shorten* its Axis ; *dilate* and *contract* its Pupil, without the least

least Hesitation, and with the utmost Propriety: adapting itself, with mathematical Exactness to the particular Distance of Objects, and the different Degrees of Light. By which means, it performs some of the most curious Experiments in the improved *Newtonian* Philosophy, without the least Knowledge of the Science, or so much as any Consciousness of its own Dexterity.

Which shall We most admire? The Multitude of animated Organs? their finished Form, and their faultless Order?—Or, the *Power* and *Sway* which the Soul exercises over them! Ten thousand Reins put into her Hands; yet she manages all, conducts all, without the least Perplexity or the least Irregularity: rather, with a Promptitude, a Consistency, and a Speed, that nothing else can equal!

Upon the Whole—Great Reason had *Euripides* to call the human Body.

Σοφὲ τέχλον καλὸν ποικίλμα.

I believe, the preceding Observations will justify Us, if We give a fuller Meaning to the Poet, and translate his Words—*The infinitely varied, and inimitably fine Workmanship, of a great, supreme, unerring ARTIST.* Or, as *Virgil* speaks, with a Pertinency and a Spirit, that epitomizes all I have said, and expresses all I would say; This bodily Structure is indeed—*Non enarrabile Textum* *.

Asp. Wonderfully and fearfully are we made †! Made of such complicated Parts; each so nicely fashioned, and all so exactly arranged ‡; every one executing such curious Functions, and many of them operating in so mysterious a Manner; as may justly render Us a Wonder to ourselves.—Since Health depends upon such a numerous Assemblage of moving Organs: since a single Secretion stopped, may destroy

* That is, a Structure, not barely correct, or highly finish'd, but (as *Theron* has elsewhere expressed it) *beyond Description curious.*

† Psal. cxxxix. 14.

‡ *St. Paul's* Language on the Subject is exceedingly beautiful and expressive συναρμολογημενον καὶ οὐκ ἐκδιδαζομενον Eph. iv. 16. Each Part most exactly harmonizing with the Whole, and all connected together with the utmost Firmness.

stroy the salutary Temperature of the Fluids; or a single Wheel clogged, may put an End to the Motion of the Solids: with what holy *Fear, should We pass the Time of our Sojourning Here below* *! Trusting, for continual Preservation, not merely on our own Care, but on that OMNIPOTENT HAND, which formed the admirable Machine, superintends its Agency, and supports its Being †.

When We consider the extensive Contrivance, and delicate Mechanism—What Plans of Geometry, have been laid; what Operations of Chemistry, are performed; in a Word, what Miracles of Art and Elegance are executed; in order to furnish Us with the necessary Recruits, and the several Delights of Life—Is there not abundant Reason to cry out, with the same inspired Writer; “*How dear are thy Counsels unto me, O GOD! Thy counsels of creating Wisdom! Thou hast not been sparing, but even lavish of thy indulgent Designs. Thou hast omitted no Expedient, that might establish my Ease, enlarge my Comforts, and promote, yea complete my bodily Happiness!*” And is not this a most endearing Obligation to glorify the blessed GOD, with our Bodies, as well as with our Spirits ‡?

Ther. Our Spirits! Ay; what is this Mansion of Flesh though so exquisitely wrought, compared with the noble and immortal Inhabitant, which resides within?

—That intellectual Being;
Those Thoughts, which wander through Eternity ||?

This Consideration inclines me to think, that, if the Casket be so highly polished, the Jewel cannot be so excessively coarse, as my *Aspasio's* Doctrine of original Corruption supposes.

* 1 Pet. i. 17.

† Agreeably to that philosophical Maxim, *Creatio & Conservatio eadem est Actio*: and to those scriptural Acknowledgments, It is GOD, who boldeth our Soul in Life; He is the Length of our Days; his Visitation prolongeth our Spirit.

‡ 1 Cor. vi. 20.

|| Milton.

410 D I A L O G U E XII.

Asp. I perceive your Aim, *Theron*. But must beg Leave to decline all Overtures for a Dispute. If my *Arguments* have failed, *your Description* has answered its End.—I cannot suffer myself, at present, to be diverted to any other Topic. My Thoughts must be kept free for this glorious Subject. I have such a strong Desire to *recollect, retain, and digest* what has been observed, that even *your Conversation* will, at this Juncture, lose its Relish. Here therefore I put my Finger upon my Mouth, and put a Period to our Discourse. Unless You will give me leave, before I retire, to make one Remark.—And let it not startle my Friend, if I venture to say, That, amidst all his curious Observations, He has forgot the principal Circumstance of *Honour and Excellence*, which dignifies the human Body.

Ther. I have omitted many fine and noble Properties, I confess. But sure I have not forgot the *principal* and most distinguishing.

Asp. You need not be displeased with Yourself. It argues no Defect in your Dissertation. The Circumstance I have in my View, could never be discovered, by following the dissecting Knife. It is learnt, not from *Cheselden's Draughts*, or the Tables of *Albinus*; but from the Word of Revelation. What I mean, is This—The human Body was exalted to a most intimate and *personal Union*, with the eternal SON of GOD. He who decorated the Heaven with Stars, and crowned the Stars with Lustre; *He vouchsafed to be made Flesh**, and was found in Fashion as a Man†.—Nay, this is, even *now*, the Apparel of that divine and adorable PERSON. He is clothed with Limbs, and appears in the Dress of Humanity, even at the Right-hand of GOD, and at the Head of all the Heavenly Hosts.

What think You of another Prerogative, recorded in Scripture? *Your Bodies are the Temple of the Holy GHOST†*, they are the Shrine, in which the *HIGH and HOLY ONE, that inhabiteth Eternity*, vouchsafes to dwell. HE, who sitteth between the Cherubim,

* John i. 14.

† Phil. ii. 8.

‡ 1 Cor. vi. 19.

D I A L O G U E XII. 411

rubim, and walketh in the Circuit of the Skies, is pleased to sanctify these earthly Tenements for his own Habitation. And is not this a *much Grander Embellishment*, than all their matchless Contrivance and masterly Workmanship? Just as the *Rod* that budded, and the *Manna* that was miraculously preserved; the sacred *Oracle* of *Urim* and *Thummim*, and the *Cloud* of *Glory* covering the Mercy-Seat; were a much greater Distinction to *Solomon's Temple*, than the most heightened and striking Beauties of Architecture.

Nor must I neglect to mention the Dignity—the transcendent and amazing Dignity—which is reserved for these Systems of *Flesh*, at the *Resurrection* of the Just. They will then be refined and improved, into the most perfect State, and the most beauteous Form. Surpassing whatever is resplendent and amiable in the most ornamental Appearances of material Nature. They will be purer than the unspotted Firmament, brighter than the Lustre of the Stars; and, which exceeds all Parallel, which comprehends all Perfection, they will *be made like unto CHRIST's glorious Body* *. Like that wonderfully glorious Body, which the blessed *JESUS* wears, in his celestial Kingdom, and on his triumphant Throne.

When We add all these *magnificent Peculiarities*, which are revealed in Scripture, to all those *inimitable Niceties*, which are displayed by Anatomists, what Thankfulness, what Admiration, can equal such a Profusion of Favours?

*When all thy Mercies, O my GOD,
My rising Soul surveys,
Transported with the View I'm lost
In Wonder, Love, and Praise!*

• Phil. iii. 21.

The END of the FIRST VOLUME.